

A complete history of the case of the Welsh fasting-girl (Sarah Jacob) with comments thereon; and observations on death from starvation.

Contributors

Fowler, Robert.
Fowler, Robert
Royal College of Physicians of London

Publication/Creation

London : Henry Renshaw, 1871.

Persistent URL

<https://wellcomecollection.org/works/tfg595z6>

Provider

Royal College of Physicians

License and attribution

This material has been provided by This material has been provided by Royal College of Physicians, London. The original may be consulted at Royal College of Physicians, London. where the originals may be consulted. This work has been identified as being free of known restrictions under copyright law, including all related and neighbouring rights and is being made available under the Creative Commons, Public Domain Mark.

You can copy, modify, distribute and perform the work, even for commercial purposes, without asking permission.



Wellcome Collection
183 Euston Road
London NW1 2BE UK
T +44 (0)20 7611 8722
E library@wellcomecollection.org
<https://wellcomecollection.org>

A
COMPLETE HISTORY
OF THE CASE OF THE
WELSH FASTING-GIRL
(SARAH JACOB)
WITH COMMENTS THEREON;
AND
OBSERVATIONS ON DEATH FROM STARVATION.

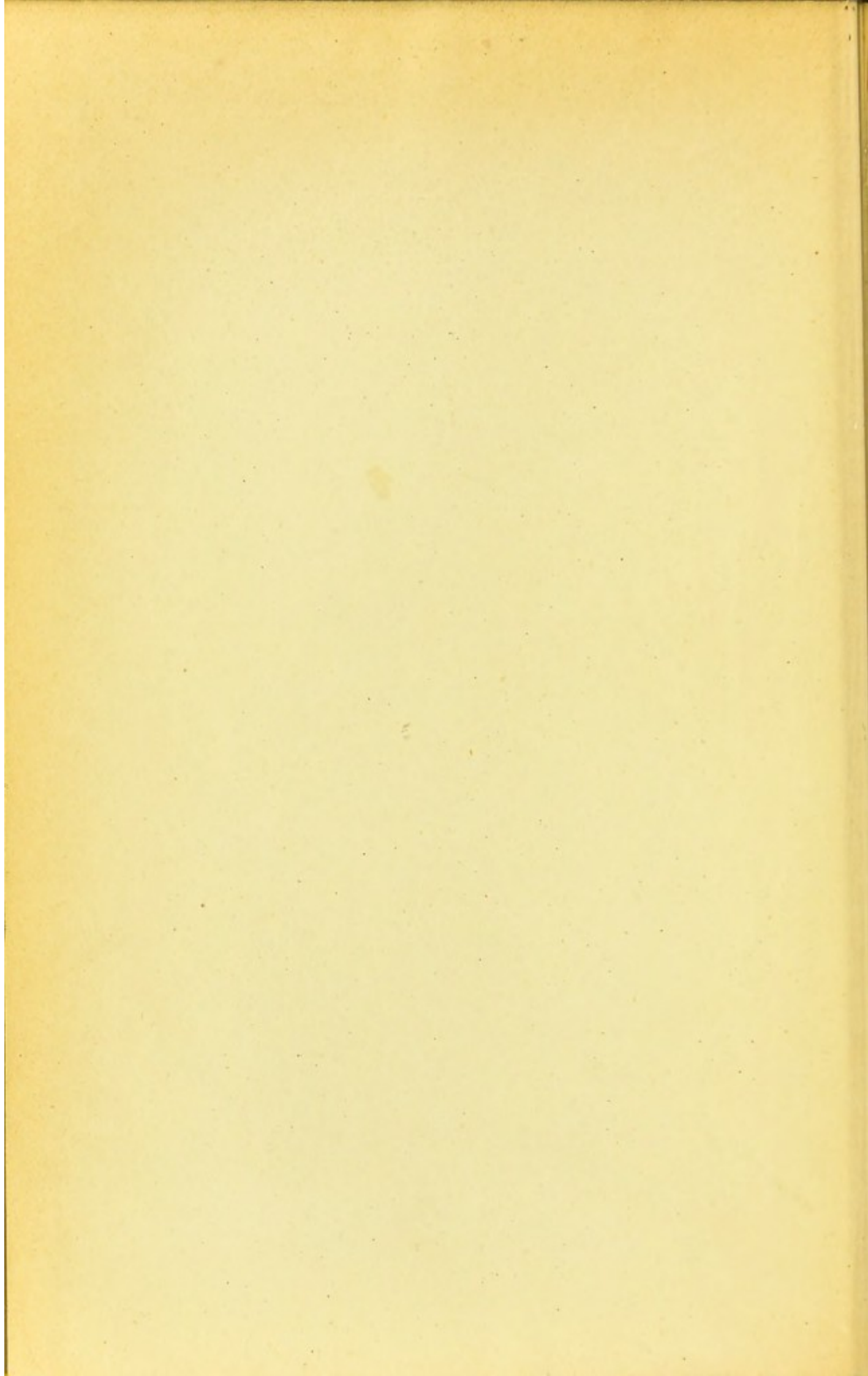
BY
ROBERT FOWLER, M.D. EDIN.



LLEATHERNOYADD-UCHA, CARMARTHENSHIRE,
THE RESIDENCE OF THE "WELSH FASTING-GIRL."

HENRY RENSHAW, 356, STRAND, LONDON.





THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

(1900)



LLEATHERNOYADD-UCHA, CARMARTHENSHIRE,

THE RESIDENCE OF THE "WELSH FASTING-GIRL."

(*Vide page 3.*)

To the Library of the Royal
College of Physicians
London from the Donor.

COMPLETE HISTORY

OF THE CASE OF THE

WELSH FASTING-GIRL

(SARAH JACOB)

WITH COMMENTS THEREON ;

AND

OBSERVATIONS ON DEATH FROM STARVATION.

BY

ROBERT FOWLER, M.D. EDIN.

Vice-President and Honorary Librarian of the Hunterian Society; late Resident
Medical Officer of the Loughborough Infirmary;
late District Medical Officer (for seventeen years) of the East London Union;
Author of the "Medical Vocabulary," "Medical Evidence House of Commons' Select
Committee on Poor-Law Relief (England), 1861-62," Papers on Sanitary
and Poor-Law Medical Matters published in *The Times* and
Medical Journals, &c.

HENRY RENSHAW,

356, STRAND, LONDON.

1871.

2

ROYAL COLLEGE OF PHYSICIANS LIBRARY	
CLASS	613.24
ACCN.	3498
SOURCE	Gift Archer
DATE	

LONDON :

SAVILL, EDWARDS AND CO., PRINTERS, CHANDOS STREET
COVENT GARDEN.

TO

COLONEL WILLIAM PRICE LEWES,

LLYSNEWYDD,

J.P. and Deputy-Lieutenant for the Counties of Carmarthen, Cardigan, and
Pembroke, Chairman of the Petty Sessional Division of
Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, Llandyssil, &c.;

EDWARD CROMPTON LLOYD FITZWILLIAMS, Esq

ADPAR HILL,

J.P. for the Counties of Carmarthen, Cardigan, and Pembroke,
Barrister-at-Law;

AND

ARTHUR HOWELL JONES, Esq.,

PENYBALLT,

J.P. for the County of Carmarthen,

THIS WORK

IS BY PERMISSION

Respectfully Dedicated.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

CHICAGO, ILLINOIS

P R E F A C E.

So much printer's ink has been rolled over the case of Sarah Jacob, that it is well-nigh practically impossible to write anything original about the little Welsh Fasting-Girl. We are not too proud to confess our deep obligations to both the paste-pot, and the scissors.

The following History only professes to be a more or less complete compilation, in the proper sequence of their occurrence, of all the events and doings connected with the girl's life—so far as they pertain to the character which she persistently sustained,—and also with the various Judicial Proceedings consequent upon her untimely death. An uncontrolled reference to the whole of the Depositions taken both before the Coroner and the Magistrates, together with a possession of all the short-hand notes of the skilled and scientific evidence given at the Trial of the Parents, for the Manslaughter of their child, have of course, very greatly lightened our labour.

The Comments on the History have been condensed, as much as has appeared to us to be consistent with the importance of this Legally and Medically very interesting case.

The Notes and References appended, are intended as vouchers for the accuracy of the assertions and statements made.

We have to express our great obligations to St. John Wontner, Esq. (of the firm of Messrs. Wontner and Sons, Agents to the Solicitors to the Treasury); George Thomas, Esq., Coroner for the County of Carmarthen; the Rev. Evan Jones, B.D., Vicar of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth; the Rev. William Thomas, M.A., Llandyssil; John Thomas, Esq., Surgeon, and Ex-Mayor of Cardigan; Dr. John Pearson Hughes, Llandovery; Dr. Thomas Jones, Gellifaharen, Llandyssil; the Proprietors of the *Welshman*, Carmarthen; Thomas Edward Davies, Esq., Solicitor, Cardigan; Dr. J. J. Phillips, Guy's Hospital; Sister Elizabeth Clinch, Guy's Hospital; Dr. Donovan, Skibbereen, County Cork; C. Lingen, Esq., Surgeon, Hereford; William Bartholomew, Esq., Solicitor, Ladbroke Grove, Notting Hill; H. C. Clarke, Esq., Salisbury Road, Dalston; Dr. J. Williams, Sudbury, Suffolk; the Editor of "Human Nature" and "Daybreak," and others;—to each and all—for their kind contributions of information, and their assistance in respect, and in aid, of this work,—for the delay in the appearance, and for all the shortcomings of which, we have only to plead the exigencies of a busy practice.

145, BISHOPSGATE STREET WITHOUT, LONDON.

August, 1871.

THE WELSH FASTING-GIRL.

THE tragic end of poor Sarah Jacob, followed as it was by consequences far from agreeable to some, and the reverse of pleasant to others, will for many a long day make the pretty little Welsh Fasting-Girl the heroine, as she has been made the martyr, of her peculiar class.

Instances of asserted fasting have been by no means rare in the history of the world. During the nine days' wonder of this last strange case in Wales, letters on, and references to, analogous occurrences—both ancient and modern—were frequently found in many of the daily and other periodicals as well of the metropolis as of the provinces.^{1*}

It is not our intention, nor do we consider this to be the *proper* place, to reproduce such recorded cases. In the progress of the narrative of Sarah Jacob, when commenting on the medical and other aspects of her history, we shall, for the purposes of elucidation, seek comparison, information, and instruction from quite unquestionable sources; and shall refer to well-authenticated instances of starvation as reported by recognised authorities.

So much superstition and chicanery surround many of the examples of alleged wonderful fasting, that no possible reliance can be placed on the assertions which have been made concerning them.²

The symptoms attendant on the eight days' absolute starvation and the death of Sarah Jacob were, however, daily observed and noted with such accuracy, and under such conditions, as will ever render the case of considerable importance to any future account of, or investi-

* The numbers in the Text refer to "Notes" arranged in an Appendix.

gation into, the consequences and results of a more or less complete abstinence from solid and liquid food. Nevertheless, as members of a common humanity, we cannot but deplore that such addition to the medical history of Starvation should have been gained by the sacrifice of a human life!

Such a case—such a termination—is, however, little likely to occur again. Let this sad event but be taken well to heart by all miracle-mongers whomsoever, and we shall not hear more of such or similar wonderful abnormalities. Nature will at all times, and with equal severity, demonstrate her dominion over such asserted outrages on all her known laws and operations.

There must be something unnatural in the mental training of those individuals who, in this nineteenth century, announce themselves as patrons of the miraculous and abnormal! Who are they? They certainly are not our great students of Nature—the devotees of *facts!* We would rather aver that their very credulousness shows a want of healthy contact with the daily doings of our active life. The retirement of the closet must of necessity conduce to the more or less complete abnegation of one of the essentials for the formation of Science. Certain it is, that in the study of vital phenomena, the mind of the recluse, as also of him who mixes but *little* in the daily bustle and stir of this busy world, is more apt to follow the process of *deduction*, and to move him to exclaim upon failure—“So much the worse for the facts.” It is in these days rare to find medical men amongst the votaries of marvels. Modern Medicine, guarded by the simplicity of the Dissecting-room and the exactitude of the Laboratory, is, from the observation of things *without*, led up by the laborious process of *induction* to a more correct appreciation of Nature’s unerring laws.

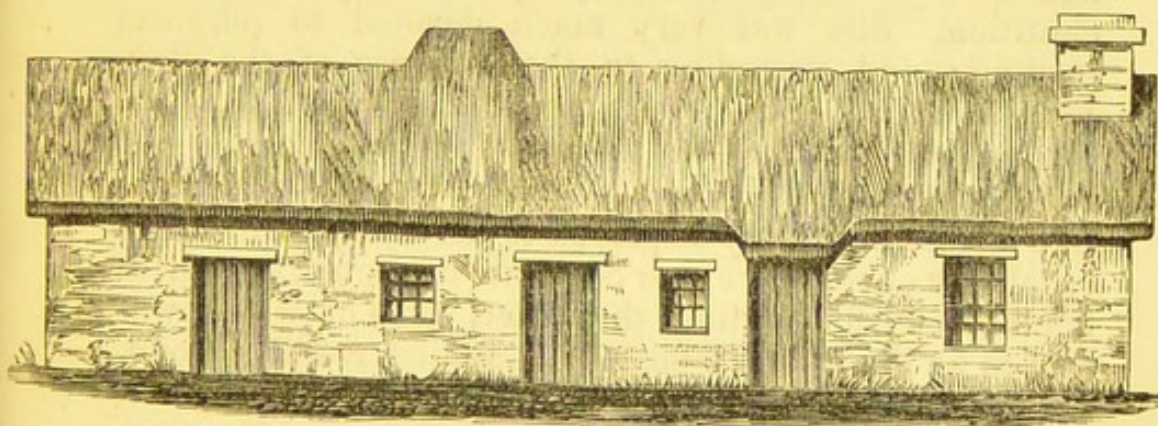
Evan Jacob, the father of the “Welsh Fasting-Girl,” is, or rather was,³ a small tenant-farmer, occupying a farm called Llethernoyadd-ucha,⁴ in the parish of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, Carmarthenshire, about one mile and a half from the Pencader Station on the Carmarthen and Cardigan Railway. The farm contains about 124 acres of land, and was rented from the owners, Messrs. Longcroft and Lloyd, at 6*l.* a year. “The farm-house is

a rude and small dwelling-place," situate "near the lower part" of "a sort, of valley, having a south-east aspect." The land close to the house is very good, whilst other portions of the farm are very poor and hilly. "There is humid land on the west side of the house. The house itself is straw-thatched, having only one storey."

The woodcut on the frontispiece is from a photograph taken by Mr. Andrews,⁵ Wind Street, Swansea. The photograph was admitted in evidence at the trial of the parents at the Carmarthenshire Summer Assizes, 1870. "The floors of the family sitting-room, and Sarah's bedroom, are neither boarded, bricked, nor stoned, but made of hardened clay." "The (latter) room was about 12 feet by 8."⁶

The subjoined woodcut is from an elevation kindly drawn by our friend, Mr. George B. Osborne, Architect and Surveyor, Cardigan. The central doorway was added just prior to the advent of the nurses from Guy's Hospital, in order that access might be gained to the principal room, or kitchen, without interfering with the duties of the watchers. The ordinary door, on the right, gave entrance to a sort of half-passage between the

LLEATHERNOYADD-UCHA, CARMARTHENSHIRE.



Front (South-east) Elevation. (Scale $\frac{1}{8}$ th-inch to a foot.)

kitchen and Sarah's bed-room, as may be seen on the ground-plan hereafter inserted.

Living at home with Evan Jacob, were his wife Hannah, seven children, and a servant man. The eldest child was a girl, nearly eighteen years of age; the

second, also a girl, in her fifteenth year; Sarah was the third child. "All the other children are healthy." "There is a younger sister of Sarah Jacob's, five years of age, who for some time past has attended upon the invalid, and made herself a kind of necessity to her. This younger sister is a fair-haired, warm-blooded, full-bodied little girl, and has been allowed to sleep with Sarah of late."⁷ This child was generally in the room when the Vicar called.⁸

According to the general and accredited report of the neighbourhood, the whole family had the repute of sound respectability, and were said to have no particular pecuniary need. The landlords' agents never had any difficulty in obtaining the rent. The parents were regarded as an exemplary couple, and very fond of their children. The religious persuasion of the Jacobs was that of the "Independent" denomination. The parents had the appearance of being uneducated, simple-minded, ignorant persons.

Sarah Jacob was born May 12, 1857. She was in her earlier days a healthy, active child; she does not appear to have inherited any predisposition to any form of insanity, epilepsy, or pulmonary (lung) disease. She had no convulsive attack during all the period of her dentition. She was very much devoted to religious reading; and, according to the evidence of the Rev. Evan Jones, B.D., Vicar of the parish, who resided about one mile and a half from the farm, and had known the Jacobs for nine years, she was a very intelligent child. She almost invariably displayed to her many visitors her capability of reading either Scripture or poetry, as well as her capacity for reciting the latter, some of which was said to be her own composition. Whilst reading aloud, she sometimes spoke in a manner so clear and rapid as to give listeners⁹ the impression that she was reciting, and not reading.

The Vicar tells us:—"I had some knowledge of her at the Sunday school (which in the beginning of 1867 she left)¹⁰ previous to her illness. Judging from my whole experience of her, she was above the ordinary intelligence of children of her age, and a precocious child."¹¹ . . . "There was a great deal of difference in the intelligence of the child between March, 1867,

and December, 1869; she had improved by reading since 1867. . . . She comprehended everything. She seemed to like religious reading, and apparently appreciated and liked finery. She seemed to me to be a person capable of expressing her wishes, and so far as she could, of having them fully carried out."¹²

The Vicar had frequent religious conversations with her; and had every opportunity of judging of the state of her mind. She was a very pretty child, of fair complexion. From special inquiries respecting her moral qualities, we unhesitatingly chronicle that she invariably bore the character of a very good girl; never particularly seeking the society or play of the other sex. The catamenia had never shown themselves.

In February, 1866, she had with the rest of the family an attack of Scarlet Fever, from which they all recovered without medical treatment. Sarah was confined to the house about a fortnight, and then "went to a neighbouring school. About February 15, 1867, she first complained of pain in the epigastric region (pit of the stomach); and one morning, on getting up, she complained to her mother of having some frothy bloody fluid in her mouth, which the parents attributed to a cold. On Sunday, February 17th, the epigastric pain, which was chiefly in the left side, became agonizing and continued until the evening."

Mr. Henry Harries Davies, Surgeon, at Llandyssil, was on February 24th called in to attend the girl, which he did "for about six weeks." He found her in bed, in which, saving when occasionally lifted out, it is declared she continued during the remainder of her life. His remedies relieved the epigastric pain, which however lasted for a fortnight afterwards. At the end of this time "she had very strong convulsive fits," and he considered "that she had inflammation of the pleura," for which he treated her. "During the fits the body was arched forwards very considerably, the centre of the spine being very much raised from the bed. After continuing for a short time in a state of Opisthotonos,¹³ the muscular spasm suddenly ceased, and she fell flat on the bed again. For a whole month she continued in a state of unconsciousness, suffering from constant repetitions of severe convulsive attacks, during which time she took

little food." The diet prescribed by Mr. Davies was rice, milk, and oatmeal gruel. She however "became much emaciated—almost a skeleton." Mr. Davies "could not attribute the fits to hysteria or epilepsy;" and adds (when before the Coroner):—"She was for a whole month in a kind of permanent fit, lying on her back with rigidity of all the muscles." He particularly noticed "rigidity of the muscles of the left leg."

According to the father's statement, subsequently volunteered before the Coroner, Mr. Davies at length "confessed he did not know what her complaint was, and said he could not relieve her; and the only Being that could, was the Great Doctor—meaning, as he says, God Almighty."

In April, 1867, a Dr. Hopkins saw the girl once only, and he is alleged to have said that, "if he had been called in nine days sooner, he would have had more chance of curing her; but she could not be saved then, as she had inflammation of the brain." The two pills given by Dr. Hopkins, Sarah Jacob "could not take—she was too ill: she took nothing, and they only moistened her lips."

During a whole month she had not taken any kind of food; her lips and mouth had been sometimes moistened with table-beer, "but it all came back, she could not swallow any." She had passed a little water, but her bowels had not been relieved, except in small quantities.

Mr. Davies shortly afterwards resumed his attendance, and, "at first sight, could not tell whether the girl was dead or alive, as she was almost pulseless. The upper part of the belly was retracted, and the lower part full and hard." According to the father's statement, Mr. Davies, on this second visit, made a prophecy, which turned out to be more correct than did the prognosis of Dr. Hopkins. Mr. Davies came "on a Friday, and said there would be some change on the following Sunday. *On that day*" she (recovered natural consciousness, and) called out in a faint voice for milk."

Mr. Davies obtained a natural action of the bowels by means of a clyster; and at the end of a fortnight discontinued his attendance, giving the parents every necessary

instruction respecting the girl's diet. During the month of May the girl lost all her hair. The fits had now "ceased to be of the convulsive type; they were simply temporary loss of consciousness, with sudden awakings," throwing her arms about. For the next two or three months, in fact till August, 1867, she took daily from six, gradually decreasing to four, teacupfuls of rice and milk, or oatmeal and milk (flummery), which, according to the father's version, was "cast up again immediately, and blood and froth with it." During this period the bowels were not regular, not being acted on more than once in six or nine days. From August to September she did not care for, and, in fact, objected to have food offered her more than twice or three times a day. Her diet now consisted of small quantities of boiled apple and milk, or of apple dumplings. Up to this time," continues the father, "she could move both arms about like wind, but only move the right leg, the left leg being rigid."

By the beginning of October, 1867, her quantity of daily food had, it is affirmed, dwindled down to "nothing but a little apple, about the size of a pill, in a teaspoon." "At this time she made water about every other day. She looked very bad in the face, but was not thin." She still complained of a pain in the side. On the tenth day of this October,¹⁵ it is solemnly declared that "she ceased to take any food whatever," and so abstained till the day of her death, December 17, 1869, a period of two years, two months, and one week. Of the veracity of the assertion, in respect of *the one week*, there is, unfortunately, plenty of evidence. To the absurdity of believing in the barest possibility of twenty-six months absolute abstinence, it is sufficient to reply, that when, to our knowledge, she was completely deprived of food, the girl died! The parents most persistently impressed on every private as well as official visitor, both before and during the last fatal watching, that the girl did not take food¹⁶; that she could not swallow; that whenever food was mentioned to her she became, as it were, excited; that when it was offered to her she would have a fit, or the offer would make her ill. The sworn testimonies of the Vicar, the Rev. Wm. Thomas, Sister Clinch, Anne Jones,¹⁷ and the other nurses, are fully and

sufficiently confirmative on this point. Furthermore, the parents went so far as to expressly forbid the mere mention of food in the girl's presence. Sister Clinch observes:—"I was forbidden to mention food in her presence My instructions were only to see if she did take food." "I had my directions, not to offer her food."¹⁸ This restriction was, unfortunately, adhered to by one and all at the last fatal watching of the girl.

From October till Christmas, 1867, "she was given small quantities of water in the course of the day, amounting to only a few teaspoonfuls; but, since the end of December, 1867, she has not swallowed any fluid." From Christmas, 1867, till August, 1868, she is said to have had a very frequent recurrence of the "fits," which, from a week to three weeks at a time, would continue, with quarter-of-an-hour intervals, for fifteen full minutes throughout every day, and even every night, except when she was asleep. These "fits" are said to be brought on by other circumstances, as trivial as the mere mention of food. The father told the Rev. Wm. Thomas¹⁹ "that when the bed was being made, and she was removed from it to her parents' bed, she always spent the time in a fit."²⁰ If the dog made a noise, a similar result followed.²¹ The Rev. Wm. Thomas stated:—"The dog made a noise, and she closed her eyes (which they called a fit). . . . This closing of the eyes lasted for a minute or two. When her eyes were opened, they appeared just as before the fit. There was no sign of convulsion, and the fit took place when the dog barked again, which lasted the same time."²² "Occasionally, after coming out of her attacks, a little water is applied to her lips; but even this has not been done for the space of nine days."²³ She has had no secretion from the nostrils; and the skin has had no sensible perspiration, except on the hands and feet, which feel moist." Her beautiful dark-brown hair became entirely reproduced, growing to a great length. "Her second dentition was completed since her illness, and she grew in length during this time."²⁴ (After death her body measured 54 inches.)

To complete the history of Sarah Jacob, previous to

the beginning of 1869, when her "marvellous" case was publicly announced to the world, it will be necessary, even at the risk of forestalling events, to reproduce the truly disgusting ignorance (if such it was) confessed to by the father, in his extraordinary statement made before the Coroner, on Dec. 23, 1869 :—

She had no motion from her bowels for the first three weeks of this fasting, but then she had daily motions for a week—very large stools once every day, quite hard; and for the same week she passed the usual quantity of water, as much as a girl of her age could naturally be expected to pass. At the end of the week (November 6th, 1867) her last stool was very large in quantity, and hard, and she had no stool afterwards up to the time of her death. For three weeks after the end of the week when she had the last stool, she continually, every morning at five o'clock, passed about the usual quantity (of water) that girls of her age might be expected to pass. From this time, the end of December, 1867, until August, 1868, I am quite sure that she did not make a drop of water. She lay on her back all the time, and I myself made her bed. There were two beds in the room—myself and my wife slept in one bed and Sarah in the other. There was a "po" under one bed, but she could not have used it, as she could not move. She was sensible during the whole of this time, and could talk to me except when she had fits. . . . I have made her bed the whole time from the end of 1867 to the time of the nurses coming. In August, 1868, she made water on three or four occasions. I observed water spots on the bed when I made it, which was about every other day: the quantity of water made each time was about as much as you would expect from a child one year old. . . . The reason I always made the bed was that nobody else could make it so well and so smooth. . . . On the occasions when she made water between August, 1868 and the time of the nurses coming, to which I have referred, there was some special reason for her doing so—something was pressing on her mind. About this time last year she made water because her grandfather died. She made water last March when the first watch took place, because of the strangers in the house. The third time was last summer, when a cow died.

Towards the end of October, 1867, the inhabitants in the neighbourhood first commenced visiting this marvellous little girl.

In the beginning of November of the same year, the Rev. Evan Jones, B.D., the Vicar of the parish, was sent for by the parents²⁶ to visit Sarah Jacob. He was at once—by the mother—told of the girl's wonderful fasting powers; it was admitted she took water occasionally. He was also informed of the extraordinary perversion of her natural functions. He found her lying on her back in bed, which was covered with books.

There was nothing then remarkable about her dress. The girl looked weak and delicate, though not pale, and answered only in monosyllables. "The mother said her child was very anxious about the state of her soul; that it had such an effect upon her mind that she could not sleep." "I asked her herself if she had a desire to become a member of the Church of England? She said 'Yes!' She continued to express that wish until July, 1869."

The Vicar was very severely pressed in cross-examination, at the magisterial investigation on March 3, 1870, as to whether or not he administered the Sacrament to the child. He declined to answer, but on re-examination, stated:—"I administered the Communion to the parents (in the girl's presence), but not to her." A similar question—on cross-examination at the trial of the parents at the Carmarthenshire Summer Assizes, 1870—was also as emphatically denied. The child had been "taken into the Church by baptism" before the Vicar came into the parish.

This gentleman has received very many public gibes, for his after-credulity in this case. We consider it therefore but fair to chronicle his sworn evidence, that during the earlier months of his frequent attendance at the house, he did all that a Minister of the Gospel should do, to dispel the possible ignorance or moral depravity of the girl's parents. "Every time that I had a conversation with her, up to the end of 1868, the parents both persisted that she lived without food, and continued their statements in January and February, 1869. I remonstrated with them, and dwelt upon the apparent impossibility of the thing. They still persisted that it was the fact."

Even as late as September, 1869, the Vicar reiterated his ministerial remonstrances.²⁶ When, in the beginning of the spring of 1869, he observed the fantastical changes the parents made in the girl's daily attire, he told them "about the remarks made in the papers about this dressing, and dwelt on the impropriety of it." They replied, "she had no other pleasures—they did not like denying it to her." During the following summer, finding that the girl appeared "more plump in the face,"

and that her general improvement was more conspicuous, he said:—"Sarah is evidently improving and growing, and you say she takes no food—you are certainly imposing on the public. I then dwelt on the sinfulness of continuing the fraud on the public. I said there were on record several cases of alleged fasting, some of which had been put to the test, and had been discovered to be impositions; that those families would ever be held in execration by posterity, and such would be the case with them, whenever this imposture was found out." The mother "then assured me that no imposture would be discovered in that house, because there was none."

"The parents told me that presents of clothes had been made to her. When I remonstrated with the parents for not giving her food, they thought the Lord would provide for her in a supernatural way. I had an argument with the wife on the subject, and she said she thought it was a miracle. I said it was not a miracle. . . . The father always talked about the 'Doctor Mawr,'²⁷ meaning God Almighty, that she was supported by that Big Doctor." "In the early part of my visits she had occasional fits, but not in the latter part."²⁸

Apart from the frequent visitations of the Vicar and some of the neighbours of the place, we have but little evidence of the doings at Llethernoyadd-ucha, during the year 1868. In December of this year the girl had been visited by strangers,²⁹ whose number considerably augmented after the spring of 1869. About this latter time appears to have commenced that system of money and present-giving, which eventuated so detrimentally to the character and defence of the parents, when on their trial for the "manslaughter" of their child.

We certainly have no evidence during the first sixteen months of her illness, either that the girl was made a public show of, or that any money whatever flowed into the pockets of the parents. Had this stoical indifference to "filthy lucre" continued to the end, justice would have had some difficulty in imputing a motive for the alleged fraud!

In a letter to the *North Wilts Herald*, May 8, 1869, the Rev. Frederic Rowland Young writes:—"I have a very strong impression that they should in future decline

to receive any sum, however small, and from whatever quarter, partly because they have no special need for it, and partly to relieve them from the natural suspicion which the public will always entertain as long as they allow their daughter to be a means of making money."

Notwithstanding the eloquent appeal of Hannah Jacob's Counsel, who descanted on the awful consideration that "this very woman . . . should be charged with trafficking for a few shillings in the blood of her child," there is abundant evidence of the whole affair having at one time been far from unremunerative.³⁰

In his statement before the Coroner the father admitted:—"Many persons left a shilling or sixpence behind them after visiting deceased." Others were more liberal. Florins, half-crowns, and crown-pieces were sometimes given by individual visitors. Dr. Thomas Jones, late of New Quay, Cardiganshire (*Observer*), states in a letter dated January, 1870, that it was currently reported that, about April, 1869, two English lady visitors left "their offerings of two pounds in gold."

After the donation of the money the parents were generally more gracious to their visitors, sanctioning examinations and questionings of the girl not previously permitted. The Rev. Wm. Thomas³¹ states that on the occasion of his first visit, after the passage of three shillings:—"The effect was quite magical on the father;" he "changed all at once, breaking into smiles, and saying that we might feel little Sarah's hands, arms, and face."³²

This effect of "palm-oil" is also attested by Dr. Thomas Jones, who, in May, 1869, correctly prophesies:—"The time will come . . . when this miracle will be a shame and a stench in the whole country. . . . One of these days Lletherneuadd will have become a word synonymous with disgrace."³³

On April 28, 1869, Evan Jacob, the father, charged Dr. Pearson Hughes, of Llandovery, with assaulting "the Welsh Fasting-Girl." In her examination the mother, Hannah Jacob, stated:—

Scores of doctors and others have been to see the child; we never invited the public to come. I let everybody, who comes to, see her.

Most people who came there left money when they went away. They generally left a book and other presents, sometimes books, sometimes money. I never refused anything. I can't remember how much has been given her altogether.

By Mr. Fitzwilliam :—I cannot say how much she has had within the last two years. She has not had 50*l.* (laughter), nor 40*l.*, nor 20*l.*, nor 15*l.*, nor 10*l.* She might have received about 5*l.* and heaps of books. I don't know the value of the books ; they are not worth 5*l.*

Mr. Jones, Talardd :—No, nor as many shillings.

Witness :—They may be worth 3*l.* for what I know.³⁴

It is as improbable that we shall now ever be able to ascertain the *exact* method by which Sarah Jacob obtained her food, as that we shall ever know the number of visitors who went to see the girl. It is said she was visited by hundreds. The Vicar met several persons there.³⁵ Not alone from various counties of the Principality were purpose-journeys made, by the curious and interested, to the lone farm of Llethernoyadd-ucha ; England also furnished not a few intentional visitants to the far-famed Fasting-Girl of Wales. The Rev. Wm. Thomas states :—“ I saw people sitting by the fire in the kitchen, as I was going out. The father said they were strangers from Aberdare, waiting their turn to go and see the child. They were five or six in number.”³⁶

A gentleman who, from his position, is peculiarly able to form a correct opinion, assured us that almost all the town of Carmarthen must, at one time or other, have been to visit Sarah Jacob ; and that the trains on the Carmarthen and Cardigan Railway very frequently contained numerous passengers, who had come from long distances to make a regular day of it, in order to see the wonderful little girl.

In whatever light we view this exhibition of their daughter by the parents, nothing, perhaps, contributed more to a general disbelief in the whole affair, than the very lame and impotent method they adopted to rebut the allegation that they were making a profit out of their child's affliction. Instead of receiving the money into their own hands, they directed the visitors to place their gifts on the breast of the girl. “ I saw strangers leaving shillings on the bed with Sarah, in the presence of her parents. I heard the parents say that Sarah received the money and that they did not.”³⁷ “ On one occasion

money was offered to the parents, and the mother told the parties to put their gifts on the breast of the child."³⁸ The Rev. Wm. Thomas states:—"Mr. Jones offered three shillings to the mother, but she said that neither she nor the father took it, and it was to be given to little Sarah on her breast, and we did so accordingly."³⁹ During the charge of assault against Dr. Pearson Hughes, Mr. Evan Davies swore:—"I then gave the mother a two-shilling piece in her hand; after holding it a little in her hand she gave it back to me, asking me to put it on the child's breast, where everybody else did."⁴⁰ At the trial of the parents Mr. John Jones, solicitor, Llandyssil, swore:—"I offered the mother three shillings on leaving. She said she did not receive money from any visitors at all. Asked me to put it on the child's chest."⁴¹ In examination at the trial we were asked:—"Had you left any money with the girl?—I had not, with the girl. Who did you give it to?—I offered it to the mother; she then by motion and by talking to Mr. Davies suggested that I should put it on the girl's chest. Did you do so?—I did not. I said I could not stand such trumpery as that, but as I had occupied her house and her time, I would give her a shilling for so doing, and put it into her hand. She took it?—She took it. Did Mr. Davies do so?—Both gentlemen gave something—(Mr. Davies and Mr. Robert Rees of Bristol)."⁴²

When money was not forthcoming, presents of clothes, finery, books, or flowers appear to have been substituted.⁴³ Advantage was taken of these presents to bedeck the child in every variety of smartness. At one time she "had a victorine about her neck, and a wreath about her hair;" then again, "ornaments and a jacket on, and her hair nicely dressed with ribbons," in addition to the wreath of flowers.⁴⁴ At another time (when visited by the Rev. William Thomas, M.A., Unitarian Minister and Schoolmaster, of Llandyssil, in company of Mr. John Jones, Solicitor, of the same place, "she was decked out with ornaments of different kinds." "She had a silk shawl, a victorine round her neck, a small crucifix attached to a necklace, and little ribbons (one blue on the right) above the wrists. She was lying on her back,

a child's comb in her hair, which was brushed back and lying down on the sides. She had drab gloves on. . . . Her bed was nearly covered with books—picture-books especially."⁴⁵ When visited by Dr. Pearson Hughes, of Llandovery, "the little girl was dressed up in the most imposing and fantastic way possible. Her hair, which is profuse, was brushed back Eugénie-style; she wore a necklace of large beads with cross attached. She also had a white silk ribbon round her neck, fastened by a brooch (or 'at least a tassel and a small narrow little victorine as well'); an embroidered white night-dress; a blue ribbon round right wrist, and a black-and-white one round left; and her hands were enveloped in warm gloves. Her arms were placed across her chest, holding in one hand a small Testament, and entwined amongst all there was a small narrow victorine. The bed-clothes were strewn with heaps of little books, more especially Prayer-books, Testaments, little Welsh hymn-books, and periodicals containing her own compositions, &c."⁴⁶

The Rev. Frederic Rowland Young found that "she had on her head a woman's cap, and her hair was arranged in a bunch at the back of her head."⁴⁷ On our visiting the girl in August, 1869, we found her "lying in her bed decorated as a bride, having round her head a wreath of flowers, from which was suspended a smart ribbon, the ends of which were joined by a small bunch of flowers after the present fashion of ladies' bonnet-strings. Before her, at proper reading distance, was an open Welsh book, supported by two other books upon her body." "She had some white outer garment."⁴⁸

Despite the alleged fasting, Sarah Jacob actually improved in health between October, 1867, and February, 1869. "The girl was rather going forward in health than going back."⁴⁹

On February 19, 1869, the following letter appeared in the *Welshman* newspaper:—

A STRANGE CASE.

To the Editor of the "Welshman."

SIR,—Allow me to invite the attention of your readers to a most extraordinary case. Sarah Jacob, a little girl of twelve years of age, and daughter of Mr. Evan Jacob, Lletherneuadd, in this parish, has

not partaken of a single grain of any kind of food whatever during the last sixteen months. She did occasionally swallow a few drops of water during the first few months of this period; but now she does not even do that. She still looks pretty well in the face, and continues in the possession of all her mental faculties. She is in this, and several other respects, a wonderful little girl.

Medical men persist in saying that the thing is quite impossible, but all the nearest neighbours, who are thoroughly acquainted with the circumstances of the case, entertain no doubt whatever on the subject, and I am myself of the same opinion.

Would it not be worth their while for medical men to make an investigation into the nature of this strange case? Mr. Evan Jacob would readily admit into his house any respectable person, who might be anxious to watch it, and to see for himself.

I may add that Lletherneuadd is a farm-house, about a mile from New Inn, in this parish.

Yours faithfully,

THE VICAR OF LLANFIHANGEL-AR-ARTH.

The Vicar, however, was not the first to make this "strange case in Wales" publicly known. It had been recorded in nearly all the Welsh papers and periodicals for weeks, before he wrote to the *Welshman*.⁵⁰ His letter was, however, we believe, the first *English*⁵¹ one on the subject. It was copied into a great many papers; and after that more people than before came to visit the girl. The Vicar's credulity evoked, amongst other editorial remarks, certain sarcastic observations from the Editor of the *Lancet*, upon whom the Vicar retorted in a local paper, twitting Medical Science, in general, as being "the most uncertain and immature of all sciences."⁵²

The allegation, however, of the Rev. Evan Jones, B.D., that Sarah Jacob had, for sixteen or seventeen months, lived a life analogous to that of hibernating animals, was, of course, too absurd to be received by a Profession which, now-a-days, insists on irresistible proofs and irrefragable evidence. Despite the Reverend gentleman's asseveration respecting the parents' veracity, the medical world could not then be induced to send down a commission, some 200 miles, for the investigation of the mystery.

On March 10th, 1869, she was visited by Mr. James Burns, 15, Southampton Row, London, who details the following facts, equally recognisable by non-medical observers:—"I was much struck with the intelligent and

pleasing aspect of her countenance. The face is round, the features small, sharp, and regular; the eyes are particularly brilliant and intelligent-looking, and of a dark brown colour. The brow is smooth and rounded, the forehead more of a broad than sharp appearance. . . . Her head, as near as I could measure, is twenty and a half inches in circumference. . . . In length, she measures about four feet eight inches. . . . She can use the right hand a little, the skin of which is red, as if the blood were congested in the capillaries, as one's hand is when exposed to the cold. It felt cold and clammy, but readily increased in temperature by being held in my warm hands. . . . Her face looks full and even healthy, and there is occasionally considerable flush on her cheeks. The skin of the face feels rather hard and flinty to the touch. Her temples are warm, as well as the other parts of her head. . . . Her voice is rather high-keyed, sharp, and hurried."⁵³

On the 11th March, 1869, an event occurred at the out-of-the-way farm-house, forcibly illustrating that human weaknesses were nevertheless attachable to even parents of a "miraculous" heroine.

A charge of assault was preferred by the parents of Sarah Jacob, the girl in Carmarthenshire who is said to have abstained from food or drink for the last seventeen months, against Pearson Hughes, M.D., of Llandovery, at the Llandyssil Petty Sessions. The mother of the girl stated that, on the 11th of March last, the defendant and two others came to her house and went into the parlour, where the girl slept. Dr. Hughes stripped the girl, and held a stethoscope to her breast, and stopped her breath. Defendant then asked when the girl was on her legs last, and also if she had any bed-sores. Witness replied that she had not seen the child's back for two years, upon which the defendant pushed his hand behind the girl's shoulders, and passed it down her back, causing her to groan and rise up in her bed. Witness admitted that the child might have received as much as 5*l.*— Mr. Jones, for the defendant, said that Dr. Hughes regarded the affair as the greatest hoax that was ever perpetrated, and submitted that the mother had given her consent to the examination, a fact that was proved by the woman having accepted money. The Bench dismissed the charge, the Chairman remarking that his own opinion on the subject of the alleged fasting was very decided, and he would express it if the parents wished him to do so.⁵⁴

In the postscript to a letter, signed "Justitia," in the *Welshman*, May 14, 1869, we read:—"The country is on tiptoe-expectation for a word from Dr. Hughes, and I

have no doubt he will soon and effectually meet it." Dr. Hughes did not, however, gratify "the country" till after the girl's death. Apart from the extreme value of the scientific observations he makes, Dr. Hughes gives so graphic an account of the condition of the girl, at the period to which we have now brought this history, that we hesitate not to insert his *ipsissima verba* thereon:—

The subject under notice is a good-looking girl, features straight, forehead high, eyes prominent, pupils large, eyelashes long, a plump face, and rosy cheeks; pulse, 85; temperature normal to hand; body well nourished, all organs perfectly healthy, and functions of body properly performed. She is fatter and heavier than she was before she is said to have given up taking food (mother's own words); she has a clean, healthy tongue; there is no hyper-resonance over the abdomen (in fact it is quite natural), there being no retraction either.

Gurgling is distinctly heard over the stomach and intestines (infallible signs of fluid and air). Her back is perfectly healthy, though not able to move for eighteen months (according to mother).

The above symptoms, together with the general character of the case, the ease with which she goes into "fits," the sobbings, her *inability* to do things which she easily does next minute, &c., point to the case being that of HYSTERIA.

. A consideration of the above features of the case afforded convincing proofs, to my mind, that the statement that the child lived without food, was void of a vestige of foundation in fact.

After describing her dress and bed (as stated on page 15), Dr. Pearson Hughes continues:—

Bread and butter, together with a bottle half-full of some mixture, were also seen on the bed.

What we were told:—After entering the kitchen, the mother said that we should not see the little girl until the room was set aright. When allowed to enter, the first thing I said to the girl (after a little preliminary talk) was, "Show me your tongue." She answered, "I cannot" (although able to talk and read out loudly and distinctly). *The mother corroborated this by saying that she had not opened her mouth for the last ten months.* However, upon taking off her gloves, the girl cried, and by so doing opened her mouth, and therefore I was enabled to see her tongue. The mother also stated that she had more than half left this world, was perfectly happy, read, prayed, composed poetry, &c.; that she was so weak that she could not turn the leaves of a book herself, which the mother did for her; but in course of the examination the girl played her hands about freely, and at the end of it took a Testament from her mother and turned the leaves for a certain chapter. Then I was told that I should feel her very cold, but on the contrary, I found her body of natural warmth. The mother next said the child was paralysed (or as she called it dead) on the left side, but on examining I found

she could move both legs equally well. In answer to my inquiry about the state of the back, the mother asserted that she had not seen it for many months, though changing her linen two and three times a week. *She declared as well that she had not offered the child any food of any kind for ten months, and that they dare not even talk of food in her presence, as she always goes into a "fit" when she hears the word.*⁵⁵

For some weeks after the charge of assault, Dr. Pearson Hughes was certainly "the best abused man in the Principality. Because he ventured to deliver an opinion upon the case, regiments of correspondents, comprising all classes from Vicars down through labourers to tailors, with their pen-cannons, poured forth to the charge and rescue. Defamation, contumely, and the richest cream of Billingsgate diction, were savagely hurled at his head."⁵⁶

Immediately following Dr. Pearson Hughes's visit, Sarah Jacob was seen by the Rev. Wm. Thomas and Mr. John Jones, Solicitor, of Llandyssil. The same tale, as regards the abstinence from food and the cessation of the natural functions, was repeated by the parents in the presence of the girl, who, although speaking only in monosyllables, "seemed to understand perfectly what was going on."

The former gentleman states:—

She appeared healthy, plump as to flesh ("and like in physical condition to any well-fed girl"),⁵⁷ and a slight colour in her cheeks. Her eyes were peculiar ("peculiarly sharp and roguish").⁵⁸ She kept ogling us continually. I saw no signs of illness about her; and in spirits (as far as we could judge). . . . The father suggested she should read to us, which she did. He handed the book and found the place. She read twice and recited twice. Her voice was shrill and her utterance rapid. The recitations were Welsh. I understood it, and it was nothing I had heard before. The father said she composed poetry. He turned over the leaves for her when she read, because she could not close her forefinger of the right hand on the thumb. . . . I felt her right arm and face. Her flesh, as to temperature, was naturally warm. She was asked if she was hurt; she said, "No."⁵⁹

In his evidence before the Coroner, the Rev. Wm. Thomas adds:—"Her teeth were perfectly white. . . . Her countenance was cheerful and happy, and her complexion, that of a healthy girl, clear."⁶⁰ The father said "she could not take hold of anything, and that her left arm and side were paralysed." "He also said, she was sore all over, and could not bear to be touched."⁶¹

The Vicar also confirms certain of these observations. "I never saw her move her left arm. The parents always said her left arm was stiff, and I had no reason to doubt the truth of their assertion. . . . There was a certain shrillness and quiver of the voice when she spoke. . . . The girl had bright piercing eyes, flashing from object to object."⁶²

Anne Jones, one of the Nurses, in her evidence before the Coroner, very cursorily disposes of the asserted Paralysis of the girl's left side:—"She pretended she could not move her left arm and leg, when we first went there. I know of no cause that would have prevented her."⁶³

Some few days after Dr. Pearson Hughes's visit, the father visited the Vicarage, and expressed a wish to have the girl watched. The Vicar states in his evidence:—"I told him to speak to Mr. Davies, Surgeon, of Llandyssil, on the subject, because a medical man could do it more efficiently than I could. (I mean undertaking the watching by 'it.') A few days afterwards I saw the father, and he said that a public meeting had been convened at the Eagle Inn, Llanfihangel-ar-Arth. He spoke to me on Saturday. The meeting was held on Monday. I took the chair at such meeting. . . . The father was there. There were no minutes taken."

The following extract from a local paper details what occurred at this meeting:—

A committee, comprising several gentlemen and respectable farmers of the neighbourhood, met on Monday evening, the 15th March, in the National Schoolroom, Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, with the view of devising the most efficient plan for watching and testing the case of Sarah Jacob, the young girl who is represented as not having taken any food during the last eighteen months. The committee consisted of H. H. Davies, Esq., Surgeon, Llandyssil; J. Jones, Esq., Maes-crugiau; B. Jones, Esq., Talardd; Messrs. D. Davies, Llwyncroes; D. Davies, Dolmaen; D. Phillips, Pantglas; D. Francis, Gwndwn; T. Morris, Pencader; D. James, Castelldu; E. Davies, Crossinfach; T. Thomas, Ty-wrth-yr-eglwys; J. Thomas, Eagle Inn; D. James, Schoolmaster; E. Davies, Powell Castle; T. Evans, Crossmaen; R. Thomas, Gate; H. Jones, Powell Castle, and the Rev. E. Jones, Vicar of the parish, who occupied the chair. It should be understood that the committee met at the request of Mr. Evan Jacob, father of the girl, who has expressed a strong desire that the case should be thoroughly investigated. The following resolutions were unanimously passed at the meeting—First, "That the services of four men will be

required for the object in view—viz., two by day and two by night." Second, "That these men be required to sign a solemn declaration or to be sworn before the magistrates, before they are allowed to undertake the watching of the case; and that this declaration or oath should bind them not to leave a single moment pass without one of them remaining in the presence of the girl." Third, "That at the termination of the engagement, they be again examined on oath as to the result of the inquiry." Fourth, "That H. H. Davies, Esq., Surgeon, Llandyssil, should undertake to communicate with three medical men from different and distant parts of Wales, and to request that each of those gentlemen would appoint one trustworthy man, and that Mr. Davies himself should appoint the fifth (*sic*) man." Fifth, "That these men should undertake their task, if possible, on the 22nd inst." Sixth, "That subscription lists be opened at this meeting, and by the members of the committee in their several localities, in order to defray the expenses of the undertaking; and that those persons at a distance who may be willing to contribute, should be desired to send their contributions to H. H. Davies, Esq., Surgeon, Llandyssil." Seventh, "That the surplus (if any) remaining, after paying the men, be sent to the treasurer of the Carmarthen Infirmary." It was further resolved that the length of time, during which the inquiry should be continued could not be determined at this meeting. It may be added that visitors coming to see the girl will be expected to subscribe to the above mentioned fund; and it ought to be distinctly understood that in future no visitors will be admitted into the house on *Sundays*.—*Communicated.*

The Vicar further stated:—"Mr. Davies afterwards said he had written, but only one of the gentlemen had answered (viz. Mr. Rowland, Strata-Florida, Cardiganshire). Mr. Davies said Mr. Rowland had promised to send a watcher. After that, some of the people who had held this meeting, held another; and, in the presence of Mr. Davies, it was arranged (under the circumstances) he should send three watchers, in conjunction with Mr. Rowland's watcher. The parents were not present. Mr. Davies appointed three watchers—viz. Mr. Davies, a student at St. David's College (age 21); a younger brother of this student, named James H. Davies (they were nephews of Mr. Davies, the Surgeon); Thomas Davies, a retired farmer of Llwynfedw; and the last was Mr. Rowland's nominee (a Mr. John Jones).⁶⁴ The watching commenced late in March, I believe. It was agreed, in the presence of the father and Mr. Davies, that the watching was to continue for a fortnight. During the watching I went to Lletherneuadd, and into the girl's room. The father had the making of the bed

every day. The watching was carried on by the so-called Committee, thus (as far as I saw): One of the watchers was present whenever I called, but the father and mother not always. The watching continued for the fortnight." "I had a good deal to do with this first watching."⁶⁵

It appears, however, that seven watchmen were originally appointed. The reasons of the dismissal of three of them, will appear in the subjoined report. Prior to the commencement of this watching, no precautions whatever were taken to ascertain the possibility of the concealment of food. The parents actually debarred the watchers from touching the child's bed. The very first element of success was therefore denied; and no wonder that the whole process was ultimately regarded as an absurdity. The watching consisted in two different men taking alternate watches from eight till eight. The watching, to see whether the child partook of food commenced on March 22, and ended April 5, 1869—a period of fourteen days.

"During the above fortnight, one of the watchers, in turn, was always close to her bed, and in her sight day and night; and at the time the bed was being made, which was generally every other morning, the four persons were always present, and had every article thoroughly examined."⁶⁶ The parents were allowed to go near the bed,⁶⁷ as also was the little sister, six years old, who had been Sarah's constant companion and bedfellow.

On Wednesday, April 7, 1859, a public meeting was held at the Eagle Inn, Llandyssil, to hear the statements of the parents, and of the several persons who had watched the child during the fourteen days. The parents briefly detailed the condition and symptoms of their daughter from the commencement of her illness. At no time during the whole fourteen days did the pulse ever reach above 90 per minute, although exceedingly changeable, as it always had been. The following evidence was received from the watchers, and it is *said*⁶⁸ that "their statements were duly verified on oath before a magistrate":—

Watcher No. 1, said:—I, Evan Edwards Smith, watched Sarah

Jacob for two consecutive nights (*i.e.* nights 22nd and 23rd of March) at the request of Mr. H. H. Davies, Surgeon. The parents gave every facility to investigate the matter. I watched her with all possible care, and found nothing to suspect that food or drink was given to her by foul means. I am quite sure she had nothing during my watch. I was dismissed on account of being suspected to doze on the second night.

Watcher No. 2:—This watcher watched Sarah Jacob for a whole fortnight, and found no indications that the child had anything to eat or drink. His name was Daniel Harries Davies, of St. David's College.

Watcher No. 3:—John Jones, shopkeeper, of Pontrhydfendigaid, gave similar evidence. He was a decided sceptic before he commenced watching, but after watching twelve days was thoroughly convinced of the fact that nothing in the shape of nourishment was given to the poor child. He watched every movement of all the inmates, and found nothing that would lead him to suspect that any nourishment was given to the little girl.

Watcher No. 4:—James Harries Davies, medical student, spoke in like manner, and was perfectly positive that nothing had been given to her during the fortnight he had watched there, with the exception of three drops of water once to moisten her lips with. He was as great a sceptic as any before he commenced watching, but as he saw nothing to confirm his suspicions, he could conscientiously say that nothing had been given her during his watch.

Watcher No. 5:—Evan Davies, of Powel Castle, who only watched her for one day (the first day) gave similar evidence, but as he was a neighbour he was dismissed for a stranger.

Watcher No. 6:—Herbert Jones watched only for one day (day after the above Evan Davies) and spoke in a similar (manner) and was dismissed on account of his credulity.

Watcher No. 7:—Thomas Davies, of Llwynfedw, who had been the greatest sceptic of all, was strongly convinced. He watched Sarah Jacob twelve days, and was quite positive that nothing could have been given her during his watch. He watched her with all possible care, and was very cautious to be in a prominent place, where Sarah Jacob's mouth was always in sight.

In addition to this detailed report we have been fortunate in obtaining a copy of the complete and important evidence of "Watcher No. 7 (an old man of 72 years of age, who bears the character of being truth-telling)," signed by himself and witnessed by others.

It is as follows:—

Evidence of THOMAS DAVIES, Llwynfedw, Llanfihangel.

I did my best to find out the secret, for I believe there was some secret connected with the affair. Sarah passed a great deal of water. There was a book in the room for the purpose of entering all the subscriptions which were received towards the fund, as was arranged in the Committee. Her mother combed her hair in my presence, and

found many lice there. Sarah and her younger sister were on very intimate terms, and Sarah seemed to be ill unless her younger sister was near her. Sarah often kissed her sister. I do not know whether they changed the bedclothes in the presence of the night watchers or not. Sarah often received fifteen shillings or more a day on her own account, exclusive of the money which was given towards the fund. When we (watchers) were counting the money which was subscribed towards the fund, Sarah's father said: "This by right belongs to little Sarah." When the dog barked, Sarah used to go off into a fit. The parents' bed was very close to Sarah's. The parents used to go to bed about 9 P.M. The other watchers told me that Sarah used to sleep from 9 P.M. to 6 A.M. There was no fire in the room. There was a library on the fireplace. Sarah composed a piece of poetry in memory of her grandfather. Sarah never read unless she was asked to do so. I told the father that Sarah would die like the other children; he replied, that she would not; he meant that she was supernatural. People came from all parts of the country to see Sarah. When in need Sarah used to call for her sister. The head of Sarah was towards the feet of her parents when in bed. I did not smoke in the room. I cannot say how many came to see her a day, they came in groups of six or seven persons. The house was nearly always crowded during my watch, which lasted twelve days. I do not think the fits left any effect on Sarah's appearance—I believe they were only habitual. The parents used to change the bed-clothes every other day which were wet, and they took them to the kitchen to be dried. The parents told me that after the commencement of the watch, Sarah began to pass water. I heard during the watch that Sarah had lived for *nineteen* months without food; a little previous to the watch I heard that she had lived for about *ten* months without food. They used to remove Sarah from one bed to another without anything on except her night-gown. H. H. Davies, Esq., Surgeon, and the Vicar of Llanfihangel, asked me to watch. H. H. Davies, Esq., Surgeon, and C. C. Corsellis Esq., Surgeon, passed nearly a whole afternoon at Llethernoyadd examining Sarah. I never asked the night watchers whether they examined the parents' bed every night or not. My co-watcher was James Davies, Esq., a nephew of H. H. Davies, Esq. We never ate any food in the room, for she was very particular in that way. Sarah seemed to be in as well a condition as the other children, if not better. After Dr. Hughes, Llandovery, visited Sarah, she herself said, "I felt a little pain in my arm the following night, but nothing on the morrow." Sarah's mother said that Dr. Hughes ill-used her, but Sarah never complained of being ill-used. The father told me that the Great Father had taken possession of her, and that he had nothing to do with her. It is my opinion that she would have lived to this day if people had not interfered. Sarah never called for any one except for her sister, and I really believe if there was any secret her sister possessed it. Her parents told me that Sarah passed no water before the commencement of the first watch. I had no particular conversation with my co-watcher, for Sarah's friends were nearly always in the room. I saw her in no pain during the whole of my watch, but if her sister was absent, she appeared to be uneasy, and would call in a loud voice her mother, who was in the kitchen (she being in the parlour)

and ask her to send her sister in. My co-watcher brought some intoxicating drink with him the first day of our watch, but I did not see him drink it, nor do I believe he did so. I heard that Mr. Rowland's watcher, feeling some colic pain in his bowels had a glass of spirits, and when my co-watcher and myself arrived there the following morning, he had left, and it was reported that he was drunk, but I cannot say that that statement is true. Persons should on no account see Sarah's tongue, although she would talk, read, and laugh. Judging by his general conversation and (other) circumstances, I calculate that H. H. Davies, Esq., Surgeon, believed that Sarah existed without food. We never examined Sarah's bed manually when they were removing her to her parents' bed. Previous to, and during the watch, I believed Sarah obtained nourishment some way or the other, but after the watch I was in great doubt. I do not believe Sarah was an angel when on earth—as to what she is at present I cannot say. I told the parents to be satisfied after the first watch, and let Sarah have fair play as regards her own life. I was in great favour with Sarah. Sarah could not turn a leaf of a book, but she could scratch her head."

Examined by THOMAS JONES, Surgeon, Gellifaharen.

Witness, JOHN GRIFFITHS.

The original copy signed by the aforesaid THOMAS DAVIES.

Such evidence and procedure fully justify the current opinion, that this watching was the greatest possible farce and mockery. At the time it was rumoured that one of the watchers was one night found asleep at his post; and that another had to go home in consequence of the effect of some gin.⁶⁹

On the very day the above public meeting was held, Sarah Jacob was visited by Dr. T. Lewis of Carmarthen, who in reporting⁷⁰ his observations, writes:—

State on April 7, 1869.—She was lying in a low bed, on her back, the shoulders and head slightly raised, and her right arm outside the clothes, which she moved at will. Her face was not emaciated, but moderately full, with slight flush on the cheeks, and the nose and colour of lips natural; her features were perfect, and good-looking; the skin of her face generally was healthy; her front teeth were normal, and it was said that the remainder were so, though I did not see them. She was not able to open her mouth: she never put out the tongue. The temperature of the forehead was natural; her eyes were bright; the irides of hazel brown colour. The general aspect of her face was that of being delicate, not cachectic. As her examination required to be proceeded with cautiously, her body was not uncovered, but my hand was applied immediately to the front of the chest and the abdomen. The skin covering these parts was warm; there was no excessive emaciation felt; the abdomen was not depressed, but was of the usual position of a slender child. Occasional flatulent rumbling noises were heard in the abdomen. The whole of the right arm was seen, and the legs; the colour and texture of the skin on these parts were healthy; the hand looked

delicate, and the nails well formed. The length of the right forearm and hand, from the point of the elbow to the end of the middle finger, was 14 inches; from the point of the elbow to the carpal end of the ulna, was 8 inches; the girth of the middle of the arm, 7 inches, and of the middle of the forearm, $6\frac{3}{4}$ inches; the length of the whole body was 4 feet 8 inches, measured with a tape. The respiration was natural; 17 inspirations in the minute. The superficial breadth of the chest, across the level of the mammæ, was 10 inches. The pulse was feeble, but distinct, and variable, from 100 to 108 per minute. The temperature in the axilla, after three minutes' rest, was 95° ; the temperature of the feet rather low. She sleeps well every night, from six to eight hours, but she does not sleep in the day. She is cheerful in her disposition. I heard her read aloud a Welsh hymn; her voice was plaintive, but moderately loud and distinct. During my visit, she had three or four attacks of unconsciousness: one was caused by the barking of a dog; she partially closed the eyelids, and remained perfectly still; the colour of the face was not altered. After two or three minutes, she heaved a sigh, made a slight sound, and seemed like one suddenly awaking from sleep.

She is once a day removed from one bed to another, for the purpose of shaking her bed; during this time she remains in a state of unconsciousness, or what they call "a fit," and does not recover until replaced in her own bed. She is clothed in a coloured flannel and calico night-dress.

The foregoing account is drawn up, after a visit to the girl, for two objects: to satisfy the curiosity of persons at a distance who are desirous of knowing the history and present state of the Welsh Fasting-Girl, and also to awaken the attention of those who have the leisure and the scientific ardour to visit the case, and investigate and judge for themselves.

Apart from these "two objects," two other and more important ones have been furnished and proved by this excellent account of the girl's condition on the day Dr. Lewis visited her. Two days after the termination of a fortnight's continuous watch by four men, presumptively in constant proximity to her bed by night and by day, the evidence of a skilled observer reports *no symptoms whatever referrible either to the effects of Acute Starvation, or to the more subtle influence of Mental Shock.* Contrast the details so graphically described by Dr. Lewis, with the daily condition of the girl following (according to sworn evidence) the *eight days' absolute* deprivation of all solid and liquid food in the following December! If the symptoms and effects produced by the watching in December differ so materially from the symptoms and effects produced by the *fourteen days' watching* in the preceding April, these two sequences obviously must

be admitted as an almost mathematical demonstration :—
 1st, that in April, despite the presence of the four *men*-
 watchers, food found access to Sarah Jacob's economy ;
 2nd, that whereas the continuous presence of four *men* for
 fourteen days and nights produced no evidence whatever
 of mental shock, the symptoms and the death in December
 must therefore owe their origin to some other cause than
 the mere eight days' and nights' continuous presence of
 four *kind, sympathizing, skilled female* nurses. *In December*
the watching most unquestionably and absolutely precluded the ac-
cess of food. Criticizing with our present knowledge of the
 girl's powers of endurance, is it also conceivable that on the
 7th of April Sarah Jacob could have presented all those
 evidences of physical health unless the then fortnight's
 alleged abstinence had been only a fallacy and a farce ?

On May 4, 1869, the Rev. Frederic Rowland Young,
 minister of the Free Christian Church, New Swindon,
 paid a visit to the girl, in order to try whether he could
 cure her by the laying on of hands. Owing, as he *believes*,
 to the imperfect manipulation allowed him ; to the fact of
 his ignorance of the Welsh language necessitating the
 intervention of an interpreter, and thus diminishing
 the "measure of mental contact" between operator and
 patient, and to the presence in the girl's room of a
 sceptic in spiritualism, the endeavour by the Rev. F.
 R. Young to make this young girl rise from her bed
 and partake of food, was a complete failure.⁷¹ About this
 time she was also visited by Dr. Thomas Jones, now of
 Gellifaharen, who found her pulse "from 55 to 60—
 weak, but quite regular."⁷²

On May 19, 1869, the girl was visited by Mr. John
 Thomas, Surgeon, and Ex-Mayor of Cardigan. This
 gentleman forwarded a few days afterwards a long
 descriptive letter to the editor of the *Cambria Daily*
Leader. Its insertion was, however, refused. By the
 courtesy of the Ex-Mayor we are permitted to append
 the following extracts from his letter, which show the
 condition of the girl about six weeks later than does the
 report of Dr. Lewis :—

Since her general appearance and condition are so widely known, it
 is unnecessary to refer to them at length—except that the nice layer of
 fat with which she is covered, gives her the appearance of a person

taking cod-liver oil *ad libitum*—in fact, her temporal fossæ are bulging with fat. The pulse was 80, soft, and of moderate volume, with a corresponding respiration of 20, which was easy, regular, and full at each respiration. After making the above observations, I called her mother into another room, and asked her to allow me to place a quill in her mouth; she replied that Dr. Davies, Llandyssil, had been doing that with her, and that she was afraid to allow me to do that, lest it would drive her into a fit, and “besides,” she said, “her teeth are so clenched that you cannot place anything between them.” “Well,” I said, “will you allow me to place it between her cheeks and teeth?” No, she will not consent even to that; so I was frustrated in my scientific investigation for starch, milk, or (?) cod-liver oil. I asked her, “Will you allow me to clyster her?” “Oh, dear no; Dr. Davies used to do that to her, and it gave her such agonizing pain, that I should never think of allowing you to do that, for that would drive her into a fit at once.” “Very well,” I said; “let it be done when she is in the fit, then it will not hurt.” “Oh, yes; she feels everything when she is in the fit; she knew well the pain Dr. Hughes gave her.” “Well,” I said, “will you allow any other doctor to examine her mouth, and to clyster her, so as to satisfy the public, to a certain extent, that there is no trace of food to be found in the body?” “Her father says that no doctor shall touch her again.” After this conversation, I again went to the girl, and talking to her to take her off her guard, I tried to insert my finger between her lips to feel her teeth; the contraction of the lips, actually prevented my doing so, although I used force enough to convince me that she was not in that state of debility of which so much has been spoken and written. I asked her then to open her mouth as she did when reading or singing. The mother, who plays the part of the “showwoman,” said, “Oh, no; she has not opened her mouth for more than eighteen months.” She was decked with ribbons and brooches, and her hair nicely put up; in fact, it gave me the idea that they were aping an angelic appearance. The crowning point of my observation is this—that she had a shilling on her chest! I thought at first sight that it was a small brooch, but, no! a coin of the realm—an incentive to the company how to act before they bid adieu to the wonderful Sarah Jacob.

The Jacobites and their partizans say that the girl is living without food for these last eighteen months. It is a mysterious hoax practised on the community, and I pronounce without the slightest exaggeration that it is the cleverest hoax that human mind could ever conceive. . . . I took the mother to account about the nails, but she said that no one had touched her nails for eighteen months.⁷³

By the month of June or July, 1869, the girl had improved very much in her appearance. Her voice became stronger, and her face very much more plump than usual. “During August and September her improvement was more conspicuous.”⁷⁴

In the month of August, 1869, we were taking our holiday amongst our old friends in the town of Cardigan, when, one day, we were asked by Mr. Thomas Edward

Davies, Solicitor, of that place, if we should like to accompany him on the morrow, to see the far-famed Fasting-Girl. Our friend's firm were the agents to the Landlords of the Jacobs' farm. He was going to Pencader on legal business, connected with the estate. Under such excellent guidance and auspice, we at once availed ourselves of the offer, being very desirous of making out the medical facts of the case. After journeying on the beautiful morning of the 30th August, 1869, along the lovely valley of the Tivy, we left the horse and vehicle at the since well-frequented Wilkes' Head Inn, and continued our travel from Llandyssil by rail to Pencader, at which station little boys, with the words "Fasting-Girl," or "This is the shortest way to Lletherneuadd," inscribed in large letters on big sheets of paper, or cards on their caps, were earning many an honest penny, by acting as guides to the farm of Llethernoyadd-ucha. Mr. Davies' knowledge of local geography required, of course, no such help. After a circuitous but pleasant walk along a Welsh lane, over hill and down dale, we at length arrived across the moor to where the marvel was living.

Although we crossed over some fields and hedges, approaching the house from the *back* of the farm, the advent of visitors had evidently been signalled or recognised. After a little parley in Welsh between our friend and the mother of the girl, who came to the door to meet us, we were permitted to enter the *sanctum* where Sarah Jacob was evidently quite ready to receive company. The facts we observed, and the result of our medical examination, were, in a few days afterwards, communicated—by ourselves—to *The Times* (September 7, 1869) in the following letter :—

THE FASTING-GIRL OF WALES.

To the Editor of the "Times."

SIR,—Taking my annual outing in the picturesque neighbourhood of the Tivy, I was a few days ago enabled, through the kindness of my friend Mr. Thomas Davies, jun., Solicitor, Cardigan, to visit and examine the now far-famed Fasting-Girl of Wales. The child, Sarah Jacob, is the daughter of a small tenant farmer living at Llethernoyadd-ucha in the parish of Llanfilhangel-ar-Arth, Carmarthenshire, about 1½ mile from the Pencader Station on the Cardigan and Carmarthen

Railway. The first impression was most unfavourable, and to a medical man the appearances were most suspicious. The child was lying on a bed,—decorated as a bride, having round her head a wreath of flowers, from which was suspended a smart ribbon, the ends of which were joined by a small bunch of flowers, after the present fashion of ladies' bonnet-strings. Before her, at proper reading distance, was an open Welsh book supported by two other books on her body. The blanket-covering was clean, tidy, and perfectly smooth. Across the fireplace, which was nearly opposite the foot of her bed, was an arrangement of shelves well stocked with English and Welsh books, the gifts of various visitors to the house. The child is thirteen years of age, and is undoubtedly very pretty. Her face was plump, and her cheeks and lips of a beautiful rosy colour. Her eyes were bright and sparkling, the pupils were very dilated—in a measure explicable by the fact of the child's head and face being shaded from the window light by the projecting side of her cupboard bedstead. There was that restless movement and frequent looking out at the corners of the eyes so characteristic of simulative disease. Considering the lengthened inactivity of the girl, her muscular development was very good, and the amount of fat layer not inconsiderable. My friend stated that she looked even better than she did about a twelvemonth ago. There was a slight perspiration over the surface of the body. The pulse was perfectly natural, as were also the sounds of the lungs and heart, so far as I was enabled to make a stethoscopic examination. Having received permission to do this, I proceeded to make the necessary disarrangement of dress, when the girl went off into what the mother called a fainting fit. This consisted of nothing but a little and momentary hysterical crying and sobbing. The colour never left the lips or cheeks. The pulse remained of the same power. Consciousness could have been but slightly diminished, inasmuch as upon my then opening the eyelids, I perceived a distinct upward and other movement of the eyeballs. Each percussion stroke of my examination, and even the pressure of the stethoscope, educed an expression of pain, which elicited a natural sympathy from the mother, and an assertion that a continuance of such examination would bring on further fits. On percussing the region of the stomach I most distinctly produced the sound of gurgling, which we know to be caused by the admixture of air and fluid in motion. The most positive assurance of the parents was subsequently made that, saving a fortnightly moistening of her lips with cold water, the child had neither ate nor drunk anything for the last twenty-three months. The whole region of the belly was tympanitic, and the muscular walls of this cavity were tense and drum-like—a condition not infrequently concomitant of a well-known class of nervous disorders. The child's intellectual faculties and special senses were perfectly healthy. Before her illness she was very much devoted to religious reading. This devotion has lately considerably increased. She is a member of the Church of England, and has been confirmed.

She did not, on solicitation, squeeze my hand with either of hers. The mother stated that her daughter could not possibly grasp or hold anything in her hands. She moved the left hand and arm with

less facility than the right, which she not seldom put up to the side of her head with a rather studied effect. The whole left side of the body appeared to my touch (I was unprovided with a thermometer) of lesser temperature, and was said to be weaker, than the right.

I made great efforts to examine her back, but was assured that this could be only permitted to any one actually present when the child was being moved, which was occasionally done for the purpose of changing the bed. This operation invariably brought on a fit, and was, consequently, performed as rapidly as possible, so that the parents had actually neither seen or washed the child's back for nearly two years. I was allowed to see the feet, and noticed that there were no pressure marks whatever about the ankles or heels. The feather-bed on which she was lying was thin and poor, with nothing between it and the sacking. Both feet were exceedingly pointed in direction, and the toes separated one from the other. On tickling the soles of the feet it was forcibly apparent to me that the girl was making a strong voluntary effort to prevent muscular movement. On touching her elsewhere about the body there was said, however, to be a very painful super-sensitiveness.

I was assured that the nails, which were level with the tops of the digits, had never been cut for nearly two years. Certain of the nails had most distinctly straight edges with angles, and some one or two had the well-known appearance of being picked, or torn; but the most important feature about them was their very perfectness of health. There was not on any one of the nails a single transverse groove to show that there had been during this protracted reclination in bed any arrest whatever of unguinal nutrition. This one fact demonstrates the improbability (nay, almost impossibility) of the child having lately suffered any lengthened physical disease. I could, indeed, detect no physical cause whatever to prevent this so-called bedridden Fasting-Girl from rising from her bed and using her locomotive powers. The power I believe to be there; the will I believe to be morbidly perverted.

She is said to have never had any serious illness till she was seized about two years ago with vomiting of blood. She then took to her bed, in which, saving when lifted out, she has ever since been. The incapability of swallowing began at the very onset; and the sight of, or even attempt to give, food, is said to now bring on one of her serious fits. The state of her tongue I could not see. It was asserted that she could not open her mouth. She conversed in Welsh with her parents, and could say a few English words.

There was stated to be no hereditary tendency to any form of insanity, epilepsy, or pulmonary disease. The child had had no convulsive attack during dentition. The fits at the beginning of her present illness were from description apparently epileptic. My observation of the girl induces me to believe that each convulsion was merely a fit of hysterical epilepsy.

The whole case is in fact one of simulative hysteria in a young girl having the propensity to deceive very strongly developed. Therewith may be probably associated the power or habit of prolonged

fasting. Both patient and mother admitted the occasional occurrence of the choking sensation called *globus hystericus*.

The only apparent difficulty about the case is the means of the obtainment of food. I am informed that the parents are very respectable people, and have no particular pecuniary need above the class to which they belong. The most suspicious evidence of their collusion is the circumstance of their making the patient a complete show-child, receiving money and presents from the hundreds of visitors to the farm.

From my observation and examination of the girl, from my acquaintance with analogous cases, and from my long experience as a public medical officer, of various forms of malingering, I am inclined to believe that Sarah Jacob in reality deceives her own parents. The construction of the bed and the surrounding old Welsh cupboards and drawers in the room, are all favourable to the concealment of food. I am told that when watchers were, with permission, placed in the house, they were actually debarred from touching the bed. The watching was thus reduced to a palpable absurdity, the very first element of success being denied it.

The cunning stratagems and deceptions sometimes practised by young girls afflicted with this form of hysteria are well known to medical men, though not so generally credited by non-professionals. I can, therefore, quite understand these poor simple parents being easily deceived by their own child, the more especially as in their ignorance they seem to implicitly believe that there is a miracle and something superhuman in the case.

During the last Parliamentary Session we heard a great deal of the influence of the ministers of religion, and of the power of the territorial aristocracy in Wales. Now, here is a common ground on which the eloquence of the former, and the persuasiveness of the latter, may very legitimately conjoin so as to beneficially affect a suffering fellow-creature. I in vain tried to convince the father that at this young age such a case was in all probability perfectly curable. He shook his head, stating "that none but the Great Doctor could cure his child."

Admitted into a London Hospital, or into the Carmarthenshire Infirmary, this poor child would, doubtless, be quickly relieved from a malady which in a year or so may not only become chronic, but also be the forerunner of some physical or some more severe form of mental disease. No sensible medical man, unless guaranteed perfect control and means, would undertake the treatment of such a case in the cottage in which the girl lives. Unless some sudden impression, such as the house on fire, is made upon the child's nervous system, she is (where she is) likely to remain some time in the state she now lies. The late Sir Benjamin Brodie had an aptitude for the detection of these cases. In his work on "Local Nervous Diseases" he details many analogous cases and the successful treatment thereof.

Being made an object of curiosity, sympathy, and profit is not only totally antagonistic to this girl's recovery, but also renders it extremely difficult for a medical man to determine how much of the symptoms is the result of a morbid perversion of will, and how much is the product of intentional deceit.

The silly father’s answer to my advice and offer was, “How can you London doctors make my child eat, without making a hole in her?”

Yours obediently,

ROBERT FOWLER, M.D.,

District Medical Officer of the East London Union.

Black Lion Hotel, Cardigan, Sept. 4.

This letter excited much feeling and discussion in the neighbourhood.⁷⁵ Appearing as it did in the slack period of the News-season, the letter evidently proved quite a godsend to Newspaper editors and reporters. In many of the evening impressions of the same day’s London papers, the letter was again inserted and was commented on. The next day, four or five of the morning papers followed suit; and before the week was out, the letter had been reproduced and noticed in almost every Provincial paper of England and Wales. Two slight errors of fact stated in our letter we will at once correct: the child, we believe, had *not* been “confirmed;” and the “thin and poor” bed on which we found her lying, was made of flock, and not of “feathers.”

The girl was seen in the month of September, 1869, by Mr. John Griffith, a gentleman well known in the Principality as an active agent in most of the popular movements of the time. His anonyme—*nom de plume*—(or “nickname,” as Mr. C. Coleridge, the Counsel, very irreverently called it), is “Gohebydd,” signifying, we are told, “Correspondent.” He, however, styles himself simply “a writer to the Welsh Press, particularly the *Baner* Newspaper.” This gentleman quite confirms Mr. Davies’ statement of the continued improvement of the girl’s appearance. Mr. Griffith states:—“I saw the girl; she appeared to me to be in the same condition as in April. I should say she looked better.”⁷⁶

Subsequently to our letter, repeated paragraphs about the case appeared in several newspapers. Whether from sheer disgust⁷⁷ at these paragraphs in the English papers, which in his professional capacity he was so constantly coming across, or whether from strictly patriotic motives on behalf of his fellow-countrymen and women, does not distinctly appear,—certain, however, it is, that Mr. John Griffith (Gohebydd) was mainly instrumental in initiating the last watching of Sarah Jacob. After his visit to the girl in September, 1869,

“he wrote two letters to the *Baner* Newspaper, and in those letters he appealed to his countrymen, for their own honour, to insist upon having the case fully investigated. . . . He put the question to the parents of the girl, whether they were ready and willing to accede to some proposal to have their little daughter watched, and both replied that they would not only be willing, but extremely glad to have the matter thoroughly investigated, and would be prepared to give all the assistance in their power to have the inquiry carried out to the satisfaction of all concerned.”⁷⁸

The parents, in fact, appeared exceedingly thankful to him for coming forward to vindicate their character. “I did ask the father and mother, at that second visit, if nurses might come from the Infirmary, or anywhere else. Both said:—‘We not only consent, but should be glad to have nurses!’ The father . . . told me again he should be glad to have nurses, or anything so as to clear their character; that they had always been a quiet and honest family, and never charged with a falsehood.”^{79 & 80}

“In his second letter to the *Baner*, he ventured to appeal to a learned and eminent countryman of his, Dr. Phillips, Assistant-Obstetric Physician of Guy's Hospital, London, if he would suggest some mode to have the case thoroughly tested”⁸¹ by skilled nurses.

Between these two visits to the Fasting-Girl, Gohebydd appears to have had an interview in London with Dr. Phillips, whom he questioned as to the possible obtainment of four hospital nurses.

Gohebydd afterwards had some correspondence with Dr. Phillips. This gentleman then appealed to the Superintendent; and subsequently to the Treasurer of the Hospital, who states:—

I was informed by one of the medical staff of the hospital that there was a strong desire felt by a number of persons to have the case of the Welsh Fasting-Girl—which had attracted much attention throughout the Principality, and was supposed by very many of the inhabitants to be really one of the maintenance of life without food—subjected to a careful examination. And he asked my permission to allow the Committee which was being formed for conducting the investigation, and with whom a medical practitioner in the neighbour-

hood was to be associated, to have the services of some of the hospital nurses in watching the case. To this application, I gave my assent.⁸²

The talked-of arrangement was noticed in the *British Medical Journal*, Nov. 6, 1869, in the following terms:—

THE WELSH FASTING-GIRL.

At the request of several medical and other gentlemen in Wales, it has been arranged to send three reliable nurses from Guy's Hospital to watch the girl who has lately been the cause of so much curiosity in the public mind, and thus, once and for all, expose the imposition in which she has been so long encouraged.

This paragraph was copied and commented on, in the Welsh papers, and excited a great deal of annoyance in the neighbourhood of Llethernoyadd-ucha, and caused some little delay in the proceedings.

Gohebydd, on the 23rd of November, 1869, "happening to be going through Pencader, again called on the Fasting-Girl; having received some suggestions from Dr. Phillips, he read them to the parents."⁸³ "The father objected to the girl changing the little cot she was sleeping on, and (said) that since the nurses would be English, he wished to have a Welsh girl in the room." These objections were subsequently satisfactorily arranged. Gohebydd also called upon the Vicar of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, and arranged with him to call a meeting of the neighbouring inhabitants to make the preliminary arrangements for this second watching of the girl.

Accordingly, a public meeting was held at the Eagle Inn, Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, on Tuesday, November 30th, 1869, attended by some thirty 'or forty' farmers, tradesmen, and others interested in the matter, 'the parlour and passage being both crowded.'⁸⁴ The Rev. E. Jones, the Vicar, who has taken a warm interest in the question for a long period, was unanimously voted to the chair; and amongst those present were Gohebydd, Mr. Jones, Solicitor, Llandyssil; Mr. Davies, Llandyssil; Mr. Jones, Blaenblodau; Rev. W. Thomas (Gwilym Marlais), Llandyssil; Mr. J. J. Evans, Cwmbychan; Mr. Evans, tanner, Aberayron; Mr. D. L. Jones, Derlwyn; Mr. Jones, Troedrhiwfer; Mr. Williams, Gwarallt; Mr. Davies, Dolman; Mr. Evans, Nantcoch; Mr. J. Evans, shopkeeper, Llanfihangel-ar-Arth; Mr. J. Daniel and Mr. Morris, Pencader; Mr. Thomas, Gwermaenydd, &c., &c.

The Chairman said he greatly rejoiced that this matter of "the Fasting Welsh girl" was at last in a fair way of being thoroughly investigated (hear, hear). This had been his earnest desire all along. He begged leave to remind them that this supposed long-fasting had been going on for sixteen months before it was published to the world.

During the whole of this time no strangers visited Llethernoyadd, and no money flowed into the pockets of the girl's parents (hear, hear). Under these circumstances, he always failed to conceive what motives could have influenced Sarah Jacob and her parents—supposing the alleged fasting to be an imposture (hear, hear). As they were all aware, he sent a short letter to the local papers, in which he expressed the opinion that there was strong evidence in favour of the truthfulness of the parents' statement (hear, hear). He therefore invited some members of the medical profession to make an investigation into the nature of the case. Not only was his invitation not accepted, but he was heartily ridiculed for his pains by some of the medical journals. Matters continued in this state until a committee was formed with a view of instituting a watch over the "Fasting-Girl" (hear, hear). They all knew the history of the watching to which he referred, and therefore it would be useless for him to enlarge upon it. All sorts of imaginary fault was found with the conduct of those watchers; but those who formed the committee, and undertook the management of that watching, felt convinced that it was fairly and honestly carried out (hear, hear). In a matter so strange, and apparently so contrary to the laws of nature, they did not, perhaps, consider the evidence supplied by the result of that watching as being sufficient to carry conviction to the minds of scientific men; but they did believe, and still believed, that it supplied them with strong *primâ facie* evidence in favour of the truthfulness of the statement which was so persistently made by the parents respecting their child. It proved satisfactorily to their minds that the case was one which required to be further investigated (hear, hear). It was for this further investigation they had been anxiously waiting (hear, hear). He begged to repeat that he greatly rejoiced that it was at last in a fair way of being thoroughly carried out. What they all wanted was to arrive at the truth in connexion with this case (hear, hear). "Gohebydd," a gentleman well known throughout Wales, had been kind enough to take the matter in hand, and he felt certain that they were all very thankful to him (cheers). He begged to call upon "Gohebydd" to explain to the meeting the nature of the proposed arrangements.

Gohebydd said he was anxious, at the outset, to state why he appeared before them. He was not a Carmarthenshire man, nor was he a "Cardi" (laughter). He was a Welshman jealous for the honour of his native country, for the good name of his countrymen and his countrywomen (hear, hear). He visited Llethernoyadd twice; was there in April last, and a second time in September. He read most of the letters and leaders written about the now celebrated Sarah Jacob, and he acknowledged that he felt now sick and tired of seeing constantly staring him in the face, go where he would, paragraphs headed the "Fasting-Girl of Wales," or the "So-called Welsh Fasting-Girl;" this week a letter from a London Doctor, next from a Welsh Bard,—from somewhere, giving their "opinion" upon the case of this girl. Now, the matter appeared to him to be not a question of "opinion," but a matter, and a most simple matter, of fact (hear, hear). Was the girl fed, or was she not? that was all they had to find out. "To be or not to be" fed, that was the question (laughter). How long a

human being could live without food, of course, was a matter that they had nothing to do with. That was a question for men of science, and not for the public to discuss. They had it on the authority of so great a writer as Sir William Hamilton that "There is no good ground for inferring a certain fact to be impossible merely from our inability to conceive its possibility" (hear, hear). What his individual opinion, or the individual opinion of those present were, did not amount to much. . . . He would read the following letter received from Dr. Phillips:—

20, Finsbury-square, E.C., Nov. 27th.

MY DEAR GOHEBYDD,—I am glad to understand that the proposed arrangements for watching "the Welsh Fasting-Girl" are likely to be carried into action, and that they are to be brought before the notice of a local committee in Carmarthenshire. I enclose some suggestions with reference to the watching for the consideration of yourself and the committee.

Some of these I have already communicated to you, the others have been sent to me by Dr. Robert Fowler, of Bishopsgate-street, who had an opportunity of seeing Sarah Jacob last summer. It has been proposed that the bed with the girl upon it should be weighed from day to day, but I can well understand the difficulty of doing this in such a place. I should be pleased if you were down there when the nurses arrived. After you have made the necessary arrangements, which probably you will effect in great part at your meeting next week, nurses could soon be selected with the sanction of the Treasurer of Guy's Hospital. The matron of the Hospital has already pointed out three nurses to me, who seem very suitable, and also a fourth, who is superintendent of one of the wards, and who would have the supervision of the other three. One of the nurses is a trustworthy Welsh woman, and this will evidently be an advantage, as the girl speaks so little English.

I am sorry to understand that the paragraph in the *British Medical Journal* has caused so much annoyance in the neighbourhood; indeed, it is to be regretted that it was inserted so prematurely in such a form. I do not know who is responsible for it, but however much my opinion about the case may differ from yours, or from that of others living near Sarah Jacob, the simple instruction to the nurses will be that their duty is to watch the girl and ascertain whether she is fed.

A silly extract from a Welsh newspaper has been sent me by a gentleman in Wales, and after the appearance of this I think it should be made known that this investigation, if brought about, will have been effected by your instrumentality. I took up the matter entirely at your suggestion. Some seem to think that the letters you have written about the girl were intended simply as a sort of defence to her, whereas your desire to inquire into the subject has been abundantly proved by the trouble you have already taken to that end.

I shall be glad to hear of the proceedings of the meeting.

I am yours very truly,

J. J. PHILLIPS.

P.S.—In reference to suggestion eight (*vide post*) I cannot see that there would be any objection for the committee to appoint, should they

consider it desirable, some trustworthy woman to sit with the nurses at first.

The following are the suggestions referred to:—

1. It would be advisable before taking any steps in the matter to obtain a written legal guarantee from the father of Sarah Jacob, sanctioning the necessary proceedings.
2. That the duty of the nurses shall be to watch Sarah Jacob, with a view to ascertain whether she partakes of any kind of food, and at the end of a fortnight to report upon the case before the local committee, in Carmarthenshire, and, if required, at Guy's Hospital.
3. That two nurses shall be constantly awake and on the watch in the girl's room night and day.
4. It would be advisable for the nearest medical practitioner to watch the progress of the case, and it will be absolutely necessary for him to be *prepared against any serious symptoms of exhaustion supervening on the strict enforcement of the watching, and to act according to his judgment.*
5. That the room in which the girl sleeps shall be bared of all unnecessary furniture, and all possible places in the room for the concealment of food shall be closed and kept under the continued scrutiny of the watchers.
6. That, if considered desirable by the local medical practitioner or by the nurses, the bedstead on which the girl now lies shall be replaced by a simple iron one.
7. That the bed on which the parents now sleep in Sarah Jacob's room shall be given up absolutely to the nurses.
8. That the parents be not allowed to sleep in the same room as the girl; that if they cannot at all times be prevented from approaching her they should be previously searched (their pockets and other recesses of clothing and also the interior of their mouths), and that no wetted towels or any such articles be allowed to be used about the girl by the parents or any other person save the nurses; that the children of the family, and in fact every other person whatever (except the nurses) have similar restraints put upon them.
9. That the nurses have the sole management of preparing the room, bed, and patient, prior to the commencement of the watching.
10. That, as it is asserted the action of the bowels and bladder is entirely suspended, special attention must be directed to these organs.

The Rev. W. Thomas (Gwilym Marlais) said he had been asked to move the first resolution. The "Welsh Fasting-Girl" had created a good deal of talk, and it was very satisfactory to find that so many persons were found ready to give every assistance required to bring the question to a conclusion by a thorough test (hear, hear). Gohebydd had read the suggestions which had been received from London, and he believed they would agree with him in saying that those suggestions had been carefully and ably drawn up. They were reasonable, searching, and proposed to give as little trouble to the parents of Sarah Jacob as possible. The inquiry should be thorough to produce any satisfactory result, and he therefore proposed that the suggestions made by Dr. Phillips, to insure a satisfactory result from the visit of the nurses, be adopted.

This was seconded by Mr. Jones, Blaenblodau.

Mr. Evan Jacob, the father of the little girl, said he was anxious that there should be silence in the room where the watchers were to sit, after nine o'clock at night, so that his daughter should not be

disturbed and prevented from sleeping. He also said "that he hoped two or three young girls, of Sarah's acquaintance, might sit up with the nurses, alternately, at night. . . . He said he would be satisfied if they might sit up in the kitchen with the parlour door open. Two were relations, and the other a neighbour."⁸⁴ He hoped this inquiry would give satisfaction, and put an end to the remarks that had been thrown in his teeth, to the effect that he was cheating the public (hear, hear).

Mrs. Jacob said that, notwithstanding all that had been said in the papers, her character was as good as that of any person from Llanfihangel-ar-Arth to London (cheers).

Gohebydd said he should never have troubled himself to come so far, if he had not been anxious to find out the simple truth. He was here to-night to advocate a thorough investigation of the matter, instead of listening to the opinion of one now, and then another.

The resolution was then put to the meeting, and carried unanimously.

Mr. Jones, Solicitor, Llandyssil, proposed that the following gentlemen be appointed to receive the report of the nurses—namely, Rev. E. Jones (the Vicar), Mr. Jones, Blaenblodau; Mr. Morris, Pencader; Mr. Jones, Troedrhwiwer; Mr. Davies, Surgeon, Llandyssil; Mr. Jones, Solicitor, Llandyssil; Mr. D. Thomas, Cwermaenydd; Rev. W. Thomas, Llandyssil; Mr. D. Thomas, Dolman; Mr. D. L. Jones, Derlwyn; Mr. J. J. Evans, Cwmbychan; Mr. E. Evans, Pantcoch; Mr. J. Evans, Shopkeeper; Mr. J. Daniel, Pencader; and Mr. Thomas Williams, Gwarallt; and that the following five form a committee of arrangement to receive the nurses:—Mr. Morris, Pencader; Mr. Jones, Troedrhwiwer; Mr. Jones, Blaenblodau; Rev. E. Jones, Vicar; and Mr. J. Daniel, Pencader.⁸⁵

This was seconded by Mr. Jones, Troedrhwiwer, and carried unanimously.

Mr. D. Evans, Aberayron, said he was very glad of this opportunity to be here, for although not a resident in the neighbourhood, he was no stranger to the place (hear, hear). That a human being should exist for two and a half years without food was something new on earth, and ought to be fully inquired into (hear, hear). Much had been said and written upon the question, and some were of opinion that the whole thing was a cheat. For himself, he might say that he had been to-day to see the little girl for the first time, and certainly, if she lived without the aid of food, as was stated, it was the most wonderful circumstance he had ever known (hear, hear). But they were there to-night to devise means for getting at the truth of the case, if possible, by a thorough investigation, and he therefore moved that the following gentlemen be requested to act as a medical committee to watch over the proceedings, and for consultation in case the nurses required their assistance; namely—Dr. Lewis, Mr. J. Rowlands, and Mr. J. Hughes, Surgeons, all of Carmarthen; and Dr. Corsellis, and Mr. J. Jones, and Mr. H. H. Davies, Surgeons, Llandyssil.

This was seconded by Mr. D. L. Jones, Derlwyn, and carried unanimously.

Mr. Davies, Surgeon, proposed that Dr. Lewis, Carmarthen, be requested to act as treasurer to receive subscriptions to defray the

expenses of the nurses; and that Mr. John Jones, Troedrhiwfer, be requested to act as secretary.

This was seconded by Mr. Davies, Dolman, and agreed to.

Mr. Davies, Surgeon, proposed that the following young women be appointed to assist the nurses—namely, Miss Evans, Pencader; Miss Jones, Talardd; and Miss Williams, Gwarallt.

This was seconded by Mr. J. J. Jones, Llandyssil, and agreed to.

Gohebydd said that with regard to the expenses, he would volunteer to collect sufficient money to pay the carriage of the nurses to and fro—which would be by far the greatest expense—provided the committee would undertake to get sufficient to pay for their board and lodging during the watching (cheers). He calculated that the expenses altogether would be about 30*l.*, and he undertook himself to collect 20*l.* at least (cheers).

A subscription list was opened at once, and between 3*l.* and 4*l.* collected in the room.

The Rev. W. Thomas consented to act as local secretary, and Mr. Jones, Troedrhiwfer, as local treasurer.

The Chairman proposed a vote of thanks to Dr. Phillips and Gohebydd, for the great services they had rendered in this matter. Both of them were warm-hearted Welshmen, and it was to be sincerely hoped that the watching which was about to commence through their exertions would lead to the establishment of the truth (hear, hear). He proposed a very cordial vote of thanks to Dr. Phillips and Gohebydd.

This was heartily agreed to, and suitably acknowledged by Gohebydd; and the proceedings were brought to a close.

It was generally understood that the nurses would arrive from London on Saturday (Dec. 4th), and would commence watching on Monday; and it was suggested that the committee should meet in a few days to see how matters were getting on.

After the meeting had terminated the following agreement was drawn out, and signed by Evan Jacob, as a guarantee that the expense about to be incurred would not be rendered useless through the interference of the parents or friends of Sarah Jacob:—

“This agreement, made the 30th day of November, 1869, between Evan Jacob, of Llethernoyadd, in the parish of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, in the county of Carmarthen, on the one part, and the committee of management this day appointed for the purpose of investigating the alleged long fasting of Sarah, the daughter of the said Evan Jacob, on the other part, witnesseth that in consideration of the said committee undertaking the investigation aforesaid, he the said Evan Jacob agrees to afford every facility in his power for the said committee and all persons employed by them to prosecute their said investigation without hindrance, molestation, or interruption whatever for the period of fourteen days, and will during such period permit the said committee and all persons employed by them the free and uninterrupted use of the room occupied by the said Sarah Jacob. As witness the hand of the said Evan Jacob the day and year above mentioned.” [Here follow the signatures of Evan Jacob, and of Mr. Jones, Solicitor, Llandyssil, the witness.]

We have since been informed that Dr. Lewis, of Spilman Street,

in this town, has consented to act as treasurer. He will receive all contributions sent to him through the post or otherwise, and the same will be acknowledged publicly. Dr. Lewis, who has all along taken a warm interest in the matter, has also consented to meet the nurses on their arrival, and also to visit Llethernoyadd occasionally during the watching.⁸⁶

The proceedings of the meeting were carried on principally in Welsh. The "suggestions" and "agreement"⁸⁷ were explained in Welsh to the father. He could, however, both understand and slightly talk English.

Minutes were taken at this meeting by "the request of Gohebydd," but were unfortunately lost.⁸⁸

The Rev. Wm. Thomas, M.A., Unitarian Minister, Llandyssil, being appointed Local Secretary at this meeting on Nov. 30th, 1869, wrote on or about December 3rd, letters to Dr. Corsellis, Messrs. John Hughes, and James Rowlands, asking their assent to act on the "medical committee, for consultation in case the nurses should require their assistance." The letters thus concluded:—"It is suggested that one of the Medical Committee should visit Lletherneuadd, if possible, each day, in order to watch any change in the patient, and otherwise aid to render the present inquiry as effective as possible."⁸⁹

On the 4th and 5th days of December, the three medical gentlemen forwarded to the Secretary their replies, respectively sanctioning their assistance; however, "Mr. Hughes raised an objection to the three girls appointed to act with the nurses."⁸⁹

On the 7th of December, the Secretary wrote to Mr. Hughes as follows:—

Llandyssil, Dec. 7th, 1869.

DEAR SIR,—I have to acknowledge with thanks your letter bearing yesterday's date. The consideration you raised had before suggested itself to the Committee. Some felt an objection to having any third party appointed by the parents. But when the father appealed to the meeting to be allowed to appoint anybody from the neighbourhood to sit up in the night with the London nurses, as the latter were perfect strangers, nobody had the heart to say "Nay." He wished us, if we chose, to name any one, or he would name (only if he should name he would defray any expenses connected with his nominees). But I imagine your anxiety may have arisen from the way the matter is put in the *Welshman* report, where it is stated that these young girls are to assist the London nurses. Nothing of the sort. One of these girls is only permitted to sit up with the nurses, if the parents chose; but in all things, she is subject to the nurses, and bound to

obey their commands, and not to interfere in any way with them. We specially stipulated that these young girls were to conform to the nurses' regulations, so I apprehend there is not much to fear on this case. I should, I must say, prefer to have the coast quite clear for the nurses, but it seemed inhuman not to grant so trifling a request, as we then believed, and do still, that the nurses sent down will be competent, trustworthy persons, up to their work, and not to be tampered with in any way. I have, for my own part, every reason to believe that Doctors Phillips and Fowler will select the very best persons in their power. If the nurses be such persons as we expect them to be, I do not think there is anything to fear. I have to-day received a communication from Gohebydd, that they are not likely to leave London before to-morrow (Wednesday), if then, owing to some extra preparations of warm clothing for the cold weather, but they will be down one of the next days. I am much obliged to you for your letter. If the girls you referred to had anything to do with the actual watching I should, like yourself demur, but be assured they are mere ciphers thrown in to gratify a parent's wish.

I am, dear sir, very faithfully yours,
WILLIAM THOMAS.

J. Hughes, Esq.

The Secretary further stated:—"As regards Dr. Lewis of Carmarthen, I understood he would act, so I did not write to him on the 3rd of December." Mr. Davies "made no dissent to acting," either at the meeting or afterwards. "I called on a Mr. Jones of Llandyssil, who declined to act."⁹⁰

The Rev. William Thomas subsequently (at the Inquest) stated that the Committee was formed of gentlemen who took an interest in the case, "for the purpose of having it ascertained whether the deceased, whose case had excited great interest in the neighbourhood, lived without food, or the case was one of imposture."⁹¹ "The Medical Committee was appointed by the General Meeting," . . . as also was the Committee appointed "to receive the report of the Nurses after the watching was over." "None of the gentlemen on the Medical Committee were consulted before they were put down as members." "The doctors acted all gratuitously."⁹² John Daniel, the uncle, was placed on the Committee without his knowledge.⁹³ Mr. Davies, Surgeon, Llandyssil, was a member of the General Committee.⁹⁴ None of the Medical Committee had any written instructions given them.⁹⁵

The nurses selected for this important service came down to Wales

by the morning express on Wednesday (Dec. 8th). Their names are Elizabeth Clinch, Sister-Nurse—*i.e.* Superintendent of a Ward [since 1855]; Sarah Palmer, Sarah Attrick, and Anne Jones. They were objects of much interest even at Paddington to many who had become aware of the errand on which they were starting; and as they approached the scene of their labours, the interest which they excited grew greater and greater. At Carmarthen a large crowd had assembled in the station, in the hope of getting a peep at them. They were met at the Carmarthen Junction Station by Gohebydd, who introduced them to Dr. Lewis, who was waiting for them at Carmarthen Town Station, whence Gohebydd accompanied them to Pencader, in order to see them safe in their lodgings. At the railway station of Pencader also their arrival caused considerable excitement, and if they are pleased at becoming public characters and attracting popular attention their reception must have been most gratifying to them. The Queen herself, or the Princess of Wales, could hardly have been expected with greater anxiety, or more eager interest.⁹⁶

The Sister-Nurse and Anne Jones slept that night at Blaenblodau, a farm adjoining Llethernoyadd-ucha; and the other two nurses slept at Pencader village. Next morning they all four assembled at Blaenblodau, and were accompanied by Gohebydd to Evan Jacob's farm. The travelling expenses and wages of the nurses were undertaken to be paid by Gohebydd himself, whilst "the Local Committee paid for their lodgings."⁹⁷ Gohebydd, in fact "sent money to Dr. Phillips to pay the fares of the nurses down."^{97*}

Everything being now settled, it was arranged that the watching should commence on Thursday, December 9th, 1869, and the Local Committee were accordingly called together.

They met at about three o'clock in the house of the parents of the girl. Preparations were at once made for commencing the experiment, there being also present, in addition to the nurses, Dr. T. Lewis, Carmarthen; Dr. Corsellis, Llandyssil; Mr. Davies, of the same place; Mr. Rowlands, jun., and Dr. Hearder, Carmarthen; the uncle, Mr. John Daniel; Rev. E. Jones, Vicar of Llanfihangel; Rev. William Thomas, M.A., Llandyssil; and Mr. John Griffith (Gohebydd), &c. &c. &c.⁹⁸

The nurses arrived at Llethernoyadd-ucha about 2 P.M. The three young girls appointed by request of the father to assist the nurses, did not attend on the first, or any other day, of this last watch. Gohebydd asked "Sarah Jacob whether she wished the three young

girls to assist at night. She said 'No, she did not,' she was perfectly satisfied with the nurses."⁹⁹

Gohebydd puts this matter, however, somewhat differently. He states:—"On that day I had a conversation with the father and mother about the assistant watchers. I said there was an objection to the third watcher. . . . I heard there was an objection from one of the doctors about the additional nurse. The father and mother said they would consent to not having the third watcher if the little girl would consent. I heard the mother asking the little girl . . . 'Are you willing to be in charge of the nurses alone?' The little girl looked about at the nurses, and said, 'They look very kind women, and I don't think they will do me any harm.'"¹⁰⁰

Dr. Lewis gives the following account of the girl's condition and appearance on this occasion:—

On December 9th I visited Sarah Jacob a second time, in company with the members of the watching committee, and found that she had been kept in the same room and same bed as she occupied at my former visit. No change in the room was observed, except that a piece of flax-matting had been laid on the floor near her bed. The little girl to-day looked very cheerful and pleased. She had grown in her face. Her complexion was clear; her cheeks ruddy. Her countenance was very sweet. Her head was encircled with a garland of many colours, and a narrow streamer of yellow ribbon flowed down each side of her face. She was lying high up in the bed, well covered with a woollen counterpane and one blanket—which was all the bed-clothes she required—with a jar of hot water to her feet.

Since last report (April 9th), her parents stated that Sarah had not taken any food: only two or three drops of water had been applied to her lips when she had asked for it, at long intervals. They also said that she had not passed any urine since last March; neither had there been any motion from the bowels. She had remained in the same state as previously described, except that she did not pass so readily into the unconscious state as she used to do.¹⁰¹

Dr. Lewis first told the Nurses to search the room to see if they could find any food, or traces of food.

Sister Clinch states:—

Before the searching began, the girl was lying in her own bed, and she was removed by her father into another bed, that hers might be searched. The mother was also present. The child made no complaint of pain when being moved. She went into what they called a fit. I do not know what to call it. She closed her eyes, put

her hands over her eyes. I saw a quiver in the eyelids; her colour still remained the same, neither cheeks or lips blanched. . . .

Her mother was with me and helped me to undress her. She was nearly naked. Her father was in the room. I slipped up her whole dress so that I could see her whole body naked. She had a black cloth jacket on and a night dress, embroidered in front—over that she had a white woollen scarf, fastened with a small brooch. She had dark hair combed back, with a comb stuck in the hair, and at each end of the comb two straw-coloured ribbons, with violet flowers on leaves. Over the comb was a pink velvet bow on the top of her head, tied round at the back of the head; over that she had a bonnet of brown and white check silk, with a wreath of coloured flowers in it. She had a glove on her right hand, and not one on her left. She had no stockings on. When she was naked I noticed she appeared very healthy, plump, and fat. The left arm was not so fat as the right, and the left hand not so large as the right. I did not at that time know whether or not she was capable of moving her left arm. Her face had a nice colour. She was of rather dark complexion, her eyes dark and bright, but not unnaturally so.¹⁰²

“There were not the slightest signs of bed-sores—none appeared during the time of the watching. . . . It surprised me that she had not had bed-sores from the bed she was lying on.”¹⁰²

The Rev. Wm. Thomas entirely corroborates this condition of the girl on the first day of the watching:—

I had a good opportunity of seeing her whilst on her parents' bed: she was remarkably plump, and looked perfectly healthy; she was then actually naked; her left arm attracted no notice from me. The gloves were taken off. I had not seen her for nine months. I thought her better than last time; she was highly flushed whilst lying on the parents' bed. I did not notice when that flushing came over the face.¹⁰³

Mr. H. H. Davies observes:—“I then saw her naked for the first time, and she appeared healthy and muscular.”¹⁰⁴ Sister Clinch states:—“Her body appeared to be well nourished and in very much the same condition as other girls of her age.”¹⁰⁵

Whilst the girl was in her parents' bed, her whole body “was examined by the nurses, and particularly the head nurse, in the presence of the doctors.”

They examined her person to discover food or traces of it—i.e. to say, her hair and her arm-pits. The father and mother were both present standing by, and said nothing. The mother appeared very excitable and difficult to pacify, exclaiming “Oh, my child! my—my—dear little Sal! Don't do her any harm; don't hurt her!”—in Welsh.

The room was also thoroughly searched. No traces of food found. Her bed was examined whilst she was in her parents' bed.¹⁰⁶

“Then began the overhauling of the room. . . .”

The clothes cupboard was next looked into; its contents were taken out, and the drawers were emptied, after which both cupboard and drawers were locked, and the keys were handed to and kept by the superintendent nurse. Two other chests of drawers were next examined; one was removed from the room, the other was emptied and locked, and the key taken possession of, as before, by the superintendent nurse. The book-shelf, the table-drawers, and everything else in the room underwent a similar scrutiny—in short, as one of the spectators expressed it, “every rag in the room was examined.”¹⁰⁷

“While the room was searched, and the girl examined, a large number of the Committee were present, five being medical gentlemen. Some time before the house became filled with visitors.”¹⁰⁸

Dr. Lewis gave the following directions:—“He told the nurses in the presence of the father, that their work was to see if food was given to the girl. They were not to offer food, but to give food if she asked for it. This was said in the presence of the father, and he said it was just what he wanted to have done. He also spoke particularly about the care with which the bed should be made, and he said that he was willing that the nurses should make the bed, provided that for that first time the bed should be made in his presence and under his direction.”¹⁰⁹

The examination of the room being completed, Sister Clinch tells us:—

After we had searched her bed she was replaced on it by two nurses (Attrick and Palmer). I and Jones made the bed, and the father directed us how to make it. When she was removed off this bed I noticed that the tick of the bed was dirty from use, and there were stains from urine. I said, “Could we have a clean bed?” Doctor Lewis told me that the parents said she would not recover from her fit till she was put back to her own bed. No other answer was given me. We then proceeded to make her bed, and she was placed in it. This would be about a quarter to three.¹¹⁰

She shortly afterwards returned to consciousness.

The parents' bed was next examined with equal minuteness, the bed being turned out and taken out of the room (by the eldest girl and John Daniel the uncle), and stripped, curtains and all; and even part of the paper-hangings on the wall.¹¹¹

From the following evidence of Elizabeth Clinch, it would seem that Dr. Lewis's instructions were (per-

haps a second time) given to the nurses "after the girl was placed in her bed:"—

Dr. Lewis, in the presence of the medical men of whom I have spoken (not Hughes and Rowlands), gave me instructions. Dr. Lewis said: "You are to watch to see if she takes food or not." I said "What about giving her food?" He said, "I was not sent for for that, but to watch if she took food or not. *If she asks for food it is to be given to her*, but you must not mention food in her presence, for the parents say she will go into a fit if food is mentioned. Sometimes she takes a little water to moisten her lips; if she asks for it, *it is to be given her.*" Dr. Lewis then said to me: "You had better not debar all visitors from the room, as she had been accustomed to see so many that the child might feel it; that they were to pass round at my back, so that they might see the child's face, but the visitors are not to go near the bed." Mr. Davies' name was mentioned by somebody as *the medical man for whom I was to send, in case I saw any change in the girl*; "but there would be a medical man at 10 A.M. in attendance every day." Mr. Davies was said to live at Llandyssil. I do not remember any other instructions. I received instructions to permit the father and mother to come into the room, and have access to the child by shaking hands if they wished.¹¹²

The Vicar in his evidence furnished a very clear interpretation of the *intent* of these "instructions" given to the nurses:—

I did not explain the nurses' duty to them, nor was it done in my presence. It was *not* their duty to keep food from the child, or to prevent other people giving it her. So far as the Committee were concerned any one might have furnished (food) to the child. *There was a general understanding that the girl was to be fed if she wished it*, or if her parents wished it. I cannot say whether the father was aware of this. I don't recollect that the question of supplying food to the girl was discussed in the Committee. There was no plan set on foot to keep food from her. The object of the watching was to see if she took food, and *not to prevent her having it*. That was the distinct object of our Committee, which is embodied in the regulations.¹¹³

Sister Clinch further says:—"No instructions were read to me from writing. The so-called instructions I received were written by Mr. Griffith, and shown to Dr. Lewis, and approved by him, and given to me by one or the other of them." Sister Clinch also expressly states:¹¹⁴—"I had no instructions or orders to search the father or mother, or anybody else. I never kept them away, they might have got into her bed," &c. &c. Anne Jones in corroboration observes:¹¹⁵—"There was no opposition of access by the parents into the room during the time I was watching." Sarah Attrick also says:¹¹⁶—"The parents could go and give her anything they liked

We had no instructions to prevent the parents doing so at any time, whether we were near the bed or not. *If the parents had brought any food or anything else for the girl, we should merely have looked on and seen what they did with it.*"

After the aforesaid search and examination were completed, the following official report¹¹⁷ was made and signed:—

Thursday, Dec. 9th, 1869, Llethernoyadd.—Four nurses arrived at 2 P.M. The whole of the room in which Sarah Jacob was lying was carefully examined; all the furniture carefully looked into; all contents of drawers removed; the bed on which the girl was lying was carefully examined, and each covering singly; the girl's body, clothes, and her hair were fully examined. Nothing of the nature of food ('saving an old shrivelled-up turnip under the parents' bedstead') was found anywhere.

THOMAS LEWIS, M.D., M.R.C.P.
 C. C. CORSELLIS, Ext. L.R.C.P., F.L.S.
 HENRY H. DAVIES, M.R.C.S., &c.
 GEORGE J. HEARDER, M.D.
 D. G. ROWLANDS, M.R.C.S., L.S.A.
 EVAN JONES, B.D., Vicar.
 WILLIAM THOMAS, M.A., Llandyssil.
 JOHN GRIFFITH (Gohebydd).
 ELIZABETH CLINCH, Sister-Nurse at Guy's.
 SARAH PALMER, }
 SARAH ATTRICK, } Nurses at Guy's.
 ANNE JONES, }

Before the watching actually commenced, the Sister-Nurse very properly told Dr. Lewis and Mr. H. H. Davies, Surgeon, that she would not take the responsibility on herself, "without the medical men attending every day. Dr. Lewis said there would be medical men attending every day, and he made out the list of gentlemen and the days of visiting."¹¹⁸ Unfortunately this daily medical attendance was not at first strictly carried out, notwithstanding that, according to the evidence of the Rev. Wm. Thomas, one of the especial functions of the General Committee of the eighteen persons was:—"also to see that the Medical Committee acted, that no danger might arise to the girl from the continued watching."¹¹⁹ Furthermore, no settled plan, no definite arrangements appear to have been distinctly made respecting this all-important daily medical visitation—all-important, inasmuch as the so-called Fasting-Girl was for a stated

length of time to be rigidly surrounded by an impassable cordon of shrewd and skilled detectives. Two days after the watching had actually commenced, Mr. John Hughes, Surgeon, Carmarthen, alluding to this daily medical visitation, writes to the Local Secretary:—
 “Has any arrangement been made for it? I have heard of none.”¹²⁰

In writing to Mr. James Rowlands, on December 6th, the Local Secretary had distinctly stated:—“The particular arrangements to be followed you shall hear of shortly.”¹²¹ The Rev. Wm. Thomas, however, subsequently¹²² admitted that “no particulars of arrangements were communicated by him. . . . All the medical arrangements were left to Dr. Lewis.” No medical man appears ever to have visited the girl during the night-watches—viz., from 10 P.M. to 6 A.M.

Everything was now ready for the commencement of the watching, and the following certificate¹²³ of the girl's condition was formally made:—

Cheerful; face flushed; eyes brilliant; pulse regular, averaging 86 per minute; temperature in the mouth, 98 deg., after two minutes' rest. She has a warm-water bottle at her feet. She seems quite well, and says she has no pain anywhere if not touched.

(Signed) HENRY H. DAVIES, M.R.C.S.
 THOMAS LEWIS, M.D.

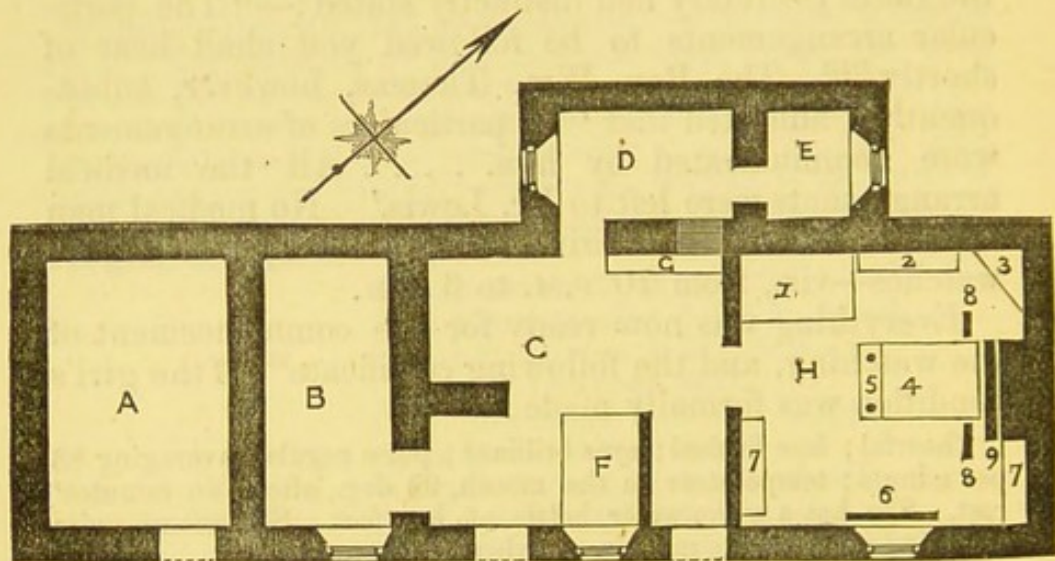
The girl indeed seemed to be in unusually high spirits.¹²⁴ “. . . . She did not appear at all nervous, but perfectly self-possessed.”¹²⁵ About 4 P.M., December 9th, 1869, “the room was cleared of people,” and Elizabeth Clinch (Sister-Nurse), and Anne Jones, the one nurse who spoke the Welsh language and acted as interpreter, then commenced their task. The four nurses had arranged that they would watch in pairs—each pair alternately taking an eight hours' watch, as follows:—from 2 P.M. to 10 P.M., and from 10 P.M. to 6 A.M., and from 6 A.M. to 2 P.M. This arrangement was continued throughout: one nurse sitting on each side of the child's bed, neither leaving the room during their respective watches. The Sister-Nurse and Anne Jones watched together, as also did Sarah Attrick and Sarah Palmer.

“The girl's bedroom door was always open. There was a passage between it and the kitchen. The kitchen

door was also open. From the kitchen they could see everything the nurses did."¹²⁶

The annexed ground plan (drawn by Mr. G. B. Osborne) represents the arrangements of this famed farm-house, together with the positions of the beds and furniture in the girl's bedroom, and the situation of the nurses' chairs during the eight days' watching.

LLETHERNOYADD-UCHA, CARMARTHENSHIRE.



Ground plan. (Scale $\frac{1}{16}$ th of an inch to the foot.)

A, Cow-house; B, Servant's Bed-room; C, Kitchen; D, Back-kitchen; E, Dairy; F, Table; G, Dresser; H, Parents' and Sarah Jacob's Bed-room.

1, Parents' Bedstead; 2, Wardrobe; 3, Corner Cupboard; 4, The Fasting-Girl's Bedstead; 5, Head of Bedstead, on which two lighted candles were placed in the evening and night-time of the last watch; 6, Table; 7, 7, Linen-presses; 8, 8, The two chairs on which the Nurses respectively sat and watched; 9, Book-shelves.

The Sister-Nurse Elizabeth Clinch tells us:—

I did not hear her voice the first day until the gentlemen were gone. She was more flushed for a time after the gentlemen were gone than whilst they were present. The flushed appearance lasted about an hour. When her natural colour returned, I spoke to her, and she answered me in a natural tone, neither loud nor low; she told me that had she known what nice ladies we were, she should have liked to have had us before. I asked her how long she had been ill, she said "two years and six months, but only two years and two months like this." She spoke English pretty well, and read it pretty well, until the last few days of watching. I asked her if she was in any pain; she said "No." *I told her if she wanted anything to ask me for it, and she should have it directly.*¹²⁷

During the whole eight days of the watch, Elizabeth Clinch very carefully recorded in her "Diary," "at the bedside, from time to time whilst she was watching," the condition of the girl, as well as other daily and important details. At the several public examinations of the Sister-Nurse this Diary was invariably admitted as evidence. From it, and from the oral and written evidence taken before the Watching-Committee,¹²⁸ the Coroner, the Magistrates, and the Judge, we will endeavour to frame a continuous record of the daily events at Llethernoy-add-ucha from December 9th to December 17th, 1869, and of the progressive condition and symptoms of Sarah Jacob, during the last eight days of her strange life.

To premise and epitomise:—There had been no fire in the girl's room for two years or so, consequently the air of the room was very damp; the books were quite wet, and some writing paper belonging to the Sister-Nurse became quite damp, and the writing in her Diary has actually "run" from the damp. During the entire watch, jars of hot water—changed three times a day—were constantly kept at the girl's feet. The nurses also were necessitated to have hot flannels and hot bricks continually to keep their own feet warm, as the room was so bitterly cold and damp. It was also badly ventilated; the window was opened once only, the last night during the watching.

During the whole of the watch the parents were frequently, and the sisters occasionally, in and out of the girl's room. The father was always in the room when the bed was made, "and showed that he was anxious the bed should be made comfortable." Every night the books were cleared away from the bed, "and she had an extra quilt put on at night always."¹²⁹ The father came into the room oftener than the mother, who, on the other hand, as likewise the sisters, often came and looked in at the window. The father, except at last, never went near the girl. Whenever he spoke to the girl it was sometimes in English, sometimes in Welsh; the mother always spoke to her daughter in Welsh. During the watching the parents appeared to be as kind to the girl as ordinary parents would be to their children.

The nurses were not allowed to partake of any food in the girl's presence.

The first afternoon Mrs. Jones, of Blaenblodau, sent some bread and butter, and tea in a basket for us. I (Elizabeth Clinch) saw the mother go towards the girl. Jones, the nurse, and Mrs. Jones, of Blaenblodau, said she (the mother) would not allow any food in the room, as Sarah would faint. I consequently had nothing from 2 P.M., until I went back to my lodgings at 10 P.M.¹³⁰

Consequently, the nurses had themselves either to go without food for eight hours, or to eat what they brought in their basket "at the door, out of sight of the girl." *It does not appear in evidence* that the parents ever attempted to bribe the nurses with anything to drink, or offered them any warm apparel against the cold. Nor did any one testify that any tricks or subterfuges were employed by the parents to distract the attention or obtain the temporary absence of the nurses from their post.

The girl was lying in bed during the whole time of the watch, and was never seen to attempt to get out of bed. The nurse, Anne Jones, stated that:—"she thought that the girl was strong enough to get out of bed if she liked." It is presumed that this opinion referred to the first day or so of the watching.¹³¹ The Vicar expressed before the Magistrates¹³² a similar opinion of the girl's locomotive power during his frequent visitations. Every morning her face and hands were washed with soap and a little warm water, and her hair combed. "Her father said he did not wish her neck to be washed, because she did not like it." It was therefore not done. During the whole of the watching she was frequently asked whether she was in any pain, and she invariably said "No." "Once she complained of a little headache;"¹³³ once only she grated her teeth in her sleep.¹³⁴ She was also frequently asked if she wanted anything, and told that if so it should be given to her. She almost always said "No:" sometimes she would point to a book. During the whole eight days of the watch it is a positive certainty that she had not any food or drink, nor (to the knowledge of the nurses) was any offered her, except the water offered her on the Thursday evening before her death, by her uncle, John Daniel, and the moistening of her lips by her aunt just before death. The nurses are positive on this point, as "her

mouth was always uncovered, so that she could not have taken anything without their seeing it." Two candles were always kept alight in the night. Neither did the girl ever ask for solid or liquid food of any description. She was never refused anything that was asked for by her, or she expressed a wish for. Neither had she, during any time of the watching, any return whatever of her so-called "fits." She used to amuse herself by reading aloud both Welsh and English, and being read to by the Sister-Nurse. Between the commencement of the watching and the following Sunday, many persons visited the little "Fasting-Girl." After the body of visitors left on the Thursday afternoon, Sister Clinch did not notice any difference in the girl's appearance.¹³⁵

Sister Clinch had not much conversation during the first evening with Sarah Jacob, for fear of exciting her too much. The girl then commenced reading. After it became dark two lights were placed "one on each side of her bed, throwing light upon her reading. She went to sleep at five minutes past eight P.M., and woke again at twenty-five minutes past eight. She had no fit up to the time of her going to sleep."

During the twenty minutes she was asleep she lay on her back, her left arm was close to her side under the clothes; the right arm outside. When she awoke she opened her eyes, but did not speak. She slept again at five minutes past nine. Her father had been several times in the room (in and out) whilst she was awake. The mother came in to wish her good night. The father told her he should not see her the first thing in the morning, as he was going out. She said something in Welsh, which was not interpreted to me. Neither the father nor the mother went near enough to the bed to touch her.¹³⁶

Owing to her father coming in and out, her sleep at 9.5 only lasted about ten minutes, and she was rather restless.¹³⁷

. . . . Mr. Griffith came in also, and several of the neighbours, to wish her good night. During that first watch no food or drink was offered to the child, nor did she ask for any. I left at 10 P.M., leaving her sleeping on her back,¹³⁸ very comfortable.¹³⁹

At 10 P.M., when Sarah Attrick and Sarah Palmer took their first turn on watch, Sarah Jacob was asleep. This "first night she moved her two legs in her sleep."¹⁴⁰

Friday, Dec. 10th, 1869:—"She slept until 2 A.M., and

then was only awake for five minutes; she then slept until 6 A.M.," appearing "plump and well-looking."¹⁴⁰ During the whole of Friday no medical man came to visit the girl. The Sister-Nurse reported "no change," when she and Anne Jones resumed duty at 6 A.M. Her colour was the same, not flushed. "At half-past seven she began to read in a loud voice ('a strong voice, louder than her natural voice,') until 8 o'clock. Still read at intervals during the morning, 'sometimes in Welsh, sometimes in English,' and I read to her till 2 P.M." During all this time she appeared cheerful, happy, and well, and continued her reading aloud during the afternoon. She "went to sleep at a quarter past seven until a quarter past eleven;" she slept after then till 2 A.M.

Saturday, Dec. 11th.—This sleep was a restless one, "drawing up both her legs, and turning upon her left side in her sleep." Sister Clinch did "not notice any movement in her left arm." "I observed on Friday night, that the girl drew her legs up so as to elevate her knees, and she went to sleep in that posture. During this period she kept her arms quiet, one under the clothes, and the other outside; the left hand was under the clothes."¹⁴¹ When at 2 A.M. she awoke, "she said nothing, but went to sleep again shortly afterwards, and slept until half-past five A.M." The Sister-Nurse then states:—

On her awaking, Anne Jones and I removed her from her bed to a chair-bedstead in the same room. We placed her on her back. I found her night-dress stained with urine; it was very wet. There were three other marks, as if she had passed a motion, which had left a stain. These stains were fresh, and all the nurses saw them. I did not think she was looking well; there was a change—her eyes were rather sunk, and her nose rather pinched. That watch I did not observe anything about her voice.¹⁴²

" Whilst I was dressing her she thanked me, and said I did not hurt her. ('She did not faint.') The father assisted at changing the bed, but Sister Clinch, not wishing to irritate the girl, said nothing to her of the occurrence (of the stains).¹⁴³ I changed her night-dress and blanket, and placed her back in her bed before I left," at 7 A.M. She was then reading, and looking very cheerful and happy. Nevertheless, Mrs. Clinch dates from this early day the, to her, perceptible com-

mencement of the girl's bad symptoms:—"She was weaker every day from Saturday." During this Friday night, or Saturday early morning, it was subsequently alleged in print¹⁴⁴ that one of the nurses "who sat alone, feigned to sleep, and soon a female inmate entered the room, and was approaching Sarah Jacob's bed, when a movement on the part of the nurse arrested her steps, and the intruder beat a hasty retreat." In her examination before the Watching Committee¹⁴⁵ Sister Clinch completely destroyed this little bit of romance; and observed that throughout the whole inquiry "the parents were very honest and obliging, and did their best to make it perfect." As a matter-of-fact, one early morning (about 2 A.M.) two of the nurses observed the youngest child almost naked, standing half asleep against the open door leading from Sarah's bedroom to the passage. It was certainly early rising for a little boy two years old! Between 7 A.M. and 2 P.M. of Saturday, Dec. 11th, Sarah Jacob continued cheerful, and read and talked to nurses Attrick and Palmer, who were then on watch. Attrick, however remarked, that on this morning the girl "was a little flushed."

About—or a little before—2 P.M., when the watchers were being changed, a medical man, Mr. Daniel G. Rowlands (son of Mr. James Rowlands, one of the Medical Committee) came to visit the girl. He wrote in Sister Clinch's Diary the following report, which he signed:—

"I visited this day at 3 P.M., when the Sister and two nurses, who had been watching, showed me Sarah Jacob's night-dress, which was stained by a slight evacuation of fæces,¹⁴⁶ and also thoroughly wet from a considerable amount of urine, which had also been passed by her; pulse 100. Face at first pallid, but afterwards became very flushed."

The facts observed by this gentleman appear to have been misinterpreted by the Local Press, and to have been referred to in the following somewhat exaggerated form:—

"Mr. Rowlands found that the little girl showed signs of great prostration, as compared with her condition on Thursday; that the pulsation was above 100; and that water and excrement had passed from her during the

preceding night."¹⁴⁷ Certain of the Medical Committee were much chagrined at this alleged "imprudence" of Mr. Daniel Rowlands, and at the spiteful tone of the paragraphs in both the *Leader* and *Western Mail* thereon.¹⁴⁸ The Watching-Committee also "were displeased with young Mr. Rowlands for divulging that little matter of discharge so¹⁴⁹ prematurely and inconsistently, as it seemed" to them.

Measures were taken to prevent a repetition of a visit to Llethernoyadd from "young Mr. Rowlands." Evan Jacob, on the following Tuesday, spoke in rather strong terms¹⁵⁰ to his father, Mr. James Rowlands, who, in company with Mr. Hughes, on that day visited the girl; and the Editors of the recalcitrant papers were desired "not to admit any communications of an irritating nature until the watching was over."¹⁵¹

The following letter appeared in print:—

SARAH JACOB AND HER ASPERSERS.

To the Editor of the "Cambria Daily Leader."

SIR,—Since it has been decided to submit this most perplexing case of "The Welsh Fasting-Girl" at Llethernoyadd to the decision of four reliable nurses from a London Hospital, and since the little girl, by the full consent of her parents, has placed herself, both night and day, wholly and entirely in the charge of those nurses, I appeal to you, Mr. Editor, would it not be fairer, while the case is pending, *to wait patiently* for the verdict of the jury?

If, as is alleged in your issue of to-day, that a medical gentleman—a member of the committee—visited the girl on Saturday last, and discovered a "mare's nest," would it not be more regular, more business-like, more courteous and honourable towards his colleagues, before rushing into print, that that gentleman should take means first to acquaint the Committee of such "discovery?"

The case is submitted, not to the decision of any number of doctors, preachers, or lawyers, but to the decision of four reliable, experienced, and trustworthy nurses, chosen specially for that purpose, from a leading London hospital. These persons know their duty—the superintendent nurse being a lady of some eighteen or twenty years' experience. I would therefore, Mr. Editor, respectfully submit to all whom it may concern—to doctors, lawyers, preachers, poets, and correspondents—that while the case is pending, while the "jury" is sitting in judgment, that the word should go forth—"Hands off, and meddle not!"

GOHEBYDD.

Swansea, December 13th, 1869.¹⁵²

On cross-examination before the Magistrates upon this

very letter, Mr. John Griffith (Gohebydd) said:—"I wrote something to the *Daily Leader*, but I cannot say that I wrote the whole of what appears in print." "I cannot say that I wrote that all, as it appears there, and if I did, I did not mean it. 'The case is submitted' down to 'meddle not'—I cannot speak exactly to those words."¹⁵³

When Sister Clinch resumed duty at 2 P.M. on Saturday, December 11th, "she found the girl much the same, but not looking quite so well as in the morning."¹⁵⁴ "The first change I observed in the girl was on Saturday, the 11th instant, when I took my turn of watching at two o'clock in the afternoon. I observed a change in the voice: it was weaker when she was reading aloud."¹⁵⁵ She went to sleep at 7.30 P.M., and slept from time to time, having a quiet night, until about 5 A.M. of Sunday, December 12th, when she awoke, and "then went to sleep again until a quarter past six." The girl "looked (very) cheerful this morning," "but her face was flushed. She asked for her book and read two chapters in Welsh and English aloud." Sister Clinch read to her during the morning, and she said this did not tire her. "During the morning her face was flushed and her eyes bright—unusually so."

During Sunday afternoon she was visited by Mr. H. H. Davies, Surgeon, Llandyssil, who made the following entry in Sister Clinch's Diary:—"State of Sarah Jacob this day at four o'clock, P.M.: Not so cheerful as when I last saw her before, face not flushed, but temperature of the mouth 98 after ten minutes' rest; pulse regular, averaging 112 per minute. She has not asked for anything, neither could she possibly have had anything without our knowledge. She has no pain whatever unless she is touched, but occasionally a little headache."

Mr. Davies did not consider that the strength of the pulse in the least indicated the supervention of physical prostration; and notwithstanding the change in the rate of the pulse since the previous Thursday, he did not on this Sunday apprehend any danger. "When Mr. Davies asked the girl questions she answered with a pleasant smile."¹⁵⁶

Mr. Davies does not appear to have investigated

further. In fact "None, of the medical men were allowed to examine the portion of her person under the clothes; her body was kept covered up to the chin so as not to admit of anybody seeing it, her arms were also covered with sleeves, and the Doctors were not allowed to strip them."¹⁵⁷ None of the medical men appear either to have ever seen the girl's tongue. "The father was always present when a medical man was present." At such times he persisted in being in the room. Well might the Coroner ask, when informed of this by the Sister-Nurse:—"The doctors submitted to this very tamely—did they?"¹⁵⁸

The girl went to sleep at half-past seven P.M., and when the Sister-Nurse resumed her watch at 10 P.M., she found Sarah Jacob still asleep.

She slept till half past five A.M. She turned in her bed several times, but was not restless; she turned on her left side more frequently than on her right. She drew up both legs several times during the night. I did not see her move her left arm. When she awoke at half-past five on Monday morning, she appeared cheerful until I moved the bed-clothes, when she appeared confused. I found she had passed a great quantity of urine, and we had to get her out of bed. We moved her to a little bed, and I changed her night-dress; the night-dress and bed were wet.¹⁵⁹

The father knew she had wetted the bed,¹⁶⁰ but did not wish it mentioned to the girl, "or she would go into a fit."¹⁶¹ The Sister-Nurse considered that the girl must have passed in the bed a little more than a pint of urine. "She did not faint. We changed her night-dress, and I was for some time combing her hair. She appeared pleased and cheerful, and I left her reading aloud."

She continued cheerful and amused herself more or less with reading, during the morning of Monday, December 13th, till about 2 P.M., when, although she still appeared cheerful and looked much the same, Sister Clinch observes:—"I did not think her so well; she appeared weaker." At the trial Sister Clinch was asked by Mr. Coleridge, "You say—not quite so well: will you describe what you observed?" She answered:—"Her eyes were sunk, and her cheeks rather flushed."¹⁶² Anne Jones for the first time noticed "she was getting worse" on this day. No medical man saw the child at any time on Monday; and unfortunately the Sister-Nurse "did not

think it was necessary" to send for one, although she "could have sent the father or one of the daughters, and they had a man-servant who could have gone." A meeting of the Committee was held at Pencader, on this (Monday) at 4 P.M. No official report from the nurses was sent thereto. One of the Committee sent a somebody to Llethernoyadd-ucha, and this "somebody" "brought back a message about the girl's state," "that she was fresher and brighter than on any previous day, since the watching commenced."¹⁶³ The Sister-Nurse tells us that :—

At 8 P.M., in consequence of an unpleasant smell, I examined the bed, and found she had passed a large quantity of urine. There was a large water-bottle in her bed, the cork was out of it; the bed was on an incline, and the water had run down it. There was a dry place between the urine and the water spots. We were obliged to change the bed. The father brought in another bed for her to lie upon whilst we changed it, and she was put upon it, and did not appear so much fatigued as I expected she would have been. When put on this fresh bed she closed her eyes, and her father said she was going into a fit. I said, "No, she is not;" and I said to the girl, "Are you?" She answered me directly, and opened her eyes.

Although the reverse was stated by Sister Clinch, at the trial,¹⁶⁴ the cork really appears to have also come out of the water-bottle on the previous Friday night. The impression of the nurses was that, although the jar was wrapped up in flannel, the girl in her restlessness (? thirstiness) must have disentangled the flannel and pulled the cork out with her foot. She cried and complained that the escaped water made her cold. "She was at this time perfectly sensible, and appeared cheerful."¹⁶⁵ In reference to this wetting of the bed the Sister-Nurse remarked :—

She did not tell us anything of it, but left it to us to find out. I asked her on that day, I think, to let us know when she wanted to make water, and she said she could not tell, as she did not know when she passed it. I observed from time to time that her lips were dry, but I did not see her tongue, as I understood she could not open her mouth—she told me she could not do so. I have seen her gape and yawn, but not so as to give me an opportunity of looking into her mouth.¹⁶⁶

Despite the assertions of the father that Sarah would never go to sleep elsewhere than on her own bed, at 9 P.M. she was sleeping quietly on the strange one. "It

was put on the same bedstead, but a different bed." She was sleeping quietly at 10 P.M., and continued so until 4 A.M. Tuesday, Dec. 14th. After awaking for a short time, she slept again till half-past five. Sister Clinch found her reading at 6 A.M., and tells us:—"Her voice, I observed, was weaker than on Saturday, and I thought she was not so well from other signs. I asked her if she was in pain, and she said 'No.'"¹⁶⁷ "She was paler than on the previous day."¹⁶⁸ "She looked rather hollow about the eyes and cheeks."¹⁶⁹ Between 7 and 8 A.M., in consequence of the rope of the bed-sacking breaking,¹⁷⁰ the water-bottle, the girl had for her feet, fell through to the floor and broke. This accident startled her very much, and frightened her. She then "had a slight fainting fit (syncope). This was a real fainting fit, but she soon recovered," "by the Sister applying eau-de-Cologne to her forehead and temples."¹⁷¹ The fit lasted only a few seconds. The Sister-Nurse adds:—"That was the only real fit I had seen her have. When she recovered she laughed heartily, not like an hysterical laugh. . . . After this was over I noticed her voice was not so strong, her countenance much flushed, her lips were dry. I observed this about an hour and a half, or less, after the breaking of the bottle. I asked her if she was in pain; she said, 'No.' I then asked her if she wanted anything; she said, 'No.' I asked her if her head ached, she said, 'No.'" She had not passed any more urine up to 10 A.M., when she was visited by Dr. Corsellis, who read the Nurse's report in her Diary, and observed it "was correct, as the girl was not so well." The Doctor then made the following entry in Sister Clinch's Diary:—

"At a quarter to ten A.M., found Sarah Jacob recovered from the fainting fit, pulse 112."

Dr. Corsellis did not examine the girl, "but felt her pulse." He did not prescribe, nor make any suggestion for the girl. "He told (the Sister) that he was not in practice, and that if it was at any time inconvenient for the other medical men to attend, he would attend for them. He saw no rota for Tuesday, and put his name there."

The Vicar, who was present during the Doctor's visit, also noticed a change in the girl. He "observed something peculiar about the appearance of the child's

eyes."¹⁷² He "saw she looked worse—pale, and weaker."¹⁷³

Mr. H. H. Davies arrived about noon ; he felt the pulse and tried the temperature of the mouth, and then made the following entry in the Diary :—

"Dec. 14th, Tuesday.—Sarah Jacob is still subject to the same variation in the pulse and appearance as has been the case since and during the previous watching of her case ; no indication of danger.

"HENRY H. DAVIES."

Mr. Davies appears to have made two visits to the girl on this day. To the girl's condition at the second visit he probably refers, when he states in evidence before the Coroner :—"She seemed weaker ; this I stated to the father ; he seemed indifferent rather. . . . I did not think there was any immediate danger then."¹⁷⁴ "He prescribed nothing." When Attrick and Palmer resumed their watch at 2 P.M., the former observes :—"Then I thought the girl looked paler, and her eyes shrunk,"¹⁷⁵ "and her voice lower."¹⁷⁶ This was the first change Sarah Attrick had noticed in the girl since the commencement of the watching. Sister Clinch, however, postpones by one day this notice of the change by any of the nurses. About this time Sarah Jacob was visited by Mr. John Hughes, and Mr. James Rowlands, Surgeons, of Carmarthen. At the trial of the parents for manslaughter, the former gentleman was one of the witnesses for the Crown. The following is the shorthand writer's report of Mr. Hughes' own account of what took place at this, his first visit :—

You are a medical man, I believe?—I am.

Were you cognizant of the watch about to be set upon this girl?—I was not cognizant of its being about to be set ; I knew nothing of it until it had been instituted.

And I believe you found your name had been included as one of the medical committee?—Without my consent or consultation.

But after it had been done, did you go over to the girl's father's house?—I did.

When was that?—On Tuesday, the 14th of December last.

What did you observe at that time?—I found the girl in bed, dressed much as has been described here to-day, and I was only allowed to feel her right hand, to feel her pulse.

You say you were "only allowed:" just describe, more particularly, what you asked to do, and who refused to allow it?—I got there about two o'clock, and found the four nurses there, it being the time when the watches were being changed. Mr. Rowlands was with me. At

first, the nurses did not know who we were; they had never seen us—never seen me, at any rate—before, and when I went to the bedside, the Sister, the head nurse, objected to my putting my hand out to feel the child's hand properly, and I said, "Oh! we are the doctors." Then of course she understood what we were and who we were.

First of all, did you see either the father or the mother?—The father was in the room, and the father told us that he was always in the room. Mr. Rowlands, in a little time, wished the father to leave the room, and the father said, "No; I never leave the room when the doctors are here," because, I think he said, some doctor, Dr. Hughes, used her roughly, or something of that kind.

What happened next?—I then felt her pulse.

In what condition was it?—I made it to be 144.

I asked to see her tongue, and I was told that she could not open her mouth.

Just mention by whom?—I was told by the father.

Did you say anything upon that?—No; I asked if I might touch her forehead to feel her temperature, and the father said "No," that she was not to be touched on the face. I then wanted to see the left arm.

Did you say so?—Yes, I asked. I spoke to the child. She was speaking to me. I said, "Shall I see your left arm?" (in Welsh) and the father stepped forward before she could answer. The father had not perhaps been listening to the conversation for a minute or two. He said, "You'll oblige Mr. Hughes, won't you?" . . . She said she would oblige me in that way, and they allowed me to feel the left arm.

What was the result of your feeling the left arm?—The left arm was colder than the right hand.

Was there anything else that you observed, as you know I have no "proof" of yours?—I was not permitted to do anything more. I wished to examine her bowels. I said, "May I examine her bowels?"—He said, "No."

Who said "No?"—The father. The father was there, and took the active part. I did not see the mother. I should in fairness say, that the father explained to me every time why he refused.

Give us exactly what he said.—He said, she got fits if she was touched.

Had you never seen her before?—Never.

How long were you present on this occasion?—About half an hour.

Did you ever see any fit?—No.

What was your judgment about her then condition?—I did not consider that I had had sufficient opportunities of judging, or of giving an opinion of any value.

Was there enough to alarm you at all?—Well, I did not like the speed of the pulse, but I judged her to be an hysterical person, and I know that in hysterical persons the pulse counts for very little, and as I was not allowed to make any other examination I really could not say much more about it.

In consequence of not being allowed to make a proper examination you resigned your position on the Medical Committee?—Not on that occasion.¹⁷⁷

After the termination of the Magisterial investigation, Mr. James Rowlands rose and spoke as follows :—

Mr. Rowlands hoped he might be allowed, now the case was over, to say one or two words. When he was appointed one of the medical men, and when he consented to act, in a letter to the secretary, he asked the secretary to give some further information as to what he was to do. The Secretary wrote to say he was much obliged to him for consenting to act, and promised to give the required information. He never heard from the secretary from that day to the present, and therefore he considered himself perfectly free from any imputation in the case, on the very ground that he never considered himself to have had anything to do with the committee. There was that unfortunate moment, however, in which he took the opportunity to go up and see the girl, and he could not and would not attempt to deny it. But that was all he had done, and it was precisely the whole of his connexion with the case of Sarah Jacob.¹⁷⁸

He does not appear to have formally sent in his resignation, either to the General Committee, or to the Local Secretary, who, after the girl's death heard, for the first time, of Mr. Rowlands' resignation.

According to the evidence of Sister Clinch and Anne Jones,¹⁷⁹ the father, during this interview, did not seem in a good temper, and did not seem pleased at being questioned "by Mr. Hughes. The girl herself also refused to be examined."¹⁸⁰ After this visit of the medical men, the girl passed a small quantity of urine. "She went to sleep at half-past six, awoke at nine, and did not remain awake long." At 10 P.M., although she states that she noticed nothing particular since she left the girl eight hours previously, the Sister-Nurse significantly adds :—"I could see a gradual change in her, but I did not put it down in my Diary. It was so gradual a change that I did not enter it." She was removed from her bed by the nurses, and she neither fainted nor had a fit. On this day Sister Clinch first perceived a strange smell—a peculiar smell—about the bed. She says it was "not like the usual smell of death, and I cannot describe what it was like." It was not urine, nor from the feathers of the new bed, for "after that bed was changed, I still perceived the smell."¹⁸¹ For the first time it was noticed that the girl gaped, and opened her mouth wide. During Tuesday night "she slept, but was wakeful; she slept very little, and was restless, and passed some more urine ('the quantity was trifling')¹⁸² during the night.

She did not complain of pain, but complained of cold, and (the Sister-Nurse) applied hot flannels and the hot water bottle."

At 6 A.M., Wednesday, Dec. 15th, "She was awake, and her face flushed." Her condition continued much the same till about 2 P.M., when Sister Clinch reports:—"I noticed a change, but it was so gradual that I could not get the nurses to see it in the light I did." This assertion about the nurses must have an antecedent reference, for in her evidence at the trial, Sister Clinch states that Wednesday "was the first time the nurses noticed it (the change) with me."¹⁸³ In fact, Anne Jones, in her evidence¹⁸⁴ before the Coroner, makes this very important statement:—"On Wednesday I noticed her eyes sunk in, and also her nose was pinched; her voice was much lower, and she was unable to read. She talked very little; she was sensible, but she could not get the words out." It appears that this description applies to the girl's condition at 2 P.M., prior to Dr. Lewis' visit, during which, as this gentleman reported, "she was bright and cheerful."¹⁸⁵ Between 3 and 4 P.M., Dr. Lewis, of Carmarthen, paid a visit to the girl. He "felt her pulse and talked to her; he did not say that he considered her in danger; he did not prescribe or make any suggestion." He wrote the following report in the Sister-Nurse's Diary:—

December 15th, Wednesday.—Dr. Lewis visited and found Sarah Jacob as usual, pulse 120.¹⁸⁶ Skin warm on the right hand. She is not so flushed as on the first day of watching. She says she has no pain, and is placid.

Dr. Lewis has in print more elaborately, and somewhat variedly, detailed his observations:—

On Wednesday, December 15th—the sixth day of the watching—I found her, at 3 P.M., much the same in appearance; the voice a little more feeble; pulse 120, variable, sometimes more frequent. The right hand at first felt cold; but, after being covered with a shawl, it became quite warm. The face was not so flushed as on the 9th instant; still there was a dusky redness of the cheeks and nose. She stated that she felt pretty well; she had no pain. She had never asked for any description of food or drink, but she had asked to scent a little eau-de-Cologne, which the Sister had brought with her, on her handkerchief. She conversed pleasantly with me, and asked when I was coming up again to visit her. With the exception of the quick pulse, there was no alarming symptom about the girl at 3 P.M. on

this the sixth day of the watching. The Sister in charge showed no anxiety about her. . . . On this day I did not observe any alarm on the part of the parents; nor from what I had myself observed, or learned from the Sister, did I anticipate immediate danger to life.¹⁸⁷

Despite this carefully drawn description, the following special telegram appeared next morning in one of the daily papers:—

CARMARTHEN, Wednesday night.

Dr. Lewis has been to Llethernoyadd to-day. The girl is in a most satisfactory condition. Her pulse is not so hurried as yesterday. The features are not so flushed as they have been, and there are no signs of prostration. She is not in the least reduced in weight, and is as heavy as when the watching commenced. Not on any occasion has she asked for food, but continues in good spirits, and is perfectly composed.¹⁸⁸

It is almost superfluous to observe that this statement respecting the girl's weight is, in the absence of the weighing-machine, totally unreliable.

The parents this day objected to the girl's "being changed, as they thought it disturbed the child." To supply the alleged want of linen, Mrs. Lewis, of Carmarthen, very kindly subsequently forwarded a change of it, together with another hot-water bottle, to Llethernoyadd-ucha. At 7 P.M. the girl went to sleep, but became restless, and woke very cold, and "shivered a little." Hot flannels were applied, and at 8 P.M. she was sleeping quietly. The restlessness, however, increased, and her legs and feet became very cold. At 9 P.M. she was awake and very restless.¹⁸⁹ She threw her arms about: for the first time it was noticed that she moved her left arm, throwing it over her head. "She wished to be raised up (or moved) in bed frequently." She said she had no pain, and did not want for anything. The peculiar smell was noticed again on this day; and whilst kissing the child the Sister-Nurse also "noticed her breath smelling."

At 10 P.M. she was "still restless." "She was very restless that night, and did not sleep more than ten minutes at a time. She was restless, and threw her arms about. She was very cold, and the nurses put warm flannels on her."¹⁹⁰ This was the last day on which urine was found in the bed.¹⁹¹

Thursday, December 16th, 3 A.M. :—“ She was rolling from one side of the bed to the other.”¹⁹² At half-past three “ She wished the bed made, and they made it.” She was taken out of her bed, and the father having carried another bed in, the girl was lifted into it. Both parents, especially the father, were in and out of the room during this watch. Between 3 A.M. and 6 A.M. she was quieter. At this latter hour the Sister-Nurse found her “ looking very pale and anxious, in the technical sense of anxiety. Her eyes were sunk, and her nose pinched, and the cheek-bones more prominent. . . . Her arms and hands were cold, her feet and legs were the same.” Anne Jones adds :¹⁹³—“ She was very restless, and appeared to me to be sinking. . . . Her lips were very dry, and her mouth seemed parched.” Friction to the right hand and hot flannels to the legs and feet, made her “ much warmer. She was (however) still restless, turning till 11 A.M., when she got quieter. After that, she was reading, but did not seem to care for it as she did before.” This morning the “ peculiar smell about the bed” was so bad, as to make the Sister-Nurse “ feel quite ill.” Respecting this smell (so prominent a symptom in all recorded cases of authentic Starvation) Sister Clinch remarks :—“ I did not mention the smell (to Mr. Davies) because it was always present. I did not at first find where it came from, nor did Jones. I was afterwards told by the other nurses.”

At 11 A.M. Sarah Jacob was visited by the Vicar. “ She appeared weaker than on the Tuesday; she appeared uneasy in bed, and appeared somewhat paler than on Tuesday.” He continues :¹⁹⁴—“ I told the parents that the girl was becoming weaker, and that I thought she could not hold out for the fortnight. They said they could not help it. *I suggested the propriety of sending the nurses away*, or made a remark to that effect. One or the other said ‘ that if the nurses were sent away we shall have nothing to do for the child, but to make her bed more easy than the nurses were in the habit of making it.’ . . . They said ‘ they had seen her quite as weak before.’ . . . I understood that they attributed this growing weakness to the excitement caused by the

bottle breaking, and because her little sister was kept away." In answer to the Judge at the trial, the Vicar said:—"I told them to send the nurses away, in order that the child might have the same fair play to have food that she had before."¹⁹⁵ The Vicar, however, took no steps for the withdrawal of the nurses, or consultation of the Medical Committee on this Thursday.^{196 & 197}

Without being sent for, Mr. Davies came to the girl about noon, and the Sister-Nurse "called his attention to what she had observed."¹⁹⁸ "Mr. Davies felt her pulse, but did not prescribe for her, nor order anything for her." Sister Clinch continues:—"I told him I thought she was much worse. He told me there was no danger, and I told him that if I saw any more change, I should send for him directly." At the meeting of the General Committee as well as before the Coroner, she added:—"Perhaps he said (there was no danger) to quiet my apprehensions, because I was nervous and uneasy."¹⁹⁹ Mr. Davies held a long conversation with the father in the kitchen. He then, finding the girl "appeared very much weaker than on the previous night," "went down to Pencader, and saw a brother-in-law of the girl's father, and told him the danger of leaving the child to go on as she was, and begged of him to tell the parents either to send the nurses away or to allow them to administer food to the child."²⁰⁰ Failing to obtain the services of a Mr. John Jones, of Troedrhiwfer, "to see if he would telegraph to Carmarthen to get the other Doctors down to see the child," Mr. Davies subsequently himself, "at 2.5 P.M.," sent the telegram to Dr. Lewis, of Carmarthen.

In conversation with the Vicar, Mr. Davies said:—he "felt that the responsibility which rested on him that day was too much for him to bear alone."²⁰¹

Anne Jones, before the Coroner, said:²⁰²—"Between one and two o'clock on Thursday afternoon, she kept talking to herself. I could not understand whether she was speaking Welsh or English; up to that time I could understand her. She pointed her fingers at some books. I gave her one, but she took no notice of it." "She was not able to read it." *Both parents were then told*

*the girl was dying.*²⁰³ By 2 P.M., "she was a little better," and had expressed pleasure at seeing on the mantelpiece some pictures Dr. Corsellis had sent her.

About 2:30 P.M., according to the evidence of Sarah Attrick²⁰⁴ (who had then come on duty), Mr. Davies, who appears to have been then again in the house, said "he would go to the uncle and ask him to come up and try and persuade the parents to give her food."²⁰⁵

Before leaving Mr. Davies wrote the following entry in the Nurse's Diary:—"Thursday: Passed rather a restless night. Pulse excessively variable. Owing to a little anxiety on the part of the Sister-Nurse, I thought it advisable to send for Dr. Lewis and Mr. Hughes, for consultation."

The uncle, John Daniel, a tailor, at Pencader, and who had married Mrs. Jacob's sister, arrived at Llethernoyadd-ucha about two or three o'clock in the afternoon, by which time the girl had rallied very much, and seemed much better. About twelve o'clock this day she had borrowed the Sister-Nurse's eau-de-Cologne bottle, secreted it, and when asked for it, at first denied having it, and then afterwards "drew it with her right hand from under her night-dress, from the direction of her left arm."²⁰⁶ She was given the bottle again at 2 P.M., and when Attrick and Palmer came on duty this day, "there was then a strong smell of eau-de-Cologne in the bed."²⁰⁶ Ever since the commencement of the watching, the girl has had "a little eau-de-Cologne on her handkerchief about twice a day."

The uncle saw the father in the stack-yard, and said to him:—"Mr. Davies says that the little girl is getting worse, and if you have anything to do to your child do it at once; that you have more knowledge in connexion with your child than anybody else." Evan Jacob replied:—"I have *nothing to do* for my child, but as I said she was from the beginning." John Daniel then went into the house and to the bedside of the child, to whom he said:—"You do not look so well as I used to see you." He "asked her if she would like the strange women to go away;" also "if she would take a drop of water or something else simple. She closed her

eyes, and made no answer, as if in a fit."²⁰⁷ The girl was evidently displeased with her uncle's good intention.²⁰⁸

About this time (4.10 P.M.) Dr. Lewis and Mr. Hughes, of Carmarthen, arrived at the farm, being driven from Pencader Station by a Mr. John Evans, of Cwmbychan. The interview of these medical gentlemen with the girl is thus graphically described by Mr. John Hughes in his evidence at the trial:—

I saw her a second time.

You went again on the Thursday, I believe?—On the Thursday a telegram was sent to Dr. Lewis, . . . I think, from Mr. Davies.

We may get into trouble about that. The result was that you went over at once?—Quite so; I went over with Dr. Lewis, and I got there about a quarter past four, I think; and when I went to the door with Dr. Lewis, the mother certainly—I think the father was present—but the mother certainly objected to my going in. She said, "You shall not go in; no one shall see her but Dr. Lewis." I had rather you would question me.

I am afraid I cannot do that; I must only ask you to state facts.—Then I must give more detail than is probably necessary for you.

It will not be waste of time if you give us all the details you can.—Dr. Lewis began to remonstrate with her about the impropriety of not allowing me to go in with him. I said, "Never mind, Lewis; go in, if the girl is ill or dying; I don't want to see her," and I went into the kitchen.

Did you in fact see her?—I did. Dr. Lewis went into the room. . . . I had to get back to the station, my trap was waiting; and after I had sat in the kitchen for a few minutes, Dr. Lewis came out and said, "Do you wish to go?" "Yes," I said, "I must go." He said, "I'll ask the girl to see you." He went in, some conversation took place; he said she would see me. I went in and I saw her.

In what condition did you find her?—The room was dark. It was December; it was not very light. The light did not fall directly on her face. She was on a low bed; I could not see her face very well, but her pulse was higher. I knelt down by the bedside, so as not to disturb her. I felt the right hand, which was next to me. I felt her pulse; I found it to be 160.

I think it was 140 on the Tuesday?—144 I made it. I should have said that on Tuesday Mr. Rowlands, who is equally competent with myself to judge of the speed of the pulse, differed from me at first. I accounted for it by the pulse varying in the course of the time, and we both agreed that it was 144; but on the Thursday I found the pulse 160. I cannot say that I noticed very much of a change other than that, but the speed of the pulse frightened me.

You say the opportunities for observing closely were not very good?—And they were not given me; in fact there was no opportunity of forming any opinion of any value.

You say that the speed of the pulse frightened you, at all events?—Yes, I felt that it was a bad pulse.

Did you observe anything else?—No, I did not—not anything to

alarm me; but when I left the room Dr. Lewis came with me. Do you wish me to say what occurred?

Was the female prisoner or the male prisoner present?—Neither then.

Then you must not tell me what passed between you. — Dr. Lewis came to me, and we had a conversation, and the result of the conversation was, that by my wish or by his wish the father was called to us, and in the father's presence, by my desire, Dr. Lewis told them what I have said—which was, that *the child was apparently weaker*, and that I recommended that *the watch should be put an end to*, which Dr. Lewis did tell them.

You understand Welsh, of course?—Oh, thoroughly. Then, in order that there might be no mistake, I repeated the conversation to the man myself.

What answer did he make?—He said, “No.” That *he would not give her food*, because he had often seen her as weak or weaker before. I am not sure whether *gwan* or *gwanor* was the word.²⁰⁹

Dr. Lewis's account of this visit is as follows :

We learnt from the nurses in attendance that Sarah had passed a very restless night; that she moved her arms a good deal—even her left arm, which for so long a time had been kept unmoved under the bed-clothes; that this morning she had looked pale, and the pulse had become exceedingly frequent. In the course of the early morning (3 A.M.) Sarah wished to have her bed made. She was accordingly removed to the iron-bedstead. After a thorough shaking of her bed, she was restored to it; she, however, slept only a few minutes at a time. She had passed no urine since the previous day. Mr. Hughes and myself having felt the pulse, I found it above 120, and so variable in strength that I could not count it accurately. Mr. Hughes said it was 160; and, having heard the statement of the nurses, we determined to speak to the father. We went with him outside the house, and informed him that the *nurses thought Sarah was threatening to sink*, and that, from the quickness of the pulse, there was *danger*. We asked him if he wished the watching to be given over, and if some food should be offered to her. He said, in reply, that he wished the nurses to continue the watching, and *he would on no account offer her anything*, as he had made a vow about two years ago that he would not offer Sarah any food until she asked for it, as on a particular occasion, at that time, she fainted when he asked her; and he had seen his daughter as weak many times before.²¹⁰

Whilst Mr. Hughes was with her, “she was perfectly collected and sensible.” She spoke to him “about the three young girls that it had been proposed should assist the watchers.”²¹¹ She said “Mr. Hughes was a nice man;”²¹² “she liked Mr. Hughes.”²¹³ Upon his return to Carmarthen that night, Mr. Hughes wrote to the Local Secretary the following letter:—

Carmarthen, Thursday, Dec. 16th, 1869.

DEAR SIR,—I beg to decline any further responsibility in connexion with Sarah Jacob, as one of the Committee of consultation. As you

are aware, I was appointed without being first consulted on the matter, and when you wrote to me on the subject I consented to act, and made several observations on what I thought necessary and proper. I also objected to the appointment of her connexion, or neighbour, as watcher, and the Committee properly agreed to that, so that I have every reason to speak and think of them with respect and confidence. The reasons that induce me to resign are these: I am not allowed to make a proper examination of the patient—I am not allowed to see her tongue, or touch her face, nor to examine her person (except that I was allowed once to feel her arm through her dress). I am only permitted to feel her pulse, and that, in a person of her hysterical condition, is not a safe or reliable test of her state. Her pulse was 144 last Tuesday, and was 160 to-day; but from that alone I can't gain sufficient information to guide me in giving an opinion of the effects on the system of (the) watching employed, nor of the danger incurred by it, if any. I saw her on Tuesday last, and again to-day by request of Dr. Lewis. When we arrived there to-day the parents, especially the mother, objected to allow me to see her, but were willing that Dr. Lewis should do so. However, when the child herself was referred to, she expressed her willingness, even readiness, to see me. I did see her for a very few minutes, and felt her pulse, and found it to be 160, as I have before said. It cannot be expected that I or any other person should go 14 miles or so on the chance of being allowed to see the patient or not, as the caprice of the parents may dictate. I regret that I am compelled to decline going again; but under the circumstances I believe that I cannot come to any other conclusion, and I beg that my resignation may not be imputed to any other motives whatever than what I have stated, and others of a similar kind. I fully appreciate the motives that have influenced the Committee in devoting trouble, time, and money in endeavouring to discover the truth in this case, and hope they will not be lost, but whether successful or not the intention was highly creditable to them. I should, perhaps, state then, to-day I recommended Dr. Lewis to state to the parents that the child was seemingly weaker, and to offer to withdraw the watchers if they wished. I heard him do so, and they declined, and said that she had been as weak many times before.

I am, dear sir, yours truly,

JOHN HUGHES, Surgeon.²¹⁴

This letter was received on the 17th December, and communicated to the meeting of the General Committee held on Saturday, December 18th.

After Mr. Hughes's departure on the 17th, Mr. Davies arrived between 4 and 5 P.M., and joined the consultation with Dr. Lewis, at Llethernoyadd-ucha.

Dr. Lewis states:—

I, however, remained for a couple of hours, wishing to meet Mr. Davies, who had summoned the medical consultation. I returned to the bedside of the girl and sat there some time. At this period, excepting the very quick pulse, there was nothing alarming in the

appearance which she presented. Her face looked more natural than on the previous day; the livid redness of her nose and the excessive flush of her cheeks had disappeared. The general colour of her face was clear and natural, with only a slight colour in her cheeks. The eyes were natural; the pupils of medium size; the colour of the lips was quite natural. The right hand was outside the bed-clothes, and was rather cool. The excessive rate of the pulse did not awaken in my mind so much alarm as in that of Mr. Hughes, in consequence of the absence of the other usual symptoms of sinking (I am speaking of 5 P.M. on Thursday). There was no clamminess of the skin, no delirium, no disturbance of the intellect. She conversed with me, with an occasional smile, about her photograph and one of her ornaments. On being asked how she was, she said she was as usual, and did not want anything. A hot-water stone-jar was constantly kept at her feet. In consequence of the *clearly expressed wish of the father, the watching was continued; and the nurses were directed to give food if the girl desired it*, this being an understood condition throughout the whole time.²¹⁵

The father's reply to the reiterated advice of the medical men "to give the child food and withdraw the watch," was, "*No, not for the world;*" adding "he had seen her quite as bad ('and even worse') before."²¹⁶ Dr. Lewis thereupon tranquillized the nervous anxiety of the nurses, whom the father requested to remain still on watch. The girl in fact seemed to rally about the time the Doctors were there, especially when Dr. Lewis was speaking to her. She told him "that she intended having her photograph taken and to send a copy to each of the nurses."²¹⁷ The parents expressed their surprise that Mr. Davies had, without previously acquainting them with the girl's "dangerous state," thought fit to telegraph to Carmarthen; and they found fault with him for telling the uncle what he had.

Dr. Lewis observed to Mr. Davies "that the little girl appeared to him to be better than on the previous evening. . . . He also said that the state of the child was caused by the excitement through so many Doctors being with her."²¹⁸ "Dr. Lewis asked the father and mother to have permission to watch for a week longer. They said that they would be willing if the little girl was allowed to sleep there."²¹⁹ The father alleges:²²⁰— "Dr. Lewis and Mr. Davies . . . told me that the child was not in danger," and "neither of the Doctors nor the nurses ever told me that the child was dying from want of food."

The Rev. Wm. Thomas also alleges that about half-past nine that night Mr. Davies "said she was in no danger."²²¹

Dr. Lewis made the following report in Sister Clinch's Diary:—

Dr. Lewis visited at 4.10 P.M., Thursday, with Mr. John Hughes, in consequence of receiving a telegram requesting our attendance in consultation. Since the early part of the afternoon the state of Sarah has improved. Her countenance is more natural, the flush has passed away; the colour of the nose is normal only; natural colour in cheeks. The eyes natural, pupils of medium size; lips of good colour; voice about as usual. She has conversed pleasantly with me, and has smiled. The right hand becomes cold when exposed, and gets warm when covered. The pulse is very variable and very small; but there is no clamminess of the skin, no signs of sinking, no delirium, no wandering of her mind. No urine passed since yesterday; therefore no material change has taken place in Sarah's state. Scents had better be withheld from her. The hot bricks for the nurses' feet should not be brought near Sarah's bed.²²²

At the General Committee meeting after the girl's death, Dr. Lewis stated that the condition of the pulse on this Thursday formed an element of danger.²²³

About 5 P.M. the father heard that the uncle had offered water to the child. John Daniel states:—

He said he was surprised at me. He said the little girl would never look at me again; that I had made it (the little girl) worse. He did not tell me that he would have knocked any man down if he had been present. He said that I ought to know better, and he felt inclined to give me a kick, because his child got worse every time that food was offered to her. I said that I feared the worst, and that I wanted to try whether the child would take food or not. The father said that I ought to have known better; and he believed that I did know better, and that I did that to make the child worse.²²⁴

Sarah Jacob, however, "continued rallied till about 9 o'clock P.M. She seemed very comfortable, and conversed with (the nurses). During the time of the rally she appeared to be in a condition to take food, if it had been offered her."²²⁵

Mr. Davies himself tells us:²²⁶—"I am of opinion that if I had been allowed to administer restoratives and stimulants to the girl on Thursday her life would have been saved, and *I would have administered them were it not for the opposition of the father and mother.*"

When at 10 P.M. Sister Clinch resumed her watch she found "a marked change:" "the little girl was much weaker, and was sinking. She was very restless indeed,

throwing her arms (and legs) about. She was very cold." She was perfectly sensible. The Sister-Nurse thought the child's "anxious appearance might be from want of sleep, and she had suffered much lately from cold." "She was very restless (all this watch), throwing the things off the bed the whole of the night. It was as much as they could do to keep them on and to keep her comfortable." She grated her teeth this last night.²²⁷ Two hot-water-bottles and hot flannels were applied, but she could not get warm. Whilst the bed was being made it was noticed that the bed-clothes smelt very strongly indeed of eau-de-Cologne, but "there was no smell of eau-de-Cologne on her breath, which was very offensive." The Sister-Nurse says:—"I looked for my eau-de-Cologne bottle and could not find it. I then searched her person and felt her all about under her left arm, but not up to her armpits, and I could not find it, and the bed-clothes were all shaken and we could not find it."

About midnight the girl became delirious. She called for her father. "He came to her, and went up to the bed. She did not take much notice of him, but sent him away directly, saying, 'Go out.' As soon as he had gone out, she called him in again. He went up to the bed again. She sent him out again, saying, 'Go out' ('and shut the door'). She did this a dozen times during the night. Once she called for her mother. She came and sat down by her bedside. The girl did not send the mother out in the same way."²²⁸ "She was not still for two minutes the whole night."²²⁹ The parents and eldest sister were constantly backwards and forwards, in and out of the room, all night. The father very frequently brought hot flannels and rubbed her,²³⁰ to try and keep her warm (this was the first time after the watching began that the father had done anything to the person of the child), and kissed her; the mother kissed Sarah frequently, but did not speak so frequently as did the father to her. The father and the girl spoke together in Welsh; but towards the end of this watch, "No conversation passed—the girl could not then speak."²³¹

"A little before 3 A.M. of the 17th she called out something in Welsh, and Jones could not understand it. Then the father came in immediately, with some hot

flannels in his hand, and he immediately put his hand up the bed under the clothes and took out the (missing scent) bottle." "The girl was then too bad to say where the bottle was."²³¹

As none of the applications appeared to add any warmth to Sarah Jacob, the father suggested that the little sister, about six years old, should be put in bed with her to make her warm. The little child was put, quite naked, into the bed with her dying sister. Sarah "put out her hand to shake hands with the little girl, and the mother brought the youngest child (a boy 'two years old'), and she appeared to know the child," "but she did not say anything."²³²

Shortly after the little girl was put into bed to her, Sarah was very restless, and the nurses were obliged to put bolsters on both sides to prevent her knocking her arms.

About 4 A.M., the parents were informed that the girl was in danger. "When her father saw her so bad . . . he told her whatever she wanted she was to have; but he did not mention food, nor did he mention water." He mentioned, "he thought the child would go out of her mind."²³³

Between 4 and 5 A.M., Anne Jones tells us:—"Because I felt for her" (her mouth was parched²³⁴), "I went to both the father and mother and told them that the *child was very bad*, and that if she was my child I should give her *a drink, or a drop of brandy-and-water* with a spoon. They told me not to offer her anything. I think it was the mother said so in the father's presence. They both said that they had taken an oath, turned two years ago, to the child, that they would not offer her any food till she asked for it. They used the word 'Llw.' I translate that 'an oath;' and never heard it applied to 'a vow.' This was in answer to my suggestion about the brandy-and-water." "The mother, in the father's presence, when they told me about the oath, said that the girl could not bear the sight ('smell') or mention of food,"²³⁵ "and that it made her faint."²³⁶

In consequence of the Sister-Nurse, through the Welsh nurse, informing the father that his daughter was much worse and in great danger, he sent the manservant, about 5 A.M., for Mr. Davies, the Surgeon.

During the whole of this night all the family—father, mother, sisters, and brothers—“were back and fore into the room, and they were allowed to go close to the bed.”²³⁷ When the nurses were changed at 6 A.M., “the girl was (‘sensible’ and ‘awake,’²³⁸ but) gradually sinking.”²³⁹

To Attrick and Palmer the girl then “appeared much worse. She appeared much weaker, rather pale, her eyes seemed sunk. She was rather cold. There were hot flannels applied, and hot bottles—one to her side and one to her feet. She did not get warm.”²⁴⁰

At 7 A.M. “she was very restless, but quieter than she had been during the night.”

When Mr. Davies arrived between 8 and 9 A.M., the Nurse says:—“I think she was sensible.” Mr. Davies, however, found the girl sinking²⁴⁰ fast, and told the parents so. “She was insensible²⁴¹ about 10 o’clock, A.M.”

Between 10 and 11 the Vicar found her “speechless,” and could get no answer from her.²⁴²

The father said:²⁴³—“He (Mr. Davies) asked me if I did not feel inclined to give the girl some brandy-and-water. I said, ‘No,’ as I had not offered her anything for two years, and she always got ill when it was offered; but that *he might offer it if he liked*, as I was willing. When Mr. Davies returned from the parlour, I asked him if he had given her anything, and he said ‘No;’ that he was afraid that as she had been so long without it she might *choke*.”²⁴⁴

Mr. Davies again appealed to the father to “withdraw the watch; and he said, ‘No, not for the world!’ He had nothing to do for his child.” . . . Nurse Attrick “heard him tell Mr. Davies in English that the nurses were not to go away.”²⁴⁵ *Mr. Davies* thereupon, however, *told the nurses to keep away from the bed, to enable the parents to “go and give her anything they liked.”*²⁴⁶ “The girl was quite sensible, and appeared in a condition to take food if offered her.”^{247 & 248}

In a telegram received at Carmarthen,²⁴⁹ about 1 P.M. Saturday, December 18th, Mr. Davies gave the following details of this his last visit to the girl:—

I saw her yesterday morning, and told the parents and the nurses that she was sinking fast. I asked permission to offer her something. The parents replied that the offer of food had made her worse the

day before. *The parents wished the nurses to remain to witness her end.* I sent for a clergyman and some neighbours; all desired to obtain some light upon the subject, if possible. I telegraphed for Dr. Lewis. I have not seen the nurses and others since. The parents consented, if I wished, to ascertain her inability to swallow before I left, but I thought it useless.

About 10.30 A.M., John Daniel again visited his niece. He "said to both parents:—'I saw the little girl still worse than before.' They replied, 'That she did look bad, and they were afraid that the watching had told upon her.' I did not say anything to them about offering her food. I did not on that day offer her anything myself." The father said, "He had seen the child (look) worse than she did then."²⁵⁰

At the meeting of the General Committee after the girl's death, the statement (according to Newspaper²⁵¹ report) made by John Daniel about this interview, apparently varies somewhat from his sworn evidence before the Magistrates. We say *apparently*, for as a matter of fact "cold water" is not considered by very many persons to be *food* at all. The statement alluded to is as follows:—

Mr. Daniel: It was about twelve o'clock when I arrived there. I saw that the little girl was very much changed, and I thought she would not live long. I told her father that it would be better to moisten her lips with cold water. "I cannot venture to do that," said the father, "as I have given permission to Mr. Davies to do so, and he would not do so." I then told the nurses that I would try to get the father and mother out of the room. The nurses went out, and the parents. The girl's aunt then took my handkerchief and moistened the girl's lips. Soon after that the child was dead.—Dr. Lewis: Was there any wandering expression which in any way referred to what she had passed through? Mr. Daniel: Not in the least.—Dr. Lewis: Was her language incoherent? Mr. Daniel: I could not understand a word.²⁵²

When at 2 P.M. the Sister-Nurse and Anne Jones arrived from their lodgings to the change of watch, Mr. Jones, of Blaenblodau, who was waiting for them "at the gate leading from the high road to the farm," also told them that it would be better for them to be withdrawn. On her arrival at the farm Sister Clinch found the girl *dying*. The Sister-Nurse states:—"I did not like to make a noise to disturb her, and therefore I did not withdraw." "During the last hour she spoke nothing, she was too weak and too far gone; she was not sensible; she took no notice of anyone; she appeared

in a stupor, like a person dying." All the nurses remained, but not near the bed. The girl gradually got weaker. The parents had left the room about half an hour before the girl's death, a few minutes past 3 P.M., in the presence of the four nurses, John Daniel, and "a strange woman."

The nurses left the farmhouse as soon as the girl was dead. "One of the nurses asked about washing the body," but it does not appear that either of them was asked to remain behind to do so.

So died, on the 17th of December, 1869, the far-famed "Fasting-Girl in Wales!"

The sad news was first brought to the neighbouring town of Carmarthen "by the guard of a train which passed through Pencader."²⁵³ A letter was subsequently received from the same station confirmatory of the news. After the further receipt in Carmarthen of a telegram "The Welsh Fasting-Girl is dead," the melancholy intelligence quickly spread to all parts of the town. Till nearly 10 P.M., however, the news was scarcely credited. Three or four days previously, rumour had erroneously reported the event, this time also it might turn out untrue. Dr. Lewis, on his return from a temporary visit to Llanelly, opened a private telegram to himself, and thus was fully confirmed what was in every one's thoughts and speech.²⁵⁴

During the first week of the watchings, not only the local, but the London papers had teemed with quasi-official comments on the case. The excitement in the Principality had day by day increased; in the large towns the daily papers, giving the latest particulars, were bought up to the very last copy; false rumours were of course freely circulated; and when at the end of the sixth day the medical report appeared to the uninitiated a degree more favourable, it was confidently predicted that the Doctors, as a body, would be outwitted.²⁵⁵ The real official reports had been provokingly silent. Now, however, that the truth had come out, the pity and the excitement of the public were raised to the highest pitch. The next morning, Saturday, December 18th, every London paper was full of, and every London hoarding and waste-wall were placarded with, the news.

A meeting of the General Committee was held in the afternoon, about one hour after the girl's death.²⁵⁶ Nothing of importance appears, however, to have been transacted. The Local Secretary wrote "requesting the attendance of the Carmarthen medical gentlemen connected with the Committee, at a professional conference to be held"²⁵⁷ the following afternoon. "Mr. Hughes, Surgeon, declined to attend, having resigned his office as a member of the Committee on Thursday night (Dec. 16th). Mr. James Rowlands also declined, because he considered that he had nothing to do with the case after Tuesday, Dec. 14th, when he saw the girl, and refused to continue on the Committee because the father would not leave the room whilst the medical examination was taking place."²⁵⁷

At 2 P.M. on Saturday afternoon, December 18, 1869, the General Committee, who had undertaken the watching of the girl, met at the Eagle Inn, Cross-Inn, Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, "to receive the report of the nurses." On the motion of Dr. Lewis, seconded by Mr. Jones, Solicitor, Llandyssil, the Rev. E. Jones, B.D., Vicar of the parish, was voted to the chair. There were also present Dr. Corsellis; Mr. H. H. Davies, Surgeon; Rev. Wm. Thomas, M.A., Local Secretary, Llandyssil; Mr. John Daniel (the uncle), the four nurses, &c., &c.

The Chairman said that when they met there on a former occasion they rejoiced at the prospect of having the case of alleged fasting on the part of Sarah Jacob thoroughly investigated. They now met sadder, but not much wiser men. He hoped they would be enlightened by the report which would be submitted to them by the nurses. He had nothing to add respecting the case in its present stage, but would call upon the head nurse to read her report.²⁵⁷

After the reading of the Diary (the contents of which are embodied in the preceding history), several questions were put by members of the Committee to the several nurses. Dr. Lewis, Mr. H. H. Davies, and Mr. John Daniel volunteered information, and also responded to queries respecting facts of which they became cognisant during the watching. These facts and occurrences we have carefully eliminated and embodied in the history of the last eight days of the girl's life. A repetition would be therefore unnecessary and superfluous.

The questioning becoming at length exhausted—

Dr. Lewis, addressing the nurses, said he was sure the Committee were under a debt of gratitude to them for coming all this way to assist in investigating this unfortunate affair. The Committee entered upon the task with a desire to gratify the wish of the parents and the demands of the public, and nothing could be more humane, more gentle, and more perfect than the manner in which the nurses had discharged their duties. He therefore moved a vote of thanks to the nurses for their services.

Dr. Corsellis said he had great pleasure in seconding the motion, as the conduct of the whole of the nurses was most praiseworthy.

The motion was carried unanimously.

The Chairman asked if any member of the Committee wished to ask any further question?

A Committee-man asked whether it was only once there were stains as of excrementation on the girl's night-dress?

The Sister-nurse replied, "Yes, only once."

There were no more questions asked, and the Committee adjourned to another room.

On their return, the following resolution was proposed by Dr. Lewis, seconded by Dr. Corsellis, and carried unanimously:—"That, having received the report of the nurses, the Committee adjourn until after the post-mortem examination has been made, and that Mr. Davies, Llandyssil, be authorized to attend the inquest, and to inform the Committee of the evidence which may be adduced.

On the motion of Mr. J. Jones, the adjourned meeting was fixed to be held at Pencader, at 4 o'clock on Tuesday afternoon.

The Rev. W. Thomas said that he had before mentioned that Mr. Hughes (Surgeon) withdrew from the Medical Committee on Tuesday. He wished to read his letter of resignation.²⁵⁷

This letter has already appeared in its proper order of time at pp. 70 and 71 of this history.

The Inquest on the body of Sarah Jacob was held on the 21st day of December, 1869, shortly after noon, at the house of Ann Charles, New Inn, in the parish of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, in the county of Carmarthen, before George Thomas, Gentleman, one of the Coroners for the said county.

The jury had previously assembled at Llethernoyadd-ucha, at 11 o'clock, where they were sworn, and then viewed the body. They then adjourned to the New Inn. The following gentlemen were sworn on the jury:—

Mr. David Jones, Derllwyn (foreman).
 Mr. John Evans, Cwmgwyn.
 Mr. Thomas Jones, Llynglas.
 Mr. Lewis Davies, Pencader.
 Mr. David Phillips, Pantglas.
 Mr. John Thomas, Stag.

Mr. John Thomas, Gelly.
Mr. David James, Castelldu.
Mr. Thomas Jones, Blossom Lodge.
Mr. Evan Jones, New Inn.
Mr. Evan Evans, Glandwr, New Inn.
Mr. Benjamin Jones, Pencader.
Mr. David Jones, Alltyman.

The Coroner, addressing the jury, said that the course he intended adopting, subject to the approval of the jury, was first to examine the medical gentlemen who had made the post-mortem examination. The jury had seen the body, and he had called their attention to its state more particularly to enable them to appreciate the medical evidence. After that, he would call the nurses who had been in attendance upon the deceased, and possibly they would call the father of the girl. They might then, if they thought proper, enlarge the circle; but he did not think it would be necessary. Their purpose was to ascertain how Sarah Jacob came to her death. They were not there to criminate any one, but if anything cropped up that seemed to indicate any one as being guilty of a breach of criminal law, it would be for them to take cognizance of it, and for those so criminated to take their trial on the charge. He would now proceed to call the medical gentlemen, and then pursue the course he had indicated.

The nurses and medical gentlemen not having arrived, it was found necessary to alter the Coroner's arrangement.

The Coroner having requested that some one should be called to identify the body,

“Thomas Williams, being sworn, said as follows:—‘I am a farmer, and live at Gwarallt, in the parish of Llanllwny. I knew the deceased Sarah Jacob, who lived at Lletherneuadd.^{257*} I was present this morning when the jury viewed the body at Lletherneuadd, and the body was that of Sarah Jacob.’”²⁵⁸

The Sister-Nurse, Elizabeth Clinch, was then examined for nearly three hours, and detailed all the facts which we have previously embodied in the foregoing history. She further stated:—“During the whole period of my being there, no one suggested giving the girl food or water, nor did she ask for any.” “I was told by Dr. Lewis not to mention food in her presence, as the parents had told him if I did so, the girl would have a fit; but that if she asked for food or water, I was to give it to her.”²⁵⁸

This in substance was repeated by all the other nurses.

“The Coroner invited the medical gentlemen present to ask this witness (E. Clinch) questions; but they stated that they had none to ask.”²⁵⁹

“An adjournment then took place, and on re-assembling, the Coroner said he proposed to sit until 5 o'clock, and then adjourn until Thursday, at Pencader, at half-past ten o'clock.”²⁶⁰

The evidence of the two medical gentlemen who had conducted the post-mortem examination was then taken:—

James Thomas, being sworn, said as follows:—I am a Surgeon in practice at Newcastle-Emlyn. Yesterday, in conjunction with Mr. Phillips (Dr. Lewis being present), I examined the body of Sarah Jacob, said to be about 12½ years old. It measured about fifty-four inches, was plump and well formed, and showing indications of puberty. I opened the head (this was about three o'clock) and found the membranes of the brain considerably injected; the substance of the brain was not very vascular, but perfectly healthy and of proper consistence, and there was no difference between the sides of the brain. An incision was made from the top of the girl's chest to the lower part of the body; there was displayed a fine layer of fat from half an inch to an inch thick along the incision; the contents of the chest—lungs, heart, and great vessels—were perfectly sound and healthy, and contained very little blood. On examining the alimentary canal I observed there was not the slightest obstruction from the mouth, to the termination of the gut. The stomach contained about three teaspoonfuls of dark gelatinous fluid, having a slight acid reaction with litmus paper. The small intestines were empty, but the colon and rectum contained about half a pound of excrement, in a hard state, which I handed to P. Sergeant Scurry. The liver was healthy, the gall-bladder considerably distended with bile; kidneys and spleen perfectly sound, urinary bladder empty. The body was perfectly free from disease, judging from the healthy appearance of the organs. Judging from the appearance of the excrement, I should say that it might have been there a fortnight. I attribute the death to want of sustenance, food, and nourishment; I also believe the child laboured under Hysteria, frequently showing itself in most extraordinary freaks, and in her case by refusing to take food before the public.²⁶¹

John Phillips, being sworn, said as follows:—I am a Surgeon in practice at Newcastle-Emlyn. I joined the last witness in the post-mortem examination of deceased. I have heard his testimony just given on oath—I quite agree with it in every respect. On examining deceased's feet and hands, I found that the nails of the feet had been carefully trimmed within a week or ten days. Under the nail of the great toe of the right foot, I observed a dark mark as if it had been pinched by scissors, the mark being continuous with the cut nail. On looking at the girl's shoulders and armpits, I found the right shoulder much more prominent than the other, the left armpit being very hollow, sufficiently so to contain a half-pint bottle. I think the harder or lower portion of the excrement might have been in the girl's body for several weeks, the rest of it a shorter time—I cannot say how long.^{261 & 262}

Mr. H. H. Davies, Surgeon, Llandyssil, was also sworn and examined. The facts he deposed to have been amalgamated with this history in the order of their occurrence. He further deposed:²⁶³—“ We were obliged to ask the nurses not to desire the child to take food or water, unless she asked for it; and it was agreed that a Committee of medical men should be appointed to visit the place alternately. . . . I think the girl died of exhaustion from want of nourishment. . . . I never had any conversation with the child as to taking food; I was strictly ordered not to mention food to her during the watching period. This direction was from the parents.”

The Inquest was adjourned at half-past five in the afternoon, “the jury being severally bound in their own recognizance of 10*l.* each for their personal appearance at such adjournment.”²⁶³ On Thursday, December 23rd, the adjourned inquest was held “at the school-room, at Pencader, in the parish of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, in the county of Carmarthen, before George Thomas, Gentleman, one of the Coroners for the said county.”²⁶³

On this occasion, Mr. Bishop, Solicitor, Llandovery, appeared for the father, and Mr. Lloyd, Solicitor, Lampeter, for the mother of the deceased child.

The three nurses gave evidence detailing facts already embodied in this history. The Rev. William Thomas, M.A., next detailed the facts he observed, and the statements made to him, on the two occasions he visited the girl. He also briefly iterated his doings as Secretary of the Local Committee, formed on November 30th, 1869, and then concluded with these words:—“No communication reached me, or, to my knowledge, the Committee, intimating that any change had taken place in the state of the girl: if any communication had been addressed to the Committee, I should expect to have received it.”²⁶³

Evan Jacob, the father, then came forward. He voluntarily tendered himself as a witness to be examined, and was sworn. The Coroner “cautioned him that he was not bound to criminate himself, or answer any questions that may tend to criminate him.”²⁶⁴ He then

made a voluntary statement, the contents of which have been embodied in the preceding history.

Evan Jacob signed his Deposition.

John Daniel, the uncle, then deposed to facts already embodied in this history.

The Coroner read the whole evidence and summed up ably. He could not understand how rational persons could believe the story of the girl's fasting. The urine and excrement must have come from something. The Doctors were not to blame, having been deceived by the father. There were two branches of inquiry—first, the cause of death; and secondly, who were responsible. The cause—there could be no question—was Starvation, and the responsibility was on the father. In law, the father was responsible not merely to *provide*, but also to *induce* the child to take food. The mother was not responsible, unless it could be proved she was given food for the child by her husband, and withheld same from the child. The criminal negligence was on the father only, but it was a question of degree. It was marvellous how the father could make such an ingenious story on oath to-day, and endeavour to impose on the jury such a hideous mass of nonsense. Which was it easier to believe, that the natural laws were reversed, or that the father was stating falsehoods?—the latter. Life had been sacrificed. It was a question of murder or manslaughter—which? The Coroner cited cases which showed it to be manslaughter.

The jury then deliberated for a quarter of an hour, and returned a verdict of "Died from Starvation, caused by negligence to induce the child to take food on the part of the father," which constituted Manslaughter.²⁶⁵

The Coroner made out the warrant for Evan Jacob's committal for trial on the charge, but he was admitted to bail.

The considerable excitement which the child's death had on the Saturday created in South Wales, quickly spread far and wide, beyond the confines of the Principality. The whole Press, both medical and general, (in some instances most severely) commented on the sad result. The verdict of the Coroner's Jury was not considered sufficiently inclusive. Blame was attributed first to one, and then to another. The Committee, the Doctors, the Nurses, the authorities of Guy's Hospital, the Parents, the Girl herself—each and all respectively came in for a very large share of vituperance and hard words. Wisdom *after* the event, cropped up everywhere. Science,²⁶⁶ which had been previously called upon to perform the necessary duty of instructing the public in the details of this Welsh-Wonder, was now by that self-same public dragged in the mire, as an accessory to self-

murder. Within a very few days of the girl's death, it was publicly intimated that the Home-Office ought to undertake a complete investigation of the whole affair.²⁶⁷

The Times came out with a strong and significant leader.²⁶⁸ In answer to the appeal alluded to in this article, the following letters appeared in the next morning's impression of that paper:—

THE WELSH FASTING-GIRL.

To the Editor of "The Times."

SIR,—As treasurer (and consequently acting governor) of Guy's Hospital, I am desirous, with your assistance, to answer the calls for explanation which have been made from various quarters, by stating what the governors have actually had to do with the case of the unfortunate girl whose death has naturally called forth so much commiseration. I have delayed this communication in consequence solely of the pendency of the inquest.

First of all, I have to say that the responsibility for whatever has been done in the matter on the part of the hospital authorities rests exclusively upon myself, none of the other governors having been in any way concerned in it.

The circumstances were simply these. I was informed by one of the medical staff of the Hospital, that there was a strong desire felt by a number of persons to have the case of the Welsh Fasting-Girl—which had attracted much attention throughout the Principality, and was supposed by very many of the inhabitants to be really one of the maintenance of life without food—subjected to a careful examination. And he asked my permission to allow the Committee which was being formed for conducting the investigation, and with whom a medical practitioner in the neighbourhood was to be associated, to have the services of some of the hospital-nurses in watching the case.

To this application I gave my assent, and the nurses were sent down accordingly, at the cost of the Local Committee. And here the connexion of the Hospital begins and ends. I should, perhaps, observe that, with the exception of the gentleman through whom the application was made to me, the members of the medical staff of the Hospital had not, as far as I am aware, any cognizance of the proceeding whatever.

It remains for me to say a word or two upon two points which have formed the subject of public comment. It is said, on the one hand, that the pretence that a human being could subsist without food is so absurd, that any attempt to expose the imposture was uncalled for, and that the application made to the hospital ought, on those grounds, to have been absolutely rejected. On the other hand, it is insisted (and there are some observations to that effect in one of your leaders of this morning) that conditions should have been attached to the consent, by which any improper use of the assistance afforded might have been prevented.

To the first objection I would reply that, admitting with your correspondent "Y.," that "in these days of professed scientific enlightenment, no experiment ought to be needed to satisfy either the medical profession or the public, that a human being cannot exist without food," it is unfortunately the fact, that what ought to be, is frequently far removed from what is. No one who attends to what passes around him can claim, on behalf of the 19th century, an exemption from either the practice of, or the belief in, the grossest impostures. If such belief is, as can hardly be doubted, productive of most serious mischief to mankind, the dissipation of the superstition, by the exposure of the rottenness of its foundation, must be a work of public service. In affording, therefore, the assistance of this Hospital towards an effort of this description, where the aid of that or some similar institution appeared indispensable to its success, I was, as I believed, acting at once in the interests of the public, and within the legitimate scope of the authority entrusted to me.

Upon the other point I would simply observe, that I relied, as I conceive I was justified in doing, upon the medical practitioner in charge of the case doing his duty. The details of management could only be properly settled upon the spot. Any interference on my part in that matter, while involving the Hospital in a responsibility which I should not have been justified in entailing upon it, could hardly have been of any practical benefit. If the practitioner in charge, or the other members of the Committee (which included, as I am informed, several medical men), required further advice, it would, I was sure, be afforded by the very competent Physician through whom I had been communicated with.

I have the honour to be, Sir, your obedient servant,

THOMAS TURNER.

Treasurer's-house, Guy's Hospital, Dec. 24.

To the Editor of "The Times."

Sir,—In answer to the letter of your correspondent "Y.," and to the remarks on the Welsh Fasting-Girl contained in your leading article of to-day, I beg leave to state that a request was made to the authorities of Guy's Hospital, that nurses might be sent to Wales, to assist in exposing the imposture. It so happened that the Assistant-Obstetric Physician was asked to forward this application, which he did. The medical staff were not consulted on the matter, and I believe nearly all my colleagues, like myself, knew nothing of the arrangement until it was alluded to in the papers.

I may perhaps be allowed to express the opinion that no medical man of experience would regard such a case as that of the Welsh Fasting-Girl, with any interest whatever. Foolish and mischievous juggling of the kind, is common enough. Had the girl been in Guy's Hospital, she would have been fed had she desired it, or not, and no veto on the part of a parent would have prevented our taking measures to preserve her life.

I have the honour to be, Sir, obediently yours,

THE SENIOR PHYSICIAN TO GUY'S HOSPITAL.

Dec. 24.

The Lancet spoke out with even greater boldness than *The Times* itself.²⁶⁹ On Christmas Day, 1869, was thus headed and worded, one of its "Medical Annotations":—

"STARVED TO DEATH!"

Such is the conclusion which must have forced itself upon the mind of every one, on hearing the end of the Welsh Fasting-Girl—the miserable victim of her own delusions, and of the superstition, ignorance, and fraud of some of those about her. We confess to a feeling of indignation, and a sense of shame, as we read the account of this cruel demonstration of that which needed no proof. The end was inevitable, unless some one stepped in to avert it. The rapid pulse, the depression of temperature—which was probably the immediate cause of death—and the final stage of delirium, are the ordinary phenomena of death by Starvation. It appears to us monstrous that such an occurrence should have taken place in the nineteenth century. The two years' fasting, was a gross imposition, which the careful weighing of the patient before and after a few days' watching, might have demonstrated. The girl was no doubt the victim of a diseased volition, and an hysterical aversion to food on her part, was so fostered by everything that took place around her, that it even dominated the stronger natural instincts. That she took some food, however, before the watching, the result of that experiment must have proved to all. The duty of the Sister and nurses was not to prevent the child from taking food, but to discover whether any was taken; and they seem to us to have discharged their part in the transaction, with skill and tenderness. They were warned, we are assured, to be on the alert for the symptoms of exhaustion, and to meet them by the timely use of nutriment. They were, we assume, instructed by the daily medical attendant, and we have no hesitation in saying that it was his duty, on perceiving any such symptoms, to have acted with promptitude and decision. He ought to have warned the parents in unmistakable terms, that if the girl died from the effects of abstinence from food, they would be held guilty, legally and morally, of her death, and be made responsible for it. In the event of their refusal to administer nutriment, he should unquestionably have assumed the responsibility of doing so. Some of the members of the Medical Committee appear to have perceived that they might be made to occupy a false position, and they therefore wisely retired. Members of the medical profession have often been accused of rising like one man in order to place their backs against the door to investigation. They had not gauged, it was said, all the facts of Physiology and Pathology. From the first moment that we heard of this so-called miracle, we did not hesitate to characterize it as a gross imposition. Every scientific man knew that it was a palpable absurdity, and in contravention of all known laws and experience, to suppose that the temperature, and the development of tissue, could have been maintained without any waste or change of substance. The only medical aspect of the case, of any interest, ought to have been the cure of the child, and this would have been mainly induced by moral means, easily accomplished in the wards of an Hospital, whither she ought to

have been removed long ago. So deluded were those who ought to have known better, that our opinions were, of course, rejected by many, as the arrogant expressions of professional prejudice. The case will, we trust, meet with a searching investigation. That some one had been fraudulently and surreptitiously supplying this miserable girl with food, there can be no shadow of doubt, and the medical attendants should not have allowed themselves to have been in the least degree influenced, as one of them appears to have been, by those who were obviously interested in the maintenance of the fraud. The practical lesson is clear—the medical profession should have nothing to do, directly or indirectly, with the investigation of any of the absurd stories arising, from time to time, out of ignorance, deceit, or superstition. The sacrifice of this child ought to be enough, in all conscience, to make any future attempts at similar impostures penal.

The Secretary of State for the Home Department at length took the initiative. The Law Officers of the Crown were consulted. A correspondence passed between the Treasury-Office and the Coroner, who furnished the Solicitors to the Treasury, with a copy of the depositions taken at the inquest. This was subsequently forwarded from the Treasury-Office to the Magistrate's Clerk of the District. At one time certain members of the General Committee feared that they would be included in an indictment for conspiracy; in fact, at first it was under the consideration of the Law Officers of the Crown, that the whole of the Committee should be summoned.²⁷⁰

It was, however, advised that proceedings should be taken only against the medical gentlemen who accepted the responsibility of superintending the watching, as well as against both the parents of the deceased child.

The Government accordingly resolved that summonses should be issued against all these persons, and that a Magisterial inquiry should take place.

Mr. St. John Wontner (of the firm of Messrs. Wontner and Sons, agents to the Treasury Solicitors) visited the locality in order to obtain the necessary information, to collect evidence, and prepare the case previous to the instruction of Counsel. Mr. Wontner, on a subsequent visit, took out the summonses, which "were served on Saturday, February 26th, 1870, on the following medical gentlemen":²⁷⁰—Thomas Lewis, Physician, Messrs. John Hughes and James Rowlands, Surgeons, all of the town of Carmarthen; Charles Cæsar Corsellis, Physician,

and Henry Harries Davies, Surgeon, both of the town of Llandyssil, in the county of Cardigan. Summonses were also served on the parents of the girl—namely, Evan Jacob, of Lletherneuadd, in the parish of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, in the county of Carmarthen, farmer, and Hannah Jacob, his wife. The summonses cited each of the above to appear before the Magistrates at Llandyssil, on Monday, February 28th, 1870, on a charge of “that you did on the 17th day of December last, at Lletherneuadd, in the parish of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, in the county of Carmarthen aforesaid, feloniously kill and slay one Sarah Jacob, of Lletherneuadd aforesaid, against the peace of Our Lady the Queen, Her Crown and Dignity, and contrary to the statute in that case made and provided.”²⁷⁰

The renewal of judicial proceedings under a Government prosecution, coupled with the fact that the accused medical gentlemen held all of them good social, and some of them important official, positions, in the locality, tended much indeed to increase the public excitement on the case. Dr. Lewis, a Graduate in Medicine of the University of London, and a contributor to medical literature, was not only Physician to the Carmarthenshire Infirmary, but also a Magistrate of the Borough of Carmarthen. Mr. John Hughes, a Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons of England, was not only, with other public professional appointments, Surgeon to the Carmarthenshire Infirmary, but also Coroner for the borough of Carmarthen, Deputy-Coroner for the county, and a Borough-Magistrate. Mr. James Rowlands, a Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons of England, was Surgeon to the Carmarthenshire Infirmary and to the County Gaol, a Magistrate and Coroner for Kidwelly. Dr. Corsellis was a retired Physician, and F.L.S., temporarily sojourning at Llandyssil for the sake of the salmon-fishing. Mr. H. H. Davies was Surgeon to the Carmarthen and Cardigan Railway Works.

A great feeling of sympathy was generally felt for them.

On Monday, February 28th, 1870, four of these gentlemen, together with the parents of Sarah Jacob, appeared in answer to their summonses. Dr. Corsellis

being absent in Essex, wrote an explanatory letter to the Bench, on which were sitting Colonel William Price Lewes, of Llysnewydd; Edward Crompton Lloyd Fitzwilliams, Esquire, of Adpar Hill; and Arthur Howell Jones, Esq., of Penyrallt, "three of her Majesty's Justices of the Peace for the county of Carmarthen."

The inquiry took place daily until its termination, before the same Magistrates, in a long, low, close room, in which a very tall man would be necessitated to remove his hat, situate over a stable and brewhouse, belonging to the Wilkes' Head Inn, Llandyssil, in the parish of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth, in the county of Carmarthen. The approach to the Court was by means of a flight of stone, or rather slate, steps, running up the (out) side of the stable; in fact, the room appeared to be the loft to the stable. An arrangement of common deal tables and forms, made up the necessary accessories of justice in this case of the Queen on the prosecution of John Greenwood, Esquire, Q.C., the Solicitor to her Majesty's Treasury against "the aforesaid defendants."

All the persons engaged during the ten days' inquiry, were always exceedingly glad when the mid-day hour of adjournment came, and the stifling atmosphere of the Bar of Justice was exchanged for the Bar-parlour of the Wilkes' Head Inn. There, over an excellent hot-luncheon, Magistrates, Solicitors, Witnesses, and Defendants pleasantly commingled, and ignored for one half-hour their relative positions.

Mr. C. E. Coleridge, of the South Wales Circuit (instructed by Mr. St. John Wontner, agent to the Treasury-Solicitors), conducted the prosecution on behalf of the Crown.

Mr. Lewis Bishop, Solicitor, Llandilo, appeared for Evan Jacob, and Hannah his wife.

The four medical gentlemen were undefended.

Mr. Coleridge, addressing the Bench in opening the case, said:²⁷⁰—
Sir, I appear here in behalf of the Crown, instructed by the Solicitors of Her Majesty's Treasury, who, after a very careful consultation with the Law Officers of the Crown, have come to the conclusion that this case is one that demands a most searching investigation at your hands. If you should think fit, therefore, after hearing the evidence, to send the case for trial before another tribunal, everything will be

done that will be necessary to meet the justice of the case. If you should not think fit, we must bow to your decision in the matter. Although this is a joint charge against these five gentlemen, I shall go on with a separate charge against the father and mother of the girl who is the subject matter of this inquiry. There are two charges—the one against them, and the other against the gentlemen of the medical profession. But although the whole case must be brought against them all, yet in the first place I shall confine myself to that against the father and mother. Whilst I am upon that point, I shall show you that although doubtless the general rule of the law is, that a wife, acting under the control of her husband, is not liable for her acts, still she may be, and it will be on my part to prove that in this case, she was acting independently of him. And if, although living under the same roof with him, she has taken the initiative and is only making him her tool, then the rule will not apply, and she would be equally guilty. If she were under his control, the rule of law would apply, and she would not be amenable to this charge. It was at first under the consideration of the Law Officers of the Crown, whether the whole of the Committee who acted in this case should be summoned, but upon further and the fullest consideration it was thought that the exigencies of the case would be met if the medical gentlemen who undertook, with the skill and experience which they are presumed to have, to watch the case on the part of the Committee generally—that it would be sufficient for them to appear before you with the evidence I shall adduce against them, without summoning the rest of the Committee. This case is familiar to you all, having occurred in this neighbourhood, and having been fully reported in the public papers; still it is necessary I should go through the history of it, and that I should go back so far as November, 1867. This part of the case I shall confine entirely to the father and mother. Whilst upon that, I shall show, what must be known to you all, that in law the father and mother are liable to provide proper necessaries, if they are able, for their children—that they are not allowed by law to suffer their children to starve themselves, but are bound to use every means of providing them with food; and while under the control of the father and mother, they ought to be compelled to take food. And if in this instance the father and mother have not compelled their child to take food, as I shall make out by the facts, then they are guilty of such negligence as in the eye of the law amounts to manslaughter. In this case, Sir, the father is a farmer not able to plead poverty, but pretty well-to-do in the world, living in this neighbourhood, and having seven children.

Mr. Coleridge then gave a succinct history of the case, *ab initio*, and during his address stated:—

When the girl was examined shortly after her death, under her left arm, which was always stated to be paralysed (and it must be mentioned also that her left side was said to be dead, and that she was incapable of moving her leg), there was found, as if worn by some hard substance, a cavity capable of containing something like a half-pint bottle. The suggestion is, that from time to time after

the bed was made, a bottle was put under her arm which contained some strong nutriment, of which the child partook in secrecy beneath the bed-clothes.

Mr. Coleridge then detailed the various steps taken to institute the last watching of the girl, commenting on all the Suggestions which had been forwarded from London and adopted by the Committee. After the Agreement signed by the father, and already alluded to, had been read, Mr. Fitzwilliams observed:—“That is merely an agreement to grant a licence to watch.” Mr. Coleridge pressed the point, “That when the Doctors did come to see the girl, they did not take those steps which they were bound to do.” Mr. Fitzwilliams rejoined:—“But how do you make the Doctors responsible, after they gave orders that the wishes of the parents should not be prevented?” Alluding specially to one of the medical men, Mr. Coleridge observed:—

Mr. Hughes, I find, wished to examine the child himself, and satisfy himself as to her real condition. That was very creditable to Mr. Hughes, and so is the fact also that he resigned when he was not allowed to do so. But I shall have to submit to you that he ought to have gone further, and as one fellow Christian is bound to (assist) another, so he was bound to see that food was given to the child, and even forcibly if necessary; and he ought to have called in the aid of the law to insist that food should be given.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—That is what he ought to have done.

The learned Counsel thus concluded his opening remarks:—

As regards the case against the mother, as far as I am instructed, it appears the mother was very active during the whole period during which this story gained circulation, in looking after the child. The mother was naturally the person to attend to her own child. The father would be absent, as was his duty, to provide food. The mother would both by law and custom be expected to attend more to the family and to her child, and especially to a child in that delicate condition. Therefore we have brought an action (? indictment) against the mother. When money was given we find the father said—“Do not give it to me; put it on the child's bosom.” And no doubt plenty of money was given. Then we find that there were all sorts of books also given the child. In fact, looking at the whole matter, the fantastic dress of the child for the purpose of exhibition, the money, the books, and everything, it appears to me to be a sort of dramatic performance. Now, if I prove one tithe of what I have thus laid before you, it will be your duty to send the father for trial. As regards the wife you will consider that the defence may be that she was acting under the control of her husband. We ask, however, that she shall be committed, in order that there may be a public

investigation, and the whole thing should be sifted. That is all I think it is necessary to go into at present. It is not necessary for me to go into details the nurses may have to give you. And now I will apply myself to the position in which the Doctors are. You know, Sir, that any people combining and conspiring together for an unlawful purpose, from which conspiracy death happens, are in law guilty of Manslaughter. I shall submit to you that the Doctors having acted on the Committee, although the Committee are not before you, for it has been considered advisable by the Law Officers of the Crown they should not be included in this charge; I repeat that the Doctors having accepted the invitation of an illegally constituted society—for had it not been for the watching, the child would not have died—they undertook to perform an illegal act. The Doctors undertook the charge of the watching; they were to see, to put it plainly, that the child was not allowed to go on further in this deceit. But what did the Doctors do? They go from time to time to see the child; they receive the reports of the nurses. They know from the nurses and from their own observations, and from the directions that had been given, that no food could enter the child's mouth. Indeed, it was apparently to prevent it that Mr. Hughes insisted upon not having the other girls to assist the nurses. They ought to have insisted upon the girl being fed, but instead of doing that, instead of remonstrating, they simply go and say—"She may last a little bit yet; there is still heat about her mouth." Mr. Davies goes to the Clergyman, because he is very much frightened, but even he does not then insist upon the girl being fed. The Doctors had constituted themselves the temporary guardians of the child. The nurses were merely their servants, to carry out their behests. The nurses merely acted as unskilled people in the hands of the Doctors, who must be considered the skilled persons. The Doctors assumed the whole responsibility of the nurses watching in such a way, and by their directions, that the child could not get food. They went there from time to time to see how things were going on. They might have asked the father to give food to the child. But when things grew somewhat alarming, Mr. Davies sent down to the brother-in-law of Evan Jacob, the father of the child, and told him what was the state of things. That was on the Thursday, and he wished the brother-in-law to come up and get the father to give food, instead of giving food himself. It might have been given in various ways; it might have been given by the stomach-pump, it might have been given by injecting it through the nostrils, or it might have been forced down her throat. But nothing of the kind was done. Mr. Davies simply complains to the parson, and then sends for the brother-in-law. Well, he comes up and tries to get the father to give food. The father refuses; the mother refuses. He then tries to get the child to take food. But it is too late. The child will not take water. Now, does it not all point to this state of things, an illegally-constituted Committee formed to commit an act which might result in death? The Doctors were the agents of that Committee for carrying out their illegal purposes. As I said, we find that death ensues. If, as I am told, there were two of the Doctors who really did believe in the whole story, and others who did not, it is hard to say which were the worse—those who believed that persons

could live for two years without food, or those who did not believe it. There were evidently two classes of Doctors in the case, and those who did not believe in the thing, still allowed it to go on. It seems to me, if you make a choice in the matter, the disbelievers are the more guilty of the two. They had a perfect knowledge in their own minds, of what the end must be, whereas those who favoured the possibility of the story had really a *bonâ fide* belief the child would go on.

On the application of the medical men, the case stood adjourned to the above-mentioned Wilkes' Head Inn till Thursday, the 3rd day of March, 1870, at 11 A.M.,²⁷¹ on which day the Magisterial inquiry was resumed, before the same three Justices of the Peace.

Mr. Coleridge again appeared for the prosecution, instructed by Mr. H. St. John Wontner; Messrs. James Rowlands and John Hughes were represented by Mr. Robinson Smith, Solicitor, Swansea; Mr. Clifton, Solicitor, Bristol, appeared for Dr. Corsellis, and Mr. Davies, Surgeon; Mr. Thomas Jones, Solicitor, Llandovery, for Dr. Lewis; and Mr. Lewis Bishop for Evan and Hannah Jacob: (the same legal gentlemen and the respective defendants appeared daily until the termination of the inquiry).

The case was gone into in the same pent-hole as the opening examination, and the room was throughout the day crowded, making the atmosphere very disagreeable.

Mr. Coleridge rose, and said he might mention that he intended calling witnesses connecting the case from the first, until the girl's death, and he would then submit as a legal issue, that this Committee were all liable, but the Doctors, being delegates of the Committee, took the *onus* upon their own shoulders, and rendered them guilty of the offence with which they were charged. He quoted the decision of Justice Littledale in the case of *Rex. v. Perkins*, 4, Carrington's Reports, where he held, that not only were the principals in a prize-fight, which ended fatally, guilty of manslaughter, but also all bystanders who were present for the purpose of taking part in the fight. He submitted the present case was analogous to this decision, and he would now proceed to call witnesses.²⁷²

The Rev. Evan Jones, B.D., underwent a long examination and cross-examination, which lasted till a quarter to five P.M. The facts he detailed have been already embodied in this history.

The Rev. Wm. Thomas, M.A., Unitarian minister, next repeated what he had previously stated before the Coroner. Upon this witness stating that the Medical Committee was appointed "that no danger might arise to the girl from the continued watching,"²⁷³ Mr. Fitzwilliams observed:²⁷⁴—

What harm could the nurses, merely watching, do to the girl when the father was at home, in order to do his duty?—which I would have made him in a very few hours, if you had come to me.

At 5.45 P.M. the Court adjourned until Friday, March 4th, at 2 P.M., the Magistrates having a Petty Sessional meeting at Newcastle-Emlyn in the morning. The proceedings created great excitement, and the Court House was crammed throughout the day.²⁷⁵

On Friday, March 4th, at 2 P.M., the inquiry was resumed. "The room was again crowded, causing the atmosphere to be anything but pleasant."²⁷⁶ The Rev. Wm. Thomas's examination was continued. He read some of the correspondence which had taken place between "certain members of the Medical Committee and himself." The pith of these letters is previously embodied in this history. During his cross-examination by Mr. Robinson Smith, the Local Secretary quoted the following most proper suggestions from the important letter of Mr. John Hughes to him, dated Dec. 4th, 1869:—"That the same medical man should visit all through the watching," and "that it must be distinctly explained that the object of the watching was not the withholding of food, but ascertaining whether food was given." Whereupon the following legal controversy occurred:—

Mr. Coleridge—I stated that in my opening address.

Mr. Smith—That is important.

Mr. Coleridge—We say that there was gross negligence in carrying out the object.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—We hear to-day that the parental control of the child continued during the watching.

Mr. Coleridge—But we say that the child died, and that the medical men ought to have prevented it. (He then proceeded to illustrate his argument by supposing a person to be drowning in a shallow pond; it would then be the duty of any passer-by to help him out, and he would be culpable in the eye of the law if he did not.)

Mr. Smith contended that there were cases of felony in which Mr. Coleridge's argument would not apply.

Mr. Coleridge—But take a case of suicide.

Mr. Smith—But suicide is felony.

Mr. Fitzwilliams said he thought the analogy adduced by Mr. Coleridge as to the culpability might be pushed too far.

Mr. Coleridge said the facts in this instance were plain. There was an original Committee formed, and they appointed a Committee of Doctors who took the whole of the responsibility on their shoulders by consenting to act.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—The Doctors were selected to see if there were dangerous symptoms, and they said they did not see any.

Mr. Coleridge—Yes. Mr. Davies distinctly admits it. He sent for the brother-in-law of Evan Jacob on that account.

Mr. Fitzwilliams thought Mr. Davies would not admit that he saw such symptoms. Therefore, all that Mr. Coleridge could contend for was crass ignorance.

Mr. Coleridge denied that it was to be absolutely defined as crass ignorance. He would rather say—crass ignorance or gross neglect.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—No; if you look at it as gross neglect, it then tells against the nurses. They were continually with the child. I am waiting to see where and when the case is likely to end. (Laughter.)

Mr. Coleridge affirmed that the evidence did at present tell powerfully against the Doctors, for neglecting to do what they ought to have done, and for experimentalizing.

Mr. Fitzwilliams said he must deny that absolutely.

Mr. Coleridge said he should evidently think so, even from the correspondence. There it was evident Dr. Lewis looked at the case as deciding matters of Science.

Mr. Fitzwilliams thought the correspondence did not show it in the sense intended by Mr. Coleridge.²⁷⁷

Whilst detailing his first visit to the girl, the Local Secretary said:—"I went, and returned from there, an unbeliever;" and in his re-examination he added:—"I considered the fasting a farce."²⁷⁸

In fact, the Rev. Wm. Thomas had been a staunch opponent of credulity, from the very onset. Some of the best of the anonymous letters in the Welsh Press on the side of common sense, and in entire antagonism to the silly deductions after the first watching, are attributed to his pen.

At 6 P.M. the Court adjourned till the next day, Saturday, March 5th, at 10.30 A.M., when the following evidence was adduced:—

Robert Fowler, being sworn, said as follows:²⁷⁸—I am a Doctor of Medicine of Edinburgh University. I am in practice at 145, Bishopsgate Street Without, London. (We then detailed the facts previously recorded in our letter to *The Times*, September 7th, 1869, pp. 29—33, and after describing the condition of the nails of both feet, continued):—I thought they had been cut within a week or a fortnight. There was no difference between the nails of the two feet. Severe disease produces a groove or furrow at the lowest part of the nail; that is produced by the checking of the unguinal growth during the progress of the disease. I did not perceive that groove in any one of the nails. If there had been severe disease, I should have expected to have seen that within six months. It has been stated that the nail of the great toe would take four times as long to grow up as the others.²⁷⁹

I endeavoured to examine her back, for bed-sores or pressure-marks. I did not—the parents would not permit me; they said it would bring on a fit. I did not see her tongue. She spoke in a natural tone, but the voice was low, and she spoke in monosyllables. The parents (both I think) said that there had been no evacuation of the bowels, and also, I understood, from the bladder for a period of two years. When I turned down the bed-clothes, I smelt a whiff of urine, and I observed on the under blanket, near the feet, a patch as of dried fæcal matter about the size of the palm of the hand. I could not judge how long it had been there—it was quite dry. As to persons in a normal state of health, my opinion, formed by my reading only, is that they may live without food and drink from seven to ten days without serious symptoms, or death, arising. By serious symptoms, I mean restlessness and alteration in the pulse (quickenings), and in the voice becoming more feeble and hollow; emaciation,—an alteration in the aspect of the countenance,—symptoms indicative of brain-affection,—pallor,—eyes getting sunk,—a darkish colour under the eyelid also; these are symptoms which would be detected by medical men. If water could be obtained, the most extreme case on record is fifty-eight days between the commencement of the watching, and death. That is the longest period mentioned in works of recognised authority—it is a case mentioned by Guy,²⁸⁰ of a prisoner at Toulouse. There is a case in Casper,²⁸¹ of a person having fasted ten days and recovered; but on reading the case, I find that on one day he had a few drops of ethereal spirits, and on another day his lips were said to be moistened with water. I should have imagined the taking of any spirits, such as eau-de-Cologne, would tend to prolong life. The cases I have referred to, are those of full-grown men; and as between a full-grown man and a girl of thirteen, I should presume the principle of vitality would be stronger in the full-grown man, and under exactly similar conditions the man would survive. I did not observe in that girl, anything to take her out of the normal physical condition. I believe she could have got out of bed voluntarily at the time I saw her. In my opinion, if the house had been on fire,²⁸² that girl could then have got up, and run out of the house. I told Mr. T. E. Davies so after we had left the house, and I formed that opinion from finding no physical cause to prevent her. I had formed an opinion of her muscular condition when I examined her, and considering the time she had been alleged to have remained in bed, she exhibited a very fair muscular development^{282*} for a girl of her age; and in my judgment, and from my observation, I should say she had not been in bed, without using her limbs, for so long as twenty-three months. I examined the heels and ankles of the girl, and saw no indication of sores on them. I should have expected to have found bed-sores or marks of pressure there. I found none. She was lying on a poor thin bed, on a sacking; it was a soft bed, but I can't say what it was made of. I felt the bed, and could feel the ropes of the sacking through the bed. Such a bed would, in my opinion, be more likely to produce sores than a more luxurious one.

Mr. Coleridge—*Q.* Supposing the child to have been in the same condition last December as when you saw her in August last, and not having had any food or water, how long in your

opinion would she have lived without showing dangerous symptoms?—*A.* It is extremely difficult to answer that question without having been present during the watching of the girl.²⁸³

By the Court—I never had a case which has been called Cataleptic or Pseudo-Cataleptic Hysteria. I have no personal knowledge of either.

By Mr. Coleridge—There is an abnormal state of health which would enable a person to hold out fasting, for a longer time than a person in a normal state of health. That state would be Insanity. In that state I should say that a person might live as long again without water (and I should infer the same with water) as a person in a normal condition; according to my personal experience, that state is the only one I am cognizant of.²⁸⁴

Cross-examined by Mr. Bishop (on behalf of the parents)—I cannot say how long a person suffering from Catalepsy, or Pseudo-Catalepsy, can exist without food, as I know nothing of the diseases. I have been in practice for myself for the last twenty years; two years of which were in the Loughborough Infirmary. I have a large practice, and my chief time is taken up with my practice. I come down frequently to this country, particularly to Cardigan. I went from Cardigan to see the girl by the invitation of Mr. T. E. Davies of Cardigan; I went from curiosity, and a desire to make out the medical facts of the case. I had not the least notion that it was a true story, as told by the mother or anybody else. Loughborough was a small Infirmary, with three wards, when I was there.²⁸⁵ Last summer I wrote a letter to *The Times* on the subject. At that time I had an idea that the girl suffered from some kind of Hysteria: I called it at that time Simulative Hysteria, and thought at that time that each convulsion she had had, or was said to have had, was Hysterical Epilepsy, and that it might be probably associated or coupled with a habit of prolonged fasting, and that in her case she had acquired a habit of prolonged fasting. Hysteria has frequently, as one of its symptoms, the *globus hystericus*, or ball in the throat, which is attributable to a spasmodic action of the gullet, giving the sensation of a ball in the throat. I expect that with an hysterical girl, with that habit of fasting and simulation of hers, the attempt to swallow food would bring on that sensation, which might (unless she used her will) be followed up by the rejection of food, and might produce an indisposition and determination not to take food in public. Hysteria can mimic almost any form of disease, which non-professionals might not be able to discover. At that time I thought the apparent loss of the power of motion in the left side, was one of the symptoms of Hysteria. Sometimes hysterical patients have a great disposition to practise deception, and I have known cases where children so affected have deceived their parents as to their power to move their limbs, and that in such cases, the parents have been deceived until medical men were called in. And I have known cases where medical men themselves at first have been deceived. I have known cases, and read them, where children have refused to partake of food in the presence of any one. There was a deposit on the under blanket on the 30th of August last, but I was not aware that the girl's little sister slept with her—I have heard it since. Hysteria is sometimes accompanied by symptoms of affection of the brain, such as coma or unconsciousness, and hysterical

delirium. On sounding the stomach I heard a gurgling. I had no doubt in my own mind that the child might have got out of bed if she liked. From my examination of the girl, I did not detect any physical signs of precocious puberty.

By the Court—The *globus hystericus* ought not to prevent any one forcing food on the patient *if it was required*.

Cross-examined by Mr. Jones (for Dr. Lewis)—A person could live longer without food, if he had water. A person might live longer without water in a humid atmosphere, than in a dry atmosphere.²⁸⁶ I made as minute an examination of the child in August last as I was allowed to make. The parents refused to allow me to examine the back. I was asked to be careful not to do more than was absolutely necessary, for fear of bringing on the fits. That was the reason assigned. I was enabled to examine the child sufficiently to form an opinion of her state, and I did satisfy myself about it. I did not examine sufficiently to satisfy myself whether there were any bed-sores or bed-marks on the back. There is an authentic case on record, where fifty-eight days was the period a man is said to have lived without solid food.²⁸⁷

Cross-examined by Mr. Clifton (for Dr. Corsellis, and Mr. Henry H. Davies) — The *globus hystericus* is a spasmodic affection of the gullet. I should say it was not dangerous to put the tube of the stomach-pump down the throat, when the spasms are prevailing—*i e.*, if proper skill was used: there would be no danger of rupturing the gullet, if proper skill was used. I have not myself, in practice, seen the tube of the pump withdrawn on account of the spasm. It is my opinion that no sensible medical man should have taken the medical charge or treatment of this child, unless guaranteed perfect control over her. It is also my opinion that it would not be extremely difficult for any medical man to make up his mind as to the diagnosis of the case. I do not consider that I have made any statement contrary to what I have now stated.²⁸⁸ I have no doubt that I myself have been deceived by malingering patients. Hysterical patients are very prone to malingering.

Cross-examined by Mr. Smith (on behalf of Messrs. Hughes and Rowlands)—As regards the assertion of the girl living without food for such a time, I regarded it as shamming. I considered the child as the subject of a disease which had manifested itself in the form of Hysteria. There are various forms of Hysteria; and amongst other symptoms, this girl's disease had manifested itself in the form of deception.²⁸⁹ It was my belief, at that time, that the girl had deceived her parents.

By the Court—Assuming the child to have been frightened by the breaking of the bottle on the 14th day of December, I should not have considered for half an hour afterwards that her pulse at 114 would *per se* be indicative of danger.

Re-examined by Mr. Coleridge—I should consider if the pulse was 140, it would show danger, but I do not consider the pulse alone, a sure criterion of Hysteria as a disease, but I should consider the acceleration of the pulse, an indication of danger in any disease;²⁹⁰ I mean a persistent acceleration of the pulse. I will not bind myself to the impossibility of the pulse getting up to any height, temporarily from causes of excitement. I mean by "a long time," that the girl could go

about two days without food, without showing some of the symptoms of exhaustion. In my opinion, the early symptoms of exhaustion in this case ought to have been detected by an ordinary medical man. At the time I saw the girl, I could not form an estimate of the child's power of endurance, or the number of days she might exist without food, or without showing symptoms of exhaustion. Hysterical persons are apt to sham as to living without food.²⁹¹ My opinion is that if the girl was suffering under Hysteria, and had surreptitiously obtained food, she might have presented the appearance I saw, but I should have expected to see bed-sores, or pressure-marks, and less muscular development. Many forms of Hysteria affect the physical health but slightly. I do not believe she was twenty-three months in bed without food. There are other means besides by the stomach-pump, of administering food to patients—*i.e.* by the bowels, and by a tube passed through the nose, and a certain amount of food is capable of being absorbed by the skin. If she had been a patient of mine, and I had complete control over her from her parents, I would not have allowed her to go on more than one day, without giving her some food. There is more nutriment in tea than in water. Children that don't take food in the presence of their parents, are generally called "night-feeders," and the disease of want of hunger is called "Asitia." My opinion of the girl was—that she was a night-feeder. I said the loss of the power of motion, was attributable to Hysteria. When the *globus hystericus* is present, sucking from a bottle is practicable. I did not see any signs of *globus hystericus* in this girl. It is not visible, except when the paroxysm is on. The spasm may last from half an hour to an hour, which would be a long time, and it might recur. When the paroxysm was over, food could immediately be taken afterwards. The pulse is more variable in Hysteria than in other diseases, because Hysteria is most common in emotional persons, and such persons are very impressionable to slight causes of excitement.

By the Court—Two years' uninterrupted lying in bed would, in my opinion, have caused a greater muscular-wasting than I saw in that girl.

Thomas Edward Davies, being sworn, said as follows:—"I am a Solicitor at Cardigan, in partnership with my father. My father and myself act as agents for Messrs. Lloyd, of Coedmore, and Mr. Longcroft, of Llanina, who are Evan Jacob's landlords. On the 30th of August last I went in company with Dr Fowler and Mr. Robert Rees, of Bristol, to Lletherneuadd. We went into the house. On arriving there we saw the mother. We went straight into the room in which little Sarah was in bed, and I asked Mrs. Jacob if she had any objection to the Doctor examining the child. I told her that he was a doctor from London, and a friend of mine. She said she did not like every doctor to examine the child, as some had been rough with her. I told her Dr. Fowler would not be rough, and then she expressed her willingness. I have been in Court, and have heard Dr. Fowler's account of the way she was dressed; the same is quite correct. About six or eight months previously I had seen the child; she was then in bed. She appeared on the 30th of August better and differently dressed to what she had

been on the first occasion when I saw her. The books were on the bed, as stated by Dr. Fowler. Dr. Fowler examined the child. At Dr. Fowler's request, I asked the mother to let him examine the girl's back, which she refused, because the child was subject to fits. I acted as interpreter between the mother and Dr. Fowler. Whilst the examination was going on, the father came into the room. As we were going away upon the out-premises, I had a conversation with the father. I said to the father, that Dr. Fowler desired me to tell him that the child could be made to eat, provided she was taken to an Infirmary or Hospital.²⁹² Carmarthen was mentioned, I believe. I told him that Dr. Fowler said that she could be made to eat, and be all right in a month.²⁹³ I told him that Dr. Fowler would get her into a London Hospital, if they wished. The father replied that he was unwilling—that if the child was removed, it would be death to her. I told him he was acting very foolishly, and that we did not believe in anything of the fasting for such a long time, and that he was doing the child a great injury, and acting very cruelly in keeping her in bed for such a long time in that state. The father then said he was willing that any doctor should come and cure her, but that he believed that no one but the Great Doctor could cure her. I told him that the doctor had told me that if the house were to take fire, the little girl would be one of the first to run out of it.²⁹⁴ The father then said that a very long time had elapsed since she had evacuated.^{294*}

During our re-examination by Mr. Coleridge, one of the many legal controversies, which cropped up during the inquiry, occurred; and as affording an important insight into the opinion of at least one of the Bench on the legal liability of the Medical Committee, it deserves insertion:—

Mr. Coleridge—If you had been one of the medical men attending her, how long would you have let her go without food?

Mr. Fitzwilliams—That is a long question: it assumes a fallacy against the Doctors. They were not in the position of medical men attending her.

Mr. Coleridge—We are assuming that the medical men misconducted themselves in this case.

Mr. Smith observed, that was just the point that remained to be proved, and involved the whole case.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—Of course you have no right to assume that; there is no evidence of that, whatever.

Mr. Coleridge—We say the medical men did not interfere and administer food when they ought to have done.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—But none of the Doctors were attending her as her medical advisers. They were there simply to look on, and to be consulted by the nurses. Take it at the worst, you cannot put it in any other way than that the Doctors erred in judgment.

Mr. Coleridge—They were there as medical practitioners, to pronounce upon the condition of this girl. We say they combined together, and are responsible for the consequences of the combination, whatever they may be. That is a principle of law. There is a case

reported in the books, that if a man be not a practitioner at all, and undertakes to give medicine and attend to a case, and death ensues from his negligence, that is a case of manslaughter.

Mr. Smith—But it is a very different thing altogether, where a man is not a medical practitioner.

Mr. Coleridge—But take the case of a man who comes into a country parish. If he be a medical practitioner, you seem to infer that he may kill the whole parish, and escape.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—But in that case, he would be an unskilled medical man. That is your misfortune, if you call in an unskilled medical man; and of course you must abide by it. Every man is not as this man (meaning Dr. Fowler).

Mr. Coleridge still persisted that he had a perfect right to put the question to which Mr. Fitzwilliams had taken objection.

Mr. Fitzwilliams said he could not allow it to be put; that it involved the greatest fallacy. There had been no evidence yet given to show that the Doctors were there in the character of medical attendants on the girl, and had charge of her. They were not there to give advice as to her treatment; they had only to see when there were dangerous symptoms.

Mr. Coleridge contended that there had evidently been gross neglect.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—Then you can only say gross neglect on the part of the nurses in not consulting the Doctors.

Mr. T. Jones, Solicitor—And bring an action against the nurses for manslaughter. (Laughter.)

Mr. Fitzwilliams insisted that Mr. Coleridge's question could not be put.

At the close of the sitting, the Chairman (Mr. Fitzwilliams) requested silence whilst he read a letter which he had that morning received. It bore the London postmark, and was addressed "To the Magistrates, Wilk's Head Hotel, Llandyssil." It was written in a fine clear commercial hand, and was as follows:—

"22, Lamb's Conduit-street, Holborn, London, W.C.,
2nd March, 1870.

The Magistrates, &c.,

Gentlemen,—Feeling much interested in the important case which you are investigating, and being fully convinced that the fasting was *bonâ fide* (loud laughter), and consequently of the non-culpability of the defendants, I have thought it my bounden duty to say a few words in their behalf, which I trust, under the circumstances, you will pardon.

I have had extensive experience in protracted fastings—(renewed laughter)—and in proof of my assertion, I am perfectly willing, and now offer myself to fast from bite or sup—(loud laughter)—for one month, under the strictest surveillance. (Oh, oh.)

I am now in a perfect normal condition, with good appetite, and in robust health.

Again apologizing for this intrusion, and trusting you will read this from the bench,

I am, Gentlemen, yours most respectfully,
p.p. GEORGE ALDERSLEY, J. T.

The Chairman in reading the letter, said he supposed "p. p." meant "parish priest." As to the initials at the end he could not make them out; they appeared to be some Roman Catholic's hieroglyphics. (Laughter.)²⁹⁵

The Court then adjourned till 10.30 A.M., on Monday the 7th day of March.

On the opening of the Court Mr. John Griffith (Gohebydd) was examined. He stated that he had not in his possession either the "letter," dated Nov. 27th, 1869, or the "Suggestions" received from Dr. Phillips of Guy's Hospital. Although he had well searched for them, he had not seen either since the meeting at the "Eagle" on Nov. 30th, 1869.²⁹⁶

Mr. John Jenkins, one of the reporters of the *Welshman*, was therefore called and sworn. He identified the printed "letter" and "Suggestions" in that paper of Dec. 3rd, 1869, as correct copies of the originals given to him by Mr. Griffith before the aforesaid meeting.

The printed "letter" and "Suggestions" were then read.

The Rev. William Thomas added also somewhat to his previous evidence, and produced certain letters (already noticed in full or in part as having passed) between Dr. Lewis, Mr. John Hughes, and himself. In a postscript of one, was the statement that "the parents and the whole household afforded every facility to the nurses²⁹⁶ during the eight days' watching."

Elizabeth Clinch, the Sister-Nurse, then underwent a long examination and cross-examination. By the aid of her Diary (previously referred to), she gave in very minute detail, a most interesting record and account of the girl's progressive state and symptoms during the watches, which were conjointly undertaken by Anne Jones and herself.

These details, as well as several other extracts from the Diary, have been so completely embodied in this history, that it would be superfluous to reproduce them.

Elizabeth Clinch averred that the girl "never complained of feeling worse."²⁹⁶ Sarah Attrick, one of the nurses, gave also some slight evidence before the adjournment of the Court on this day.

On the re-opening of the Court on Tuesday, March 8th,

at 10.30 A.M., another of the legal controversies was pursued as follows:—

Mr. Smith, on the opening of the Court, said—Your Worships will remember that upon the cross-examination of Dr. Fowler, a question was raised with respect to the admission of a letter sent by him to *The Times* newspaper. No doubt the law formerly would prevent it, but by the 28 Vic., chap. 18, sec. 5, the law is considerably altered. I shall read from Roscoe's "Law of Evidence," the last edition; and on the law in a criminal case he says:—"A witness may be cross-examined as to the previous statements made by him in writing, or reduced into writing, relative to the subject matter of the indictment or proceeding, without such writing being shown to him; but if it is intended to contradict such witness by the writing, his attention must, before such contradictory proof can be given, be called to those parts of the writing which are to be used for the purpose of so contradicting him, provided always that it shall be competent for the judge at any time during the trial to require the production of the writing for his inspection, and he may thereupon make such use of it for the purpose of the trial as he may think fit."

Mr. Fitzwilliams said that writing, was a very different thing; Mr. Smith had proposed to cross-examine Dr. Fowler on printed matter.

Mr. Smith—We proposed to ask him whether he had written a certain letter which was published.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—But writing and printing are very different. It would be hard to bind a man by a printed document, even when printed from his own manuscript. You must first prove it is printed as it is written.

Mr. Smith—But we are entitled to read to him certain words and ask him—"Have you written that?" And we could do it without seeing the writing itself.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—But you must be content with his answer.

Mr. Smith—No doubt we must be content with his answer.

Mr. Coleridge submitted that the fallacy in Mr. Smith's argument was, that he substituted printed matter for writing.

Mr. Fitzwilliams said they would deal with the matter whenever it again arose during the proceedings.²⁹⁷

The examination and cross-examination of Elizabeth Clinch and her co-nurse Anne Jones were completed, and the examination of Sarah Attrick was resumed. In addition to such of their statements as already form part of this history, we would observe that Sister Clinch (especially) gave in her evidence abundant testimony of the fondness for her nurses both displayed and expressed by Sarah Jacob, who would frequently ask to be kissed by them.²⁹⁸ It is evident that the Sister-Nurse was the very first to notice the progressive symptoms, and the increasing exhaustion; and she also appears to have rightly estimated the daily change, and

the threatened danger. Nevertheless, in reply to the Court, she said:—"I did not cause the father to be asked to be allowed to give her food; that was not my duty. My instructions were only to see if she did take food. When Messrs. Hughes and Rowlands visited on the Tuesday, the Sister-Nurse in cross-examination said, "I did not ask their advice in any way." She also expressed her opinion that "on that Tuesday afternoon there was nothing to indicate danger, to a person seeing her (the child) for the first time. She was not looking so well as at the first. For a person said to be suffering from disease, and lying in bed so long, she was looking pretty well. There was nothing about her to create suspicion, or to indicate danger; the only thing was a nasty smell about the bed," &c.²⁹⁸ Again, on the last morning of the watch:—"I made no suggestion, either myself or through Jones, to the father or mother as to the treatment of the child."

Anne Jones, in her cross-examination, said of the girl:—"Her condition was very variable, sometimes pleased and sometimes depressed."²⁹⁸

Except on the morning before and on the morning of the death, it did not appear that any one of the nurses ever expressed an opinion that there was a necessity for sending for a medical man.

On Wednesday, March 9th, at 10.30 A.M., the examination of Sarah Attrick was resumed. On cross-examination by Mr. Robinson Smith, she adhered to the statement that John Daniel told her "the father said he would knock the first man down, who offered her (the girl) food."²⁹⁸

Mr. Coleridge—This is such strong evidence against the father, that it is essential he should know what was said. He does not contradict it clearly.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—The case is already so strong against the father, that I do not think it could be made stronger anyhow.

Mr. Bishop—I submit it is not so, Sir.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—I am afraid that will be the judgment of my Brother-Magistrates and myself, when we come to consider the evidence.²⁹⁹

After Sarah Attrick's cross-examination, her co-nurse, Sarah Palmer, underwent a similar ordeal.

Their evidence has been embodied in this history.

Dr. Robert Fowler was then recalled and, in answer to Mr. Coleridge, stated:—"On the 9th of December the girl,—I should consider from the symptoms I have heard, was in sound physical health."³⁰⁰ Mr. Coleridge then said, "he should ask questions on the evidence the Doctor had heard, and he asked the Attorneys representing the defendants not to object to his examining Dr. Fowler on the assumption that no disease was found when the post-mortem examination was made. This was not assented to."³⁰¹

Mr. John Phillips was then sworn, and said:—I am a Surgeon in practice at Newcastle-Emlyn in this county. I assisted in making the post-mortem examination of Sarah Jacob three days after her death. From the symptoms, and from what I saw, I attribute her death to exhaustion from want of food. No food whatever was found in her stomach, and no liquid in her bladder. Nothing about the heart that I should attribute to anything else but exhaustion. There was very little blood in the body—less than I should expect in a healthy person. I found no physical disease whatever. The body was in a perfectly healthy and natural state.

By the Court—Cataplexy and Hysteria show no symptoms after death that I am aware of. "Ddim o ddimwedd"³⁰² does not absolutely exclude the taking of anything—it depends on the emphasis. She was approaching puberty.

Cross-examined by Mr. Jones—I found worms in the intestines—two large ones and three small ones. Worms in any considerable quantity cause disturbance in the nervous system of the individual that has them.

Re-examined—The worms I found were not numerous enough to cause death.³⁰³

Dr. Robert Fowler³⁰³ was then recalled, and after the first question was put to him by Mr. Coleridge, Mr. Smith asked whether Dr. Fowler was to speak as a scientific man?

The Bench—"Yes. It is merely the opinion of a scientific man, and you can call other scientific evidence to rebut it."³⁰⁴

Throughout the whole of the proceedings, no attempt was ever made to "rebut" the opinion expressed, by "other scientific evidence."

The cross-examination was, however (as indeed it had been throughout the whole case), exceedingly severe. Four sharp and shrewd minds, well and daily accustomed to clever legal fence, consecutively tried their utmost to

make each and every skilled (as indeed each and every other) witness, declare that black was white.

Mr. Coleridge—Assuming a child otherwise healthy, but having worms as described, and also assuming that the child was kept without food during the period of the watching in this case, what,—as a medical man, on the 10th of December, some thirty hours after the watching commenced, and showing the symptoms of “restlessness” described by Mrs. Clinch and Miss Jones,—would you attribute those symptoms to?

Dr. Fowler—Knowing all the antecedents of the case, and taking into the gravest consideration the total absence of food during the thirty hours, I should consider “restlessness” and “restless sleep”³⁰⁵ one of the early symptoms of exhaustion.

Question—If on the next day,—taking the same assumption and a continuous absence of food,—what would such an appearance as “eyes rather sunk,”—“nose rather pinched,” indicate to you, as a scientific man?

Answer—At that period of the fasting, about forty-six to forty-eight hours, I believe them to be important symptoms of exhaustion.

Question—What in your opinion, as a scientific man, should have been done in such a case?

Answer—In any case, with these symptoms, added to the antecedent circumstances of this case, and with the knowledge of the total absence of food, I would give food.

Question—Supposing the child should express loathing for, and refuse to take, food, what, as a medical man, attending the case professionally, would you have done?

Answer—Having previously obtained the consent of the parents, I would have forcibly given food in some way or other. In the event of the parents refusing to allow food, I should at that period of the case have declined all further personal responsibility in the case, and retired from it.

Assuming everything, and that the symptoms were on the fourth day of the watching, “faced flushed,” “eyes unusually bright,” “not so cheerful,” “pulse averaging 112,” I should say those symptoms indicated increasing exhaustion.

Assuming the fasting to have continued five days, and the symptoms being, “not looking so well, appearing weaker,” those symptoms would indicate in my opinion still increasing exhaustion. If on the sixth day of the watching, the symptoms were “a fainting fit, from excitement,” “not looking so well,” and “a complaint from the patient that she was not so well,” “voice not so strong,” “much flushed,” “lips dry;” I should consider those symptoms, under the same conditions as before, and making due allowance for the cause of the excitement, to show still further increasing exhaustion. Having all the antecedents in their mind, and giving the above their proper weight, all medical men ought to recognise them as symptoms of exhaustion. If one of the symptoms on the seventh day of the watching, was that “no urine was passed,” what I would have done, if called in at that period, knowing the antecedents of the case, is,—have satisfied myself whether or not there was urine in the bladder. If I found none, I should consider (in any disease) suppression of urine for twenty-four hours a serious symptom, and additionally so in a case of

Acute Starvation. When a Doctor reports a pulse of an *average* of 112, I should understand that all elements calculated to influence the rapidity of the pulse, had been taken into due consideration. By *average* I understand the mean of a certain number of observations. If on Wednesday, the seventh day of the watching, there was still "a gradual change for the worse," "pulse 120," "skin warm on the right hand," "complaint of cold," "legs and feet very cold,"³⁰⁶—taking all the assumptions aforesaid, I should consider it a day, or state, of imminent danger. And if on the night of the same day "very restless all night, very difficult to keep in bed, only ten minutes' sleep at a time," was the report added to the symptoms of the morning, I should say she was hourly getting worse, and the imminence of danger to be hourly increasing. If on the eighth day of watching, the symptoms increased,—"right hand cold when exposed," "pulse very variable and small, at one time 160, and then afterwards very small,"—with all the assumptions already made, I should consider the danger most imminent, but taking the symptoms and all the antecedents of the case into consideration, I should say that life might then have been preserved, provided the necessary food and stimulants had been regularly and properly administered. If on the Wednesday a peculiar smell³⁰⁷ was perceived (and knowing the antecedent circumstances) it, in my opinion, would be one of the symptoms, recorded in the recognised authorities of cases, of death by Starvation. If during the last four days of this watching, and absence of food,—with the symptoms already mentioned, and bearing in mind all my knowledge of the case,—the child was from time to time "cheerful and bright,"—this would not in the aggregate alter my opinion, because I would place very much more value on the indication of symptoms over which a patient has no control, than on symptoms to a certain degree under the influence of the will of such patient. I would state in my estimation of the value of such symptoms, that I should consider a patient would have no control over the symptoms of the "eyes being sunk," and the "nose pinched," nor over "continuing and persistent acceleration of the pulse," nor over a "continuing and increasing restlessness, awake or asleep." The sinking of the eyes is caused by the absorption of fat from the bottom of the cavity of the eye-socket, and a similar absorption of fat from the eyelids, and of the fluids from the tissues of the globe and its socket,—produced I believe in a case of Starvation, such as has been detailed, by Nature actually feeding on herself.

Cross-examined by Mr. Smith—The symptoms I have alluded to have partly been culled from the evidence given here, and partly from what I have heard.

Question—Do you think you are in a position to form as good an opinion on this case, as the nurses who regularly attended, and the medical men who occasionally attended?

Answer—I may state, that as a matter of fact, I have formed the opinions I have expressed, after due consideration of the value of the favourable symptoms, as well as of the unfavourable symptoms of the case as detailed in the evidence I have heard. I heard Mrs. Clinch's evidence as to the state of the child on the Wednesday, the 15th day of December,—that she asked the girl if there was any pain; she said "No;" and the evidence of Jones about the broken bottle,

and the statement of the Sister that she saw very little change in her. And I believe I have previously answered that such statements would not alter my opinion in the aggregate. If I had been called in on any particular day, such as Wednesday, and had never seen the case before, the conclusion from this statement of symptoms which I have heard described,—good and bad together,—on the Wednesday, would be, that in my opinion the bad so much preponderated over the good, as to have easily made me consider the case a serious one as affecting life. By attending the child for the first time on the Tuesday, and only feeling her pulse, I do not think any medical man could fix the limit of its rapidity from temporary causes. No sensible medical man would express a positive opinion of the condition of a patient, from merely once feeling the pulse. If a further and proper examination and investigation had been permitted, of the child's past and present state, a medical man might have come to a just conclusion. I have had experience of Chronic Starvation, but not of Acute Starvation, which I should call this case. I did not know the symptoms of Acute Starvation, except from reading, before this case. I think I can fully estimate the symptoms of Exhaustion from any cause. Emaciation depends on the length of time that the patient lives. From my reading, the longest case without food and water is from seven to ten days. In the case of the prisoner of Toulouse, I believe it states that for the first seven days, there were no very prominent symptoms of Acute Starvation. The time a patient may live without food or drink, varies with the circumstances of the case, and some of these circumstances appear to have been absent in Sarah Jacob's case. She was kept free from cold. I mean every endeavour was made to keep her warm. She had no physical fatigue, and very little (if any) mental anxiety—all which causes are, when present, great hasteners of death by Starvation. I should have expected the influence of the presence of the four strange nurses to be most apparent on the first day, whereas she appeared to sleep better on the first night. She soon got attached to the nurses, and I have no doubt that their tact and kindness were instrumental in keeping off the so-called "fits" of the girl.³⁰⁸ There appeared to be no appearance of emaciation till the Wednesday. If after death layers of fat were found on the body, three-quarters of an inch thick in some places, this would indicate that she had been well-fed previously, and that Nature had not had time to make much impression on the quantity of fat before death arose. I know personally of no case of Acute Starvation. I do not remember any post-mortem examination of a case of Acute Starvation with death at the eighth day. Casper, in his Handbook of "Forensic Medicine," p. 29 of the English translation by the "New Sydenham Society," states of his case aforesaid,—at the seventh day "his features were somewhat collapsed."

Mr. Smith—But let me read this to you, from Taylor's "Principles and Practice of Medical Jurisprudence," page 745. Speaking of appearances, Dr. Taylor says :—

"There are but few details of the appearances presented by the bodies of those who have died of Starvation, and the cases themselves

are too rare to enable us to decide with certainty upon the accuracy of the reports which have hitherto appeared on the subject. The body is shrunk *and emaciated*," &c. &c.

Mr. Smith, having read this, asked the witness:—
“What do you say to that?”—

Dr. Fowler—I shall give you Casper's answer, page 28, on “Death from Starvation.” He says:—“There is very little that is certain known respecting this kind of death. . . . The tolerably numerous cases related by the older authors, of healthy men fasting for weeks or months, or even years, are to be set aside as cases of intentional or unintentional deceit. And even the more rare clinical histories and reports of the dissection of cases said to be of death from Starvation in more recent times, deserve but little confidence, since they date from an epoch in which the purely cadaveric phenomena, which are of great importance in such medico-legal cases, were neither known nor acknowledged, and further, because many of them are related by untrustworthy observers, and mere book-makers.”

Mr. Smith—But you will hardly call Dr. Taylor either a mere book-maker or an untrustworthy observer.

Dr. Fowler—But Dr. Taylor does not record anything from his own experience.

Mr. Smith—And in that respect he is in the same position as Dr. Fowler. (Laughter.)³⁰⁹

Dr. Fowler—I think the girl died from exhaustion produced by,—and the evidence shows no other cause but—the want of food and drink for eight days. I take the aggregate case from December the 9th to the day of the post-mortem examination. In chronic cases I should expect but little fat. In Acute Starvation, such as this, the presence of fat after death would depend on the quantity of fat (in the body) on the day on which the starving commenced.³¹⁰ I do not know a fatal case similar in all its medical facts to this one. I do not know of any recorded case (uncomplicated by disease) of total abstinence from food and drink in which a post-mortem examination has been made. In my own experience I have had fatal cases from diseases producing Starvation. I partly framed Dr. Phillips's suggestions before they were sent to the Committee. I sent certain suggestions to him, some of which he embodied.

Cross-examined by Mr. Jones—I think there were symptoms of Hysteria at the commencement of the watching, assuming her to be in the same state as when I saw her in August last. Hysterical people cannot to my knowledge exist long without food. I believe that the Syncope on the Tuesday, shows that the character of the “fits” had changed.³¹¹

At the rising of the Court, the inquiry was adjourned till half-past ten on Monday, the 14th day of March, in consequence of the intervention of the Carmarthenshire Spring Assizes.

The Spring Assizes and general gaol delivery for the County of Carmarthen and the County of the Borough of Carmarthen, commenced on Wednesday, the 8th day of March, when the commission

was opened at the Shire Hall, Carmarthen, before the Right Hon. Sir W. Bovill, Knight, Chief Justice of the Court of Common Pleas.

The Court opened at the appointed hour on Thursday morning, and the following Magistrates comprised the Grand Jury for the County:—

Sir John Mansel, Bart., Maesdilo (foreman),
 H. J. Bath, Esq., Alltyferin,
 J. Beynon, Esq., jun., Trewern,
 Captain Cross, Iscoed,
 W. Du Buisson, Esq., Glynhir,
 A. J. Gulston, Esq., Dirleton,
 Allen Stepney Gulston, Esq., Dirleton,
 W. Garnons Hughes, Esq., Glancothy,
 R. Jennings, Esq., Gellydeg,
 David Edward Jones, Esq., Velindre,
 J. Jones, Esq., M.P., Blaenôs,
 Lt.-Col. W. Price Lewes, Llysnewydd,
 Charles Morgan, Esq., Alltygog,
 C. W. Nevill, Esq., Westfa,
 Herbert Peel, Esq., Taliaris,
 D. Albany Pryce, Oaklands,
 Lloyd Price, Esq., Abermarlais,
 J. H. Rees, Esq., Kilymaenllwyd,
 Robert Smith, Esq., Glanbrydan,
 R. G. Thomas, Esq., Llannon,
 G. W. R. Watkins, Esq., Llwynybrain.

* * * * *

The usual proclamation having been read, his Lordship proceeded to charge the grand jury for the county and said:—

Gentlemen of the Grand Jury,— As regards the business of the assizes, to which I will now advert, there was one case that was likely to have attracted a great deal of the attention and time both of yourselves and of the public generally. I mean the case that you may all anticipate, relating to the unfortunate death of that child Sarah Jacob. But as the matter stands, an investigation is now going on before the Magistrates of the County, with which you are well acquainted, and at present the Magistrates have not concluded their investigation, or determined whether any or all of the persons charged, shall be committed for trial. All that I know, independently of the statements in the public journals, is from the Depositions which have been returned to me on the inquiry made by the Coroner for the County. The inquiry or examination before the Coroner, is not one by which any particular person stands upon his trial, or is charged with any particular offence. The duty of the Coroner is to inquire and ascertain all the particulars. No person is upon his trial, or even charged, upon an inquiry of that kind. Evidence of a very wide range is then admitted, and no sort of discretion is observed with reference to its being admissible against one party or another. I dare say you have had observations made to you before, by Judges of the land, that it is almost always most unsatisfactory for persons to be placed upon their trial with no other investigation than that which takes place before the Coroner. Whenever the case is so serious that death has been caused, and a Coroner's

inquest has been held, it is of the essence of the proper performance of the duties of public justice, that an inquiry should take place before the Magistrates, where some person should be placed in the position of the person charged with the crime, and that then he should have the opportunity of defending himself before the Magistrates, and that the matter should be fully investigated before the person is placed upon his trial. The importance of this arises, in its general application, from the circumstances I have mentioned, and also because it relates to the question whether one person only, or more than one person shall be placed upon his trial. That can hardly be ascertained from the evidence given before the Coroner's Inquest. Now, Gentlemen, a short time ago the father of this unhappy girl, had been found guilty of something in the nature of Manslaughter, upon the Coroner's Inquisition; it is something substantially the same as Manslaughter, and yet no inquiry had been prosecuted before the Magistrates; and it is only recently, I understand, the Government have given directions for the prosecution of this inquiry, to have the case investigated, and to have the charges against different individuals, including the father, completed before the Magistrates. That inquiry is still pending. Many days have been occupied in the investigation of the matter, and probably several others will be further occupied. There is, therefore, no person committed upon any charge connected with this unfortunate girl. And under those circumstances there is I believe no probability that any evidence will be offered before you, as the Grand Jury. The jury for the Coroner came to a conclusion adversely to the father of this girl, and no doubt the father might be tried upon the Inquisition of the Coroner's jury; but then that is not a matter that comes before you. I regard matters of this kind generally, and speaking when there is a verdict of the Coroner's jury, it is usually right that there should be an indictment preferred before the Grand Jury for the same offence. In this case the prosecution, I understand, or those who are engaged for the prosecution, do not propose, pending the investigation before the Magistrates, to send up a bill before the Grand Jury. In that I think they have taken a right and proper course. It may be that the Magistrates will come to such a conclusion that it may not be necessary to prefer any bill; it may be that more persons will be committed. But until the Magistrates shall have arrived at some conclusion upon the subject, I think it will not be right for the prosecution to present a bill for your consideration. Then, Gentlemen, I believe there are no witnesses bound over to appear at these assizes. Therefore it will be a mere farce to direct a bill to be sent up for your consideration upon a charge of manslaughter against any person. . . .

Mr. Giffard, Q.C., who had been instructed to appear on behalf of the Crown in this case, applied to his Lordship that the trial of Evan Jacob, the father of Sarah Jacob, popularly known as the "Welsh Fasting-Girl," who had been found guilty of Manslaughter by the Coroner's jury, might be postponed. The first count upon which he made the application was, that the Coroner did not appear to have bound over any of the witnesses to prosecute, and of course it would then be impossible to get them to town. He should not be candid if he did not also say that, as the adviser of the Crown, he would not

attempt a trial upon the Coroner's Inquisition. That Inquisition was bad on the face of it. The indictment charged the father with feloniously refusing to give the child food. That appeared to be a sort of argumentative indictment for murder. It would undoubtedly be a bad indictment for murder, because it omitted the element of malice prepense, and forethought. But although it was a bad indictment for murder, yet it comprehended all the elements of murder. It assumed that the child was of tender years, and under the control of the father, and that the father neglected and feloniously refused to give the child food, whereby the child ultimately died. So that while the indictment was for Manslaughter, it comprehended all the elements of murder. His Lordship would be aware that the Attorney-General might issue a *nolle prosequi*. But then again, there was a Magisterial Inquiry proceeding, which stood adjourned until the following Monday. As Evan Jacob was at large on his own recognizances, it would be no hardship to him if the trial was postponed until the next assizes, when the Magistrates would have completed their investigation.

Mr. Bowen, who was instructed for the defence, said he must oppose the application. The Crown had already had three months to prepare their case, and it was very hard that Evan Jacob, who was ready to take his trial, should have the proceedings hanging over his head any longer. The Crown had been guilty of great harshness to allow such a long period unavailingly to have elapsed. If the Counsel for the Crown were prepared to say that the Coroner's Inquisition ought to be quashed, then he asked that he might have a verdict upon it. And it was useless to plead that the witnesses were out of town. They were all resident within a distance of eighteen miles, so that it would have been perfectly easy to have brought them.

His Lordship, after entering into the little value of a Coroner's Inquisition for the purposes of prosecution, in a similar manner as exemplified in his charge, said he felt he must accede to the application of Mr. Giffard for a postponement. Mr. Bowen was influenced a little in resisting it, by the knowledge that the witnesses were not in attendance, and therefore that a trial could not possibly take place. The postponement would hardly be disadvantageous to Evan Jacob, because he would then have two preliminary investigations of his case before he came to the Petty Jury to be tried—viz., the Bench of Magistrates, and the Grand Jury. He had thus the greater opportunity for obtaining the full benefit of his defence. Instead of being a disadvantage, it was actually a positive advantage. The trial would therefore be postponed until the next assizes, and Evan Jacob's recognizances enlarged accordingly.³¹²

On Monday, March the 14th, at 10.30 A.M., the judicial inquiry was resumed (being the eighth time of hearing) before the same Bench of Magistrates at the same Court-(!)house, adjoining the Wilkes' Head Inn.

Dr. Robert Fowler being recalled and cross-examined by Mr. T. Jones said:—

I have seen plenty of cases of Chronic Starvation from disease, and

one case of Criminal Starvation in a child of about two years old. I should say certainly, that emaciation is one of the symptoms of Chronic Starvation. The total absence of any apparent cause of death, discovered after death, in Sarah Jacob's case, together with the whole history and antecedents of the case, excludes in my opinion any other cause of death than exhaustion from Starvation. As a matter of fact, I state that microscopic examinations are daily discovering organic changes after death, in the brain, in certain Nervous Complaints, where Insanity supervened before death.³¹³ I have formed a theory in my own mind as to why Sarah Jacob did not ask for food or water—either that she thought she could outwit the nurses, as she had previously outwitted the first set of watchers; or that she had got herself into that state of mind in which she believed she could last out the fortnight without food, and in either case she got on too far to hark back. She became delirious, when, of course, she could not ask for it.

Cross-examined by Mr. Clifton—I heard the nurses' statement that the eyes were sunk; and actual sinking of the eye involves the absorption of the fat, and fluids about the globe of the eye. The absorption of fat must commence somewhere, and we are not in a condition to say where that somewhere is, in the body. My opinion is, that the exhaustion was caused by the absence of food during the last eight days of her life. Practically, I never had a case of Starvation for a long period, because I would not allow it to go on beyond a day, and I have used the stomach-pump and clyster-pipe in such cases. There are absorbents all over the body. I have no reason to suppose that the fat of the omentum would be the first for absorption to commence with.³¹⁴ The prisoner at Toulouse went to the seventh day without food and water. Guy states that there were no particular symptoms. It is stated by some and denied by other writers, that the intestines would show attenuation³¹⁵ after death from Starvation. I know of no case on record of a post-mortem examination of a person who has died at the eighth day from Starvation. I should not have expected here to have found attenuation of the intestines,³¹⁶ because there is no particular mention of emaciation in the reported cases during the first week of Starvation. Casper quotes (in a foot-note) Dr. Donovan, who had great experience in the Irish famine cases, which however were all cases of Chronic Starvation. Casper remarks:—

“It is self-evident that amid all these various vital and cadaveric phenomena, there is scarcely one that can be declared to be quite specific, and exclusively pertaining to death from Starvation, if we except the attenuation of the coats of the intestines.*

* This phenomenon was first observed by Donovan (*Dub. Med. Press*, 1848), during the Irish famine in 1847, and he holds it to be a most important sign of death from Starvation.”

Casper is about the first man that drew the distinction between Chronic and Acute Starvation.

Cross-examined by Mr. Bishop—When I saw the room in August, the child was there; and there appeared plenty of places where food might be secreted. I then thought the child was deceiving the parents.³¹⁷

Towards the end of Dr. Robert Fowler's cross-examination,

Mr. Coleridge made some remark which led Mr. Fitzwilliams to say that the Magistrates were not there to try the case, but to hear the evidence.

Colonel Lewes said they were there to hear the evidence, and did not care who prosecuted, or who defended. They were determined to do their duty as Magistrates.

Mr. Fitzwilliams said they were simply to see whether there was sufficient evidence to justify them in sending the parties for trial. It was their duty to investigate the case as thoroughly as they could, and if they saw that there was a case against these parties, or any of them, it would be their duty to send them for trial by another tribunal. They as Magistrates were merely to see whether there was sufficient evidence to justify them in committing the parties for trial.

Colonel Lewes said they were all unanimous in that opinion.³¹⁸

Dr. John Pearson Hughes was then sworn, and said :—

I am in practice at Llandovery, and was formerly House Physician to University College Hospital. On the 11th of March, 1869, in consequence of what I had read and heard, I went to the house of the father of the girl. Mr. Davies, of Llanybyther, and two other friends (Mr. Davies, Glanduar, and Mr. Morgan, Llwynfedw) went with me. On arriving at the house, we saw the mother, Hannah Jacob, and told her what we came about. One of my friends said we had come to see this wonderful little girl. After some little delay we were shown to the child.

Dr. Pearson Hughes then detailed, as already recorded in this history, the facts he observed, and continued :—

I afterwards felt her back, by putting my hand under her. I found no bed-sores, and a healthy feel, and a strong smell of urine. When I said the girl had been passing urine in bed, the mother said that she occasionally did so. I told her that she ought to be ashamed of herself for keeping up so shameful and disgraceful an affair—that it was a pity to keep such a pretty little girl in bed for so long a time, that she ought to be up and out of bed at once. The mother said that it was no good my preaching, or giving them any advice, in that way; but that, if I read, and went on my knees and prayed with her, that that would do her a great deal of good. She then said, “Then you don't believe in it?” I then said, “Certainly not.” She protested the thing was true, and I said, “You may swear till you are black in the face, but I will never believe you.” Evan Davies then put a two-shilling piece on the girl's chest, and I gave her a crownpiece. I talked pretty freely about this visit, and I subsequently received a summons to appear before the Magistrates. The girl moved her two legs. The father was not present during my visit.

Cross-examined by Mr. T. Jones—When I saw her in March, 1869, I thought her suffering from Hysteria.

Cross-examined by Mr. Bishop—As far as I could see, there was nothing physically to prevent the girl getting up out of bed. I thought the girl at the time was tricky and deceitful. When the child cried, and after I pointed out the tongue to the mother, she

told me to desist from examining her. I have known hysterical cases where the patients are apt to fancy all sorts of things. In such cases children are very prone to deceit.³¹⁹

Mr. James Thomas, one of the Surgeons who made the post-mortem examination, was then sworn, and gave an account of the appearances of the body similar to that he had given before the Coroner. He stated in addition thereto:—"I thought by the body she was about fourteen She had more hair on the pubes than children of twelve ordinarily have. Hair is one of the symptoms of approaching puberty. She had no development of the mammæ. She had a very beautiful head of hair; and looked a beautiful child altogether. I did not observe any difference in the size of the arms or legs. (The congestion of the capillaries of the brain) I have no doubt came on during the delirium before death. There was a little mucus in the small intestines. When we got down to the ileum, there was a kind of fluid adhering to the side of the intestine which appeared more fæcal. That the child had been fed up to a certain time, I verily believe for the following reasons:—

First. That she lived. Secondly. That she failed to live when the severe test of watching was brought to bear upon her. Thirdly. That she was encased in a layer of fat. And fourthly. That she had fæces in her intestines.

Question—Supposing you had made this post-mortem examination without any antecedent knowledge of the case, or heard the facts detailed in evidence, what would have been your opinion from what you saw, as to the cause of death?

Answer—It would have puzzled me. Here was a fat plump child, and a stomach and intestines perfectly empty, and void of all food. That would cause a doubt (? suspicion) as to the cause of death.

Question—From the examination you made, did you find any disease that would account for death?

Answer—No. There were a few worms found in the intestines. They are constantly found in every case.

Cross-examined by Mr. Smith—There are cases in which, from the post-mortem examination, no morbid appearances are discovered. There may be morbid appearances, and chemical changes, which are not apparent to the naked eye. I suggested from the history of the case, that she might have been suffering from Hysteria, which shows itself in extraordinary freaks, and in her case by refusing food before the public.

Question—Is not the distension of the gall-bladder, frequently found in dead bodies?

Answer—Yes, it is.³¹⁹

Mr. John Phillips, who assisted at the post-mortem examination, then gave evidence similar to that which he had given before the Coroner. He added:—

I afterwards microscopically examined the excrement taken from the intestines of the girl. I recognised two ingredients, starch-globules in abundance, and several small pieces of bone, either of a small fish or a small bird. Most likely the starch-globules were from arrowroot, from the size of the globules.

Cross-examined by Mr. Bishop—Starch-globules would arise from wheaten-flour; but from the size of these, and comparing them with arrowroot-globules, they corresponded exactly. They were larger than wheaten globules.

By the Court—From the state of the fæces, I should think that the pieces next the rectum had been there two or three weeks. The other parts not so long, they were softer. They were not so accumulated as to warrant me in supposing that there had been an unusual torpidity in the natural intestinal movement.³¹⁹

Mr. John Daniel was then examined and cross-examined, but his evidence has been previously fully embodied in this history.

Mr. John Griffith was then cross-examined as to the authorship of a certain letter of his in the Newspaper, and which has been already commented on.

Mr. John Jones, Solicitor, Llandyssil, corroborated the evidence of the Rev. Wm. Thomas, M.A., and added:—

I drew up the Agreement dated 30th of November, 1869. I told Mr. Griffith that the Agreement was invalid, except as leave and licence from the parents. I did not instruct the nurses or Doctors that if the father neglected or refused to give food to his child, whereby her life was endangered, they should apply to a Magistrate to compel him to do his duty, or to apply to the Parish Officers to supply the necessary food—nothing was said beyond withdrawing the watch. This was debated at the General Meeting of the forty or fifty people after the Local Committee of the sixteen or eighteen had been appointed, and I think after the Medical Committee were nominated.³¹⁹

On Tuesday, March 15th, and last day of the investigation, Maria Duncan, servant of Mr. Jones, Blaenblodau, testified to the parents of Sarah Jacob not allowing the nurses to have their food in the girl's room.

The Coroner was sworn, and handed in the Statement the father had voluntarily made before him at the Inquest.³¹⁹

Henry Giles, reporter of the *Welshman*, testified to the

correctness of his short-hand notes of the meeting of the Committee after the girl's death.³²⁰

This concluded the evidence.

Mr. Coleridge said before he summed up, he wished to make one explanation. In opening the case he had stated that on the Tuesday when the girl was getting worse, Dr. Corsellis had stated—"There was a chance yet." The fact was Dr. Corsellis stated—"There was a change." He regretted the mistake.

The Bench said they fully recognised that it was an inadvertent error.

Mr. Coleridge then rose and said—This is the case, Sir, for the prosecution. I do not propose to go at any length through the evidence in this case, which you have had so very fully before you already; but I must go over a certain extent in order to show you what is the proposition of law on which I seek to fix this charge against each of the defendants now before you. As regards the father, the evidence that has come out in his case, seems so abundantly clear, that it is hardly necessary I should labour respecting it. The way in which I wish to put it is, that this was an experiment tried by the father and mother with the consent of their daughter, and consequently that the child was persuaded to undergo this watching, during which she met with her death. And I think if I establish as a proposition—I will not touch the Doctors at the present moment—that it was in reality an unlawful combination between the three for that purpose, then the two who stood by and saw the third die, are each guilty of Manslaughter. Assuming that the father had not divested himself of his paternity, and that he afterwards qualified his act, yet I say that in this case he really meant to give his child over to the nurses.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—I cannot see there is any evidence of that.

Mr. Coleridge—But I call your attention to that document—the agreement.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—I think that the force of the evidence is what is stated by the father, that upon the very last day of that poor girl's life, he did give leave to Mr. Davies to give that child food, and Mr. Davies did not do it.

Mr. Coleridge—That is quite true. At the time the father gave the child over, the parents meant to divest themselves of their parental authority, but afterwards they interfered.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—But show me the evidence of that. Show me that they divested themselves of their parental authority.

Mr. Coleridge—The written agreement shows that.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—It does not do any such thing; the agreement speaks for itself. Take the words of that agreement. Your whole case is perfectly good in theory, provided your facts sustained it, but your facts do not.

Mr. Coleridge—Then I will read the agreement.

Which being done (*vide page 40*),

Mr. Coleridge continued—This is handing over the child to the Committee, or the nurses appointed by them to watch.

Mr. Fitzwilliams—It does not do any such thing. It gives them permission to be there. It is merely leave and licence to be present to watch.³²¹

A further long-sustained legal controversy then supervened between the learned Counsel, and one of the presiding Justices. Mr. Coleridge contended that "if a woman has with her husband caused manslaughter by omission, she is surely liable with her husband;" and he elaborately quoted the law on the subject. Mr. Fitzwilliams insisted that to support this view, it must be proved that the wife had committed some overt act—which he considered was absent in this case—and consequently "he failed to see how she could be held guilty of manslaughter."

The limits of this work preclude the transfer to these pages of this lengthy legal contest in its entirety. We must consequently refer those interested, to the local journals of the time for full details of the same.³²²

Mr. Coleridge then exhaustively argued to insure a committal of the medical men, both collectively and individually, on the plea that they had all accepted the responsibility of the task, and had "in reality constituted themselves the medical guardians of the girl." Mr. Fitzwilliams, however, insisted that there was no proof of that assertion before the Bench; and he thought "there was a misapprehension respecting the position of the medical men." He contended that the medical men were not there as medical attendants on the girl, but only to advise the nurses, who, *in his opinion*, never solicited their advice and counsel; and also that the father had never given up his parental authority. He, however, blamed both nurses and doctors for not acquainting the parents both with the condition of the girl, and the fact that unless she had food she would die. He also said "it was a great pity no one called in a Magistrate to enforce the giving of food." Mr. Fitzwilliams concluded:—"I do not see any culpability on the part of the doctors—I see a mistake in judgment." After a short adjournment the Bench considered the whole case.

Mr. Fitzwilliams, on the reassembling of the Court, said—We have considered this case very carefully, and by a majority of the Bench we think that no case can be made out against the Doctors. Their opinion rests upon that of Mr. Baron Alderson, who says there must be some personal act committed. I do not think that any personal act has been committed in this case. The Doctors were, if I may use the phrase, retained to advise the nurses if their advice was called for. The Doctors came up for that purpose, and the nurses never asked for it. We cannot assume that the Doctors undertook any other duty than that which they actually did undertake. That relates to the four Doctors. As to the fifth, Mr. Davies, he went to the father on the morning of the death, who told him he would give him permission to give food. It is possible if he had done so, the child might have been alive this day—it is possible it might have been too late. But assuming if he had given food, the child might have lived, I do not think that Mr. Davies, not having done so, has committed a breach of any duty imposed by law upon him. Therefore, I think even with regard to Mr. Davies—who acted very foolishly, and I have not the slightest hesitation in saying so, and still more foolishly than the other Doctors, because they all acted foolishly—still he has done nothing to bring himself under the operation of the criminal law. Therefore I think there is no case against him, and that there is no case to call upon any of these Doctors to answer to-day. We then come to the wife, and as to the wife the majority of the Bench think—no, we are unanimous as to the wife—that as the point of law is very doubtful, therefore we should be justified in sending her with her husband, and we think that she should be called upon to show cause through her Counsel why she should not be sent with her husband for trial. Looking, in the light of law, at the fact that she was doing nothing, we do not set much value upon that, because in law husband and wife are the same person, and in fact would be defended probably by one Counsel or two Counsel. Under these circumstances, we shall call upon Mr. Bishop to give us reasons why we should not send the wife along with her husband, for trial in this case. As to the father, there are many circumstances which might be given in evidence upon the trial—such as the belief of the father, the influences under which this girl has laboured, the differences of opinion amongst the Doctors, and a variety of other circumstances; I say that all these might be placed before the jury in his defence. It is possible the Court might advise the jury to take all those circumstances into their consideration, and that some doctrines of law might be advanced upon them. We think therefore as regards the wife, she ought to be sent along with her husband for trial, and that we should call upon Mr. Bishop to show cause why we should abstain from sending her for trial.

Mr. Bishop addressed the Court on behalf of the mother.

“The Bench (however) then formally announced that Evan and Hannah Jacob would be committed for trial at the next assizes.”

After the usual complimentary thanks to the Bench from the several legal gentlemen engaged,

Mr. Fitzwilliams said the Bench were unanimous in accepting on the present occasion the thanks which had been tendered to them. He had himself interposed repeatedly in the case, but he felt it was due to all parties in the case, that they should see the effect of the impression made upon the minds of the Bench by the evidence, in order that they might shape their case accordingly. The duty of the Bench was to prepare such a case, so far as it was preparable, for investigation before another Court. His friend Mr. Coleridge, who had the honour of conducting the case, had done so most ably, and he hoped the fact would come to the knowledge of the Attorney-General that the Bench considered Mr. Coleridge had distinguished himself greatly—in fact, that he had conducted the case as ably as it was possible for a Counsel to do, placed in his difficult position. He had himself, some forty years ago, studied Medical Jurisprudence, or Forensic Medicine, and he now gave it as his opinion that the girl Sarah Jacob was suffering from Hysteria—by some called Cataleptic Hysteria, by others Epileptic Hysteria, and by others Pseudo-Cataleptic Hysteria, and by others yet other names. This Hysteria took other forms, and in this case took the form of fasting or pretending to fast. He might here say, that he believed a lady of rank, who recently came prominently before the public in one of the London Law Courts, was suffering from the same disease. As for the Doctors, before he parted with them, he must say that none of them acted with that care and attention which might in some sense be considered a moral duty with them. They ought to have remonstrated with the father about not giving his child food. As soon as they perceived the slightest symptoms of exhaustion, as soon as they suspected that danger would be likely to ensue, they ought to have gone to the father and said—"Your child is failing, and if you do not give her food she will die, and you must be answerable for it." If they had said that, the case would have been perfectly clear if the father had refused. He would then have been clearly guilty of Manslaughter. In this case some excuse might be made for him because he was stupid. But being stupid, was no answer to crime, although it might be a matter of mitigation when he came to have the sentence passed upon him by the Court. As to the wife, the poor woman would consider it her best plan through her Counsel to keep under the wing of her husband. Very probably another Court would decide whether she was entitled to that protection. The Bench had had their attention called to that point. And this was the point, whether she had not done just sufficient to bring her within the claws of the law. The Bench would send her for trial, and if she had, then she would have to bear the full weight of her conduct, but if she had not, then no doubt the jury would be directed by the Court to acquit her. Under those circumstances the Bench had only done their duty in devoting so much time to the investigation of the case.

Evan and Hannah Jacob were admitted to bail in the sum of 100*l.* and two sureties of 50*l.* each.

The Court then rose.³²³

During each day of the inquiry,—

The mother of the girl sat behind the Justices, near the fire. She had been weak and ill, it is said, ever since the death of her child; and on Tuesday, when the result of the inquiry was made known to her, she was deeply moved and moaned piteously; rocking herself to and fro in her chair, with her face buried in her shawl. The husband who, so far as countenance will testify, has never exhibited any symptoms of emotion, sat by her side, leaning back in his chair, with the same half-pleasant, unconcerned expression he has worn throughout the inquiry. He continually patted his wife on the back, as if to soothe her feelings, and occasionally bent down and whispered to her; but the only reply he got was the shake of the head, and a deeper moan.

The result of the inquiry, so far as the Medical Men are concerned, was most satisfactory to the people of Carmarthen.

The Witnesses, the Solicitors on both sides, the Medical Men, the Reporters, and everybody connected with the inquiry are deeply indebted to Mr. Alexander Young, the Secretary and Manager of the Carmarthen and Cardigan Railway, and the other officers of the Company for their unvarying courtesy, and the efforts made to accommodate the rather large party which daily journeyed to Llandyssil and back. Mr. Young ran a special train down to Carmarthen every night; and thus prevented the great waste of valuable time which would have resulted from having to wait for the last train.³²⁴

The witnesses were all bound over to appear at the next Court of Oyer and Terminer and General Gaol Delivery in and for the County of Carmarthen, to be holden at Carmarthen on July 12th, 1870.

On Friday, April 8th, 1870, Mr. Evan Matthew Richards, M.P., Cardiganshire, pursuant to notice, moved in the House of Commons for a "Return of the Costs of the Prosecution in the Magisterial Inquiry relative to the Death of *Sarah Jacob* (known as the Welsh Fasting-Girl); distinguishing the Amounts Paid or Payable to Counsel, Solicitors, and Witnesses."

On the 15th June, 1870, this Return was ordered by the House of Commons to be Printed (*vide Appendix*).

On Friday, July 1st, 1870, in the House of Commons, pursuant to notice, the question having been deferred from Tuesday, June 28th, 1870, "Mr. John Jones, M.P., Carmarthenshire, asked the Secretary to the Treasury on what principle a larger scale of costs was allowed in the '*Sarah Jacob*,' the Welsh Fasting-Girl case, than was paid or allowed to witnesses in other prosecutions; and

why was it considered necessary to employ Counsel to conduct the preliminary investigations instead of the 'local agent' mentioned in the return.—Mr. Stansfeld replied that the higher scale of costs allowed in this case, arose from the fact that the inquiry was conducted by the Treasury Solicitor. The employment of Counsel in such inquiries was a matter which came within the discretion of the Treasury Solicitor."³²⁵

On Tuesday, July 12th, 1870, commenced at Carmarthen, the Midsummer Assizes and General Gaol Delivery for the County of Carmarthen and the County of the Borough of Carmarthen, before the Honourable Sir James Hannen, Knight.

The following account is taken from certain of the local papers :—

The present assizes have been anticipated with much interest, in consequence of the trial of Evan and Hannah Jacob, the parents of Sarah Jacob, popularly known as the Welsh Fasting-Girl, on a charge of Manslaughter in having caused the death of the little girl. It is unnecessary to recapitulate the circumstances of the case; they are fresh in the recollection of every one. But a few days ago, it became known that all the medical men subsequently associated with the Committee that instituted the watching and procured the nurses from London, had been summoned. It was always deemed probable that they would eventually find their way into the witness-box. When it was known they had positively been summoned to attend, public attention was still more thoroughly aroused. Another great point with the public, was the character of the Petty Jury. The current impression was that an ordinary Welsh Petty Jury would certainly acquit the parents without hesitation. The opinion was even hazarded, that the Grand Jury would not return a true bill. The hazard has proved incorrect. On the opening of the Court on Wednesday, moreover, it was seen that the Petty Jury consisted of men of greater intelligence than ordinarily distinguishes those who occupy their situations.

During the earlier portion of the week it was rumoured that the venue had been changed, that the case which was to be the great centre point of interest, was to be tried in London before a Special Jury. There seemed good *primâ facie* reasons for believing such a report. It was contended that the case ought to be decided by the most competent jury that could be obtained. The rumour to which we have referred also hinted that Mr. Giffard, Q.C., the leading Counsel for the Crown, was unwilling that a case fraught with so much excitement, which had created such a stir throughout the community, should be left in the hands of men who, resident almost within the immediate locality of the Welsh Fasting-Girl, could not

possibly divest their minds of impressions that must have been made on them. But whatever *primâ facie* reasons may have existed, calculated to confirm such a report, the facts were on the contrary side; the venue had not been changed. In all this we have been recording the incidents which form the concluding chapter in a story more wonderful than fiction, a case without a parallel. Its extraordinary character, was visible in all its fulness to the Bar, for we believe it is no secret that many Barristers would gladly have purchased fame by rendering their services gratuitously in behalf of the parents.

On Wednesday morning his Lordship attended Divine Service at St. Peter's Church, where a special sermon was delivered by the Rev. L. M. Jones, B.D., the Sheriff's Chaplain, and the Vicar. The Court opened at eleven o'clock, when the following Magistrates for the County, answered to their names, and formed the Grand Jury for the County:—

Sir John Mansel, Bart., Maesdilo,
 Sir J. J. Hamilton, Bart., The Plâs, Llanstephan,
 W. G. Hughes, Esq., Glancothi,
 J. H. Rees, Esq., Killymaenllwyd,
 Morgan P. Lloyd, Esq., Glansevin,
 W. DuBuisson, Esq., Glynhir,
 W. Morris, Esq., Coomb,
 J. Lewes Thomas Esq., Caeglâs,
 R. Goring Thomas, Esq., Llannon,
 Grismond Philipps, Esq., Cwmgwilly,
 David Edward Jones, Esq.,
 H. Gwynne Vaughan, Esq., Cynghordy,
 J. Benyon, Esq., jun., Trewern,
 Capt. J. W. Arengo Cross, Iscoed,
 H. J. Bath, Esq., Alltyferin,
 Edward Morris Davies, Esq., Uplands,
 Colonel Lewes, Llysnewydd,
 T. C. Morris, Esq., Brynmerddin,
 David A. Pryse, Esq., Oaklands,
 Astley Thompson, Esq., Glyn Abbey,
 W. R. Howell Powell, Esq., Maesgwynne,
 Charles Morgan, Esq., Alltygôg.

* * * * *

The Grand Jury having been sworn, and the usual proclamation against vice, profaneness, and immorality having been read,

His Lordship delivered the charge to the Grand Jury for the county, and said:—

Gentlemen of the Grand Jury—The cases which you will have before you, are not numerous, but in character they are somewhat serious. There is one case to which I must direct your particular attention, because although the facts no doubt are known to most of you,—because it is a case which has attracted a good deal of public attention,—yet it is necessary that I should make some observations to you, because some nice questions may be expected to arise in the course of the investigation in relation to this case. It is the case of Evan Jacob and Hannah his wife, who are charged with the Manslaughter

of their daughter Sarah. The facts may be shortly stated thus:—The girl, Sarah, who will be the subject of your investigation, was twelve years old in the Spring of 1869. She lived with her parents and the rest of their family, consisting of six children, and there seems to have been a man-servant also in the house. There were two daughters in the family older than herself, aged respectively eighteen and fifteen years. In the early part of the year 1867, the parents, who now stand charged with the offence, stated to various persons, and amongst others a gentleman named the Rev. Evan Jones, one of the witnesses who will be called before you, that this child had lived for a considerable time without eating anything. The mother appears to have stated that that had been going on since the preceding October of 1866. This appears to have excited the attention of that gentleman and others. He visited the child from time to time throughout the years 1867 and 1868, and down to the beginning of the year 1869, during all of which time the parents continued to assert that the child neither ate nor drank, and that the operations of nature were for the most part suspended, that there was no evacuation of the bowels, and rarely any voiding of urine. Some medical gentleman, who will also be one of the witnesses brought before you, a gentleman of the name of Hughes, appears to have visited the girl, and expressed in strong terms his disbelief of this remarkable story of the parents. Thereupon Evan Jacob expressed a desire that there should be an investigation of the case. Accordingly a public meeting appears to have been called in April, 1869, when it was determined there should be a watching of the girl, and certain persons were appointed to watch, and they continued to watch whether or not she received any food for some considerable time. It appears that she passed through that ordeal, and it was not discovered, or it is said it was not discovered, that she took any food on that occasion. So she continued to excite the wonder of those who were about her—I mean those who were in the neighbourhood and continued to visit her—as a person exhibiting extraordinary, I may say miraculous, powers of endurance without food. It appears to have struck the Rev. Evan Jones as remarkable that during the summer of 1869, she not only continued to live as it was alleged, without food, but that she became fatter, and in a better condition generally. That seems to have excited his surprise. One does not know why it should be thought more wonderful for a person to grow fatter without food, than that she should continue to live without food. However, whether such be the fact or not, he seems to have expressed himself in strong terms to the parents, and the result was, that another meeting was held in November, 1869, and then a number of medical men determined, with the express consent of the father, and with the implied assent of the mother, to obtain professional nurses, who should watch her and see whether or not she did receive food, and that this watching should last for the period of a fortnight. Nurses were accordingly obtained from Guy's Hospital. They began their watching of the girl on the 9th December, and their instructions appear to have been simply to see whether or not she was fed. They were not to offer her food, and on the other hand, they were not to

refuse to give her food if she asked for it. They appear to have carried out these instructions literally and exactly. And thus the result was,—they beginning their watch on the 9th December, having means of seeing that she had not any food, she seems to have died most naturally within one week from that. She seems to have died from simple Exhaustion, or ordinary Starvation. During that time, the parents, who now stand charged with the death of this girl, were not—by the nurses or medical men in attendance—expressly requested to give any food to the girl, but they were both of them told, from time to time, that the girl was getting weaker and weaker, and it was suggested more than once to the parents, that they should put an end to the watching, but that was also refused. And although it was not said, yet it is manifest, that the meaning intended to be conveyed, and I think you will come to the conclusion that it was conveyed, to the parents by that request, was—that the watching should be put an end to, so that the nurses being withdrawn, the girl should be fed as she had been fed, as it was supposed, up to the time when the watching began. But as I have already said, the parents declined to assent to the withdrawal of the nurses. And again, I will direct your attention to a statement by the uncle of the girl—a man who had married the sister of Hannah Jacob. It is alleged by him that the parents absolutely refused to allow food to be given. But whether that was so or not, that there was an implied request, and such as I have suggested to you, you will probably have to determine. However, the result was, that the child died in eight days from the commencement of the watching. And now the question you will have to determine is, whether or not a *prima facie* case is made out against these parents of having by their wilful intent, or rather by their negligence, in withholding food it was their duty to give, you will have, I repeat, to say whether by that means there is a *prima facie* case calling upon them to meet a charge of having caused the death of this child. Now, gentlemen, I need scarcely remind you that the crime of Manslaughter, which is all that these people stand charged with, consists of this amongst other things—Where death is caused by the neglect of a duty which has direct connexion with life,—it is not a mere neglect of duty which cannot be *supposed* to lead to such fatal results, but it is the neglect of a duty having relation to the safety and the continuance of life,—every person who, by such neglect of duty causes death, is guilty of Manslaughter. I need not remind you that it is the duty of parents, if they have the means themselves, to supply food to their children of tender years. There is no question whatever about the means of these people to supply food to this girl Sarah. Now, between the commencement of the alleged *absolute* fasting, and the time when the watching began, she was, as the evidence shows, in good health, having all the appearance of a child at that age enjoying ordinary good health. It was alleged, as I told you, she had lived for two years without food. That was put to the test, and in a week death ensued. I should scarcely think that there would by any possibility be any one of your body who would entertain any doubt that she had been fed up to the time of that watching commencing. And then, if she had been fed, by whom had she been fed? She lived in this house with the persons

I have mentioned. Her father and her mother seem to have waited upon her, attending to her body and her person, and she appears to have slept in the same room with her parents. It will be for you to say, in the first place—assuming, as I have ventured to assume, that she had been fed up to the time when the watching began—it will be for you to say whether you have any doubt that the parents must have known that she was fed. Now if they knew she was fed up to that time, and I should mention there are some circumstances to which your attention will be called,—the fact, for example, that it is said she did not void her urine, of which however there is evidence that any person about there must have had a knowledge,—these circumstances will lead you in some measure to the conclusion, whether they were telling the truth in their statement that she had not been fed to their knowledge, assuming that to be their statement. If you had come to the conclusion that they did know she had been fed, then the fact that they abstained during the time that the watchers were there, from giving that food which they must have known she had up to that time, was in itself a neglect of that duty which a parent by the law of Nature, as well as the law of this country, owes to his child. And the death following as I have stated in a most natural manner from the withdrawal of food from her, there can be no possibility of doubt that the child died in consequence of her having been under abstention during that time, and from their neglect to supply her with the food which she had previously received. Gentleman, that is the view you will take of the facts, in deciding whether it will be your duty to return a true bill, and to put these persons on their trial, and so give them an opportunity of offering any justification that can be received in Court, for what appears to be a neglect of ordinary duty. I need not give any further observations on that case. . . .

The Grand Jury came into Court and returned a True Bill against Evan and Hannah Jacob for “having feloniously killed and slain one Sarah Jacob at Lletherneuadd, on the 17th Dec., 1869.

The Court afterwards adjourned until Thursday morning at ten o'clock.

The Court opened on Thursday morning at ten o'clock. Considerable anxiety was manifested to hear this extraordinary trial, and at ten o'clock the body of the Court was well filled, every seat in the ladies' gallery being occupied. Mr. Giffard, Q.C., and Mr. Coleridge, instructed by Messrs. Wontner and Sons, of Loudon, Solicitors to the Treasury, appeared for the prosecution; and Mr. Bowen, instructed by Mr. Lewis Bishop, of Llandilo, for Evan Jacob, the father; Mr. Michael, of Swansea, instructed by Mr. Lewis Bishop, defended Hannah Jacob, the mother. Both the prisoners, immediately on their names being called by the Clerk of Arraignment, at once surrendered on bail, and took their places in the dock. The mother was attired in deep mourning, and appeared pale and careworn; the father exhibited traces of anxiety on his countenance, such as might be expected in a person placed in his situation. We learn that the parents have been reduced to the extremest poverty.³²⁶

A very intelligent jury was sworn, as follows:—David Harries, Llanarthney; Thomas Griffiths, High-street, Llandovery; Evan Wil-

liams, Glanmarlais; Edwin Footman, Llandoverly; J. Lewis, Dolgoy; Robert Young, Llanarthney; John Francis, Alltygog; W. Nicholls, Waungranog; Owen Thomas, Water-street, Llanelly; John Williams, Llandre; Thomas Thomas, Llansadwrn; Morgan Williams, Brown Hill, Llansadwrn.³²⁷

The Clerk of the Arraigns read the Indictment (which was interpreted to the prisoners in Welsh), that they did feloniously kill and slay one Sarah Jacob, at Lletherneuadd, on Dec. 17th, 1869. Evan Jacob also stood charged on the Coroner's Inquisition, with the Manslaughter of the aforesaid Sarah Jacob. The prisoners pleaded Not Guilty.

Mr. Giffard proceeded to open the case for the prosecution, and said:—May it please your Lordship and Gentlemen of the Jury—I am instructed, with my learned friend Mr. Coleridge, to conduct the prosecution against the two prisoners at the bar, who are indicted for the Manslaughter of Sarah Jacob. It would be affectation if I were to suppose, that there is one of you who has not heard something about this case before. But I am sure I need only remind you that, by the terms of the oath which you have just taken, you are to act upon sworn evidence given before you to-day, and not upon anything you have previously heard. Whatever you have heard, you may take it for granted no person has had so good an opportunity of learning what the facts are, as you will have had at the close of this trial. And as a matter of the merest justice, you are bound not to assume anything against the prisoners, who now stand upon their trial, which is not proved by the testimony that will be sworn. Gentlemen, probably this much you may take as common knowledge, that on the 17th December, 1869, Sarah Jacob, the cause of whose death you are now to inquire into, died at her father's house. She was at that time between twelve and thirteen years of age, and it is alleged on the part of the prosecution, that her death was caused by Manslaughter, by the culpable acts of the two prisoners at the bar. Gentlemen, it is not suggested that that death was intentionally caused by either of the prisoners; if it had been, they would now be upon their trial, not for the minor offence of Manslaughter, but for the crime of Wilful Murder. And it is not suggested that either the one or the other ever contemplated the sad result which took place. The allegation against them is, that they both engaged in what was in the first instance a scheme of imposture upon the public, that from time to time they persevered in that scheme, possibly in the first instance induced by a desire to have a miracle performed at home, in their house, to be shown to every one. As time went on, it will appear that some sordid motives induced them to persevere in their trick, and when after a time public attention became excited, a matter took place to which I shall have to call your more particular attention. They were in this difficulty, that they must either avow themselves impostors, and so incur the odium of impostors in the neighbourhood in which they lived, or else persevere in the trick in which they were engaged.

They did persevere until it reached the climax on the 17th December, when the unfortunate child died. That is the nature of the case which is presented against the prisoners; and there are some questions both of fact and of law, which in order that you may understand the facts, and see the bearing of them upon the law, it will be my duty, subject to my Lord's correction, to put before you. Now, gentlemen, in the first place I think you must assume that Sarah Jacob, the child in question, was a party to all that was done. You will not suppose, I think, from the evidence, that she was being starved to death against her will. She was in all respects a participator in the trick which was being played. Gentlemen, in a Criminal Court that does not make the smallest difference as to the guilt of the persons with whom she was associated, whether they were her father and mother, or whether they were strangers. Any persons who engage in a dangerous trick, the result of which is loss of life, even if it is the person who is the most injured in the transaction, are in Criminal Law and in a Criminal Court liable, and it is totally immaterial that the negligence of the deceased contributed to death. It is otherwise in a Civil Court. If the defendant can there show that the accident that has caused death, has been materially aided and contributed to by the particular person claiming damages, that fact defeats the person claiming damages, and prevents him from so doing. But as I have already said, it is otherwise in a Criminal Court, for there, if any person carry on any dangerous experiment for which there is no legal excuse, and death is the result, that person is guilty of Manslaughter, although the person whose life is lost were a party to the transaction. Gentlemen, I think it is necessary to clear the way before I give you a short narrative of the facts that led up to this story. I gather from a good deal of the circumstances that have already been gone into, that a great amount of attention had been excited. There is little doubt that Sarah Jacob was a party to the transaction, and there is equally little doubt that the parents, both the one and the other, were aiding and assisting in the delusion. The principal question for you to consider is, whether when the child was wasting away from want of food, they abstained from giving it to her—it matters little whether from a desire to assist in the trick, or a desire to avoid exposure. Shortly related, the narrative is this. About the year 1867, this girl appears to have been affected by what is not an uncommon circumstance in girls of her age, that is, fits of Hysterics. Gentlemen, I use a popular phrase, because I believe there is in some of the Depositions a quantity of scientific words which mean the same thing, but which probably you would not so well understand. This girl being in that condition, it is extremely likely that that which afterwards took place was suggested by something that was really true. Probably you will think that this was not a scheme devised by the two prisoners at the bar in the first instance, that the truth was, the girl was able to exist on comparatively little food, and then from it being a remarkable thing, and from having their attention called to it in the first instance, there was an agreement and a gradual desire to make it a sort of miracle. And so instead of saying that the child was living on very little food, the parents told their neighbours and friends that she was a miraculous child, and lived on

no food at all. Gentlemen, I observe also that relative to this imposture, medical men are engaged in serious discussion, and broaching many theories. Now, with the utmost respect for the gentlemen of the medical profession, I cannot help saying that plain common sense is a better guide in such a case as this, than the most abstruse scientific theory in the world. And if there were forty thousand medical men to come forward and declare that a person could live without food, still I boldly say I should assert with the utmost confidence that they were talking nonsense. Gentlemen, that this child did live with only a little food, is probably the origin of this whole story. As I have told you she became a marvel, a miracle in the neighbourhood, and people went to see her. From time to time there is no doubt that the father and mother received money for the exhibition, and the mode in which the money was received, appears to me to throw some light on the course of conduct that was pursued. They seem to have got into their heads this, that it relieved them from all responsibility when they were taking money, if a form was observed,—if money was to be placed on the girl's breast, and not directly given to either of them. You will find instances of that kind, where the money was exhibited on the girl's breast. And it will strike you as wonderful, that a child, of her age was pursuing this course of deception. But apart from a particular complaint which wise people say induces a desire to conceal, you will find that modes were adopted to render extremely agreeable to this child, the lying in bed to which she was subjected. The child, who was intelligent and precocious, and perhaps a little vain, was led to believe she was something wonderful. Her hair was carefully dressed, and she was decorated in a way far beyond her condition in life. All kinds of ornaments were provided her, she had an embroidered nightgown, and as I have just said her hair was done up in a particular way. I understand she was a pretty child, and looked extremely well when dressed in this way. She was decked out, and made much of. And you can understand, a child of this age, in such a condition, being a great wonder to the place. Therefore you have on the one hand the parents with an obvious motive, and in the second place making this exhibition profitable to childish vanity, and this little girl compelled to keep herself a party to this delusion, endeavouring to keep up the state at which it had arrived, endeavouring to keep up the impression that she was a miracle—a supposition that a very little knowledge of human nature, such as the simplest man or even a child might acquire, would show to be a folly. This matter might have remained in the obscurity in which it occurred, but unfortunately for the child and the parents too, the matter was supposed to have a wider influence. In the middle of this 19th century, some people began to contend that this was a miracle. Of course in the ordinary form, the first appeal is to the Newspapers, and there is discussion. A medical man, however, was induced to visit. He arrived at the conclusion that the whole thing was a delusion. He examined her, and heard sounds in the child's bowels, which convinced him that food was being given to her, and made no secret of his conviction and belief that the whole thing was a delusion. The result of that was, that a discussion ensued. People took various parts; some people were simple enough to be-

lieve that the pretended miracle was true, and others adhered to the view that this medical gentleman had taken. Eventually there was a sort of agreement that the child should be watched, and there was a sort of watching which resulted favourably to the parents. But then those persons who were astute, and considered what might be done if parties were likely to enter into such a scheme, found out a variety of defects in the system of watching, and that every one of the precautions that were supposed to prevent food being taken, might every one of them be evaded. The result of that was, most unfortunately, it was resolved to try an experiment under circumstances much more rigorous, and much more likely to be attended with fatal results. And for some reason or other, the parties at the head of Guy's Hospital, in London, or some of them, appear to have consented that four experienced nurses should be sent down to the place where the father and mother lived, that they should relieve each other in watching this child night and day. Gentlemen, one can hardly speak with patience and temper of a transaction in which a child of twelve years of age, is allowed to die in the presence of experienced persons, who were there apparently to watch the experiment of a human being being starved to death, without offering or attempting to force the child to take food. That is not the question, however, more immediately before you. The question now before you is, whether those two prisoners at the bar are responsible for what was done. And, Gentlemen, you will find on that subject, I think, overwhelming evidence that both the one and the other were parties to the transaction. First of all, in the inquiry—what was the cause of the child's death? Gentlemen, upon that subject one must go back a little. She had been living from the year 1867 until the watching began, upon very little food, but yet looking tolerably well. In that matter, of course you will have the evidence of the medical men, which, as to that fact, is of course more important than when they are going into theories. You will have their description. Whatever the appearance of the child originally, and the appearance that was presented at death, you will find from the year 1867 until the 9th December, 1869, when the watching began, the child was thriving. Instead of becoming emaciated, as one would expect with a person who was being starved to death, and able to live without food, as suggested—but really, Gentlemen, I will not discuss that further. The child seemed to be well; but from the hour the watching began, the child wasted away. A gradual weakness came on until on the 17th December, as I have mentioned to you before, the child died. The first question you will have to determine is—What was the cause of death? And let me here ask you to look at the question as though you were discussing any other matter. Just ask yourselves this question—I find a child well, up to the time when she was watched, that afterwards she neither took, nor did others provide her with, food. I find from that hour symptoms coming upon her, of a person who is not fed; I find them increasing in intensity, until death takes place. You might have various theories suggested about it. But you further say—I find after death, there is no indication of disease which should lead to death. Would you not have the fact of death accounted for by Starvation in the simplest and most natural manner? On the

other hand, remember you would not have the fact of death accounted for, unless you suppose Starvation is the cause. You have the fact that food was withheld from this child. If you arrive at that first conclusion that she died because she was starved to death, then the second question is—who is responsible for it? Gentlemen, I cannot help feeling you may be of opinion before this case is over that there are others besides the two prisoners at the bar who may have been responsible for that transaction. As I have mentioned to you before, in point of law, all who aid in the performance of the dangerous experiment, are responsible if death results. But although others may be responsible, though peradventure you may regret that others are not before you, that does not relieve the prisoners at the bar from being responsible. They initiated the trick, they aided and assisted in the trick, and if death was the result of their act, together with the acts of others, they were equally responsible. Now from the time the watching began, you will have most minute, I was about to say most appallingly minute, descriptions of the symptoms which this unfortunate child exhibited. I say appallingly minute, because it seems to be something which is beyond one's experience, and beyond one's reading, that you should have symptoms of a person dying from Starvation, described with minuteness until death takes place. Now, then, what are the father and mother doing at that time? You must take one of two different views of the matter according as you believe what is the truth of the story. The father and mother were there. No one knew better than they, if you take one view of this case, that that child was, by their act, carrying on an imposture for months, I might say for years. They would know, if you take that view of the question, that the experiment was now being tried under circumstances when that child could not get food. They, both one and the other of them, were aiding and assisting in an experiment which, no one could know so well as themselves, was of a most dangerous character, because whatever might be said in excuse for the nurses,—and one experiences some little difficulty in finding any excuse for them,—they were there upon the allegation of the father and mother, that the child had gone all this time without food. And if you are of opinion that the father and mother had been supplying food during those eighteen months or two years,—that they had been parties to the trick,—you will see in what position they were placed, when they knew that a watch was set, and that the child was going without food. Again they might have known human nature sufficiently well,—the merest child would have known,—that to go on day after day without receiving food or sustenance of any character at all, must be in the highest degree culpable. And you will find, although appeals are made to the father more than once, that he refuses to interfere, he refuses to allow the watch to be withdrawn, he refuses to offer food to the child. And it is because of the most idle excuse, that he had made an oath that he never would offer the child food unless she asked for it. Gentlemen, I need not say to you again, that independent of the obligations which Nature is supposed to impose, the parents were bound to provide this child with food. Therefore under whatever circumstances this oath may have been taken, it affords no excuse. And one can hardly see that it is human to offer any such excuse. And yet it is the only excuse

offered for refusing, even at the last moment, to interfere and save the child's life. Doubtless if that had been done, the father knew he would lose his reputation. Gentlemen, these are shortly the facts of the case. First, as I have said, you have to inquire what was the cause of the child's death; and secondly, if Starvation was the cause of the child's death, who is responsible for that which takes place? Now the father and mother are primarily the persons having the care and custody of their child. But I would add also, that I think you will be of opinion that this is not a case in which the father and mother were withholding food from the child against the child's will. One is only astonished to find that the will of the child could have been so strong as to resist the natural promptings of hunger. This is clear, that the parents were terrified lest the child's resolution should break down, because you will find it was made a bargain by them, that the nurses should not feed in her presence. Gentlemen, after all, this gives rise to the suspicion of what was going on,—that there were other things still more mysterious,—and you will be of that opinion, when you come to consider the symptoms described. It was stated by both parents that the child's arms, or rather that one of her arms, was paralysed. You will find there was not the slightest evidence of that. You will find also that the mother said the child was wholly unable to open her mouth and put out her tongue, when the medical man came to visit her. You will find that that was wholly untrue. On the particular occasion when that statement was made, that the arm was paralysed, the child was asked to read a verse to them, and being rather proud of her performance in that respect, when a book was fetched, the mother endeavoured to find the passage. It was a Bible from which the child was to read, and the mother was unable to find the particular passage, upon which the child, forgetful for the moment of the part it was intended to play, takes the book out of the mother's hands, with the paralysed arm, and reads the passage with great readiness. It was immediately observed by the medical man, who detected that part of the trick. You will ask yourselves the meaning of all this—why there was the mention of these symptoms, why it was suggested the arm was paralysed, and that the child was unable to put out its tongue. It partly added to the wonder of the case, it tended to create greater peculiarities in the case, and then it tended to prevent that examination of the child which the parents dreaded. You will find that when the medical gentleman, Dr. Pearson Hughes, went to know the particulars of the case, and to form his own judgment,—and he did form his own judgment, and a very different one from the supposition that a miracle was going on,—so angry was the father with the examination of his trick, that he actually summoned Dr. Pearson Hughes for an assault upon his child. He was charged with having committed an assault on the child during his examination. The result of that summons of course was, that it was dismissed. It sufficiently shows what the nature of the father's temper was at that time, in order to prevent any inquiry, and to maintain his trick. Gentlemen, as I have said, these are really the short facts of the case up to the time of death. When death in fact takes place, a post-mortem examination is held. You will hear, and you will probably attach much greater importance to

the description of the facts which medical men have seen, than to the various theories that have been ventilated without experience. Gentlemen, this fact is ascertained, that in the child's body, in the bowels, were found traces of food. You will hear those things from the witnesses, and I do not want to go unnecessarily into that part of the case. But you will find, as I have said, by the post-mortem examination, that there were traces which will leave no doubt whatever in your minds that up to the time the watching began, the child was fed. The question therefore arises—By whom? And so it becomes material that I should call your attention to the character of the premises she occupied. It was a small cottage with three rooms; the father and mother slept in the same room with the girl, a small room, before the watching began, and they attended to this girl. She was always represented to be utterly unable to move one arm to reach the other portions of her body. You will ask yourselves, if the father and mother had been waiting on this child for three or four years, who was feeding her during the eighteen months preceding the watching? Who could have fed her? because that she was fed, that she really did not live without food and sustenance, that the whole story was an unhappy delusion, followed by fatal results, are matters I will not weary you by arguing. And if she really was fed up to the time the watching began, who did it? Because if you are of opinion the two prisoners at the bar did it, no one can doubt that they were parties to the trick. If it were not those two people, who was it? They made her bed, they attended upon her, they slept in the same room, and the mother at all events was continually with her, although the father in the daytime might sometimes be absent. Who else could have done it? If they did, up to the time the watching began, give the child food, and afterwards while the experiment was going on withheld it, I do not mean against the girl's will, then they are the persons responsible. You will ask yourselves, if they were not the persons who fed her, who possibly could have done it? Who could have persisted in this course of delusion upon them for eighteen months? Gentlemen, it seems almost unnecessary to ask you that question, because if in truth you come to the conclusion that she was fed up to the period of the commencement of the watching, who else but the father and mother could have done it? It is not part of my duty, nor will it probably be a part of yours, to devise or discover in what way the delusion was kept up, even during that imperfect watching which gave rise to the discussion which secured the more fatal one. There is no doubt that upon the girl being examined after death, there was found a somewhat unusual hollow under one of her arms. It has been suggested as possibly one mode by which this was effected, that the girl was living on food obtained from a bottle or something of the sort, kept under that arm. It may be so, or it may not have been so, but speaking to your better judgment I must appeal to you that it does not appear to be necessary that you or I should come to any particular conclusion as to the mode in which it was done. I appeal to your common sense whether the child did live for eighteen months without food. If she did not, then food was supplied by some one, and it matters little whether it was by means of a bottle held under her arm, or any other way which the

ingenuity of persons by whom the delusion was kept up, might suggest. Perhaps some of you have been witnesses before now, of a juggler's trick. You cannot see how it is done, it is generally done before your attention is called to it. But you know when you are looking at a juggler's trick, that it is one. You do not want to satisfy yourselves how it is done; you do not want that, in order to believe it is a delusion. And still a delusion it is. It strikes you as being very curious. But does anyone doubt it is a juggler's trick? So I suggest that a delusion having been committed in this case, it is not requisite you should discover how it has been committed. Enough to know that it was committed. And the two prisoners at the bar are the persons who had the opportunity of devising that trick. Gentlemen, one or two observations arise upon the exact symptoms of the watching, and then I will not further detain you from the evidence. It would appear that for the first day or two the child was cheerful and apparently happy. And there is no doubt that the whole of this thing was planned, and that the watching was originally intended to extend to fourteen days. But whatever be the exact number of days, I care not. It will be apparent from the symptoms I have mentioned, that the child was fed, and well fed up to the time the watching began. And probably those two prisoners hoped that she might have lasted out the watch, and then their reputation would be established for ever. But about the third or fourth day, dangerous symptoms began to set in. Upon that, gentlemen, I will not say much in description. But you will find that when the child lost consciousness, and when there was no power to keep up the delusion, one of the most marked symptoms was the waving about of this paralysed arm. So you will find that the medical men examined her; they are not upon their trial, and I say no more about them; but you will find they describe with great minuteness the acceleration of the pulse, and increasing exhaustion—all the symptoms in fact that you would expect from a person who was about to die from Starvation. The uncle of the child came to the father under the urgent pressure of these symptoms, and appealed to him to give the child food. He refused, he angrily refused, using words which I will not repeat at this moment, but which sufficiently showed he was determined, so far as he was concerned, that the experiment should not be discontinued. Gentlemen, this is the unhappy result. The child is dead. This child was starved to death. I believe you will entertain no doubt about that. And as I have said, when you have all these facts before you, you will probably come to this conclusion, that these two persons (and I have a word to say, when the moment comes, about the relation in the indictment which the female prisoner bears by reason of her position as wife), I say you will probably have no doubt that these two persons were at that time carrying on a course of delusion and deceit. They were hoping against hope that the child would survive the trial. And there were these four nurses watching them, not permitting them to come near the bed, not permitting them to carry any food,³²⁸ so that these two prisoners both knew the child was without food. The character of the symptoms I have described, are important to the mind of any person possessed of common sense, and they show that the child was dying, and in that condition of

things, both the one and the other of the prisoners deliberately abstained from giving that child food, they persisted in the experiment until the child died. Now, it would be a very strange system of jurisprudence indeed, in which conduct of that sort would not be open to the Criminal Law. It certainly is so, as I understand the law of England. And now it is said,—I observe it is suggested,—that the wife is not responsible because she is the wife. Gentlemen, the law on that subject is as simple as it can be. There are cases, I admit, where a felony is committed, when the husband and wife are not both responsible; I do not think it is necessary to go into that question now. There is the presumption in law, and it is a matter of presumption,—where an act is done in the presence of both, there the wife is assumed to be under the coercion of her husband. But that coercion is meant to be physical coercion, so that it has been held that mental and moral coercion will not do. It has been held where a husband is lying on a bed paralysed, and a wife commits a felony in his presence, that the wife is responsible. But it is a matter of presumption. When the husband is away, and the wife commits an act, it has been held that the wife is as much responsible as the husband. But if you are of opinion here that the wife was aiding and assisting in a common purpose,—that assistance being given without any physical coercion of the husband from time to time, it is almost idle to discuss this question. And you remember in this case that the wife was in the house from time to time when the father and husband was away, that from time to time she had ample opportunity, had she been so disposed, to disclose the whole delusion, and to cause this child to take food. I say it is idle therefore to discuss the question of her liability. Without the assistance of the wife, the delusion was impossible,—such a trick could not have been performed. If therefore you are of opinion that this was the trick I have described it to be, if you are of opinion that the trick was pursued in the manner that I have described, then the one prisoner is as guilty as the other, and the question of physical coercion does not arise. Gentlemen, those are the facts which will be put in proof before you, and you will say whether anyone is responsible for the young girl's death, provided you are agreed upon the preliminary question that on the 17th Dec., 1869, that child died from Starvation.³²⁹

The Rev. Evan Jones, B.D., the Rev. Wm. Thomas, M.A., and Mr. John Jones, Solicitor, gave evidence similar to that which they had previously given before the Magistrates; as did also Dr. Pearson Hughes, who, however, stated certain additional facts:—that the condition of the pulse was “not strong,” “not bad,” “not very strong”; and “when I was examining her chest . . . she tried to resist me with her two hands.”

Mr. Giffard—“Did she appear to have any difficulty at all in using both hands?—I could not perceive any.” . . .

While you were there, did you see whether there was any indication

of unconsciousness, or anything of that sort, about the girl?—Yes, she used to get those “fits,” as her mother called them.

Do you as a medical man think there was any fit?—I do not.

What indications did she present?—A sort of momentary apparent unconsciousness, closing the eyes for the time.

What conclusion did you form from this examination as to the general state of her health?—I thought she was living well, and that she was in good health. . . .

Mr. Giffard—I believe the instances of Starvation that come under medical men's attention, are very rare. Have you ever had a case of Starvation that you have attended yourself?—Yes, I have seen one, I think.

What, according to your judgment and reading, is about the limit of the time that a person can exist without food?—From reading I should say, from four to ten days.

I suppose it is not a matter that you can form any exact judgment upon?—I do not suppose anybody can.

Cross-examined by Mr. Bowen—Better than your reading, you have had the singular advantage lately, of having a little practical experience yourself, have you not?—I have.

You have attended a woman, since this business, who lived for three months on a spoonful a day?—No, no; never.

Near Llandovery?—No.

You said she did?—No, never.

And that she went eleven days without anything?—No.

And on the eleventh day you forcibly administered food?—No, never. You are starting with the wrong case.

What case am I talking about?—You are assuming I attended a case that I never have.

At Cennarth, near Llandovery?—I know; but she was taking food every day.

A spoonful?—No, no; many spoonfuls.

How many?—What a regular weak invalid would, a fortnight or so before death.

How long did she live without food, till you administered it forcibly?—She had been taking it not once, but twenty, thirty, forty, fifty times a day, only she brought the best part of it back.

You administered food to her yourself, I think, forcibly, but she would not take food?—Yes, I administered it forcibly, because I thought she could not take it.

You administered it forcibly, and the poor woman died?—No, not at once.

How long after you forcibly administered it?—Twenty-seven hours.

She died twenty-seven hours after you forcibly administered it?—Yes, but she was better for twelve hours, and sank afterwards.

Do you mean really to say, that for about ten days she took forty or fifty spoonfuls a day, or whatever number you please to say?—I believe she was offered one hundred in the day.

It is not offering, but how many did she take?—I was not there.

You were not there?—Not all day.

On this occasion when you visited Sarah Jacob, Mr. Davies, the family Doctor was with you?—No.

Mr. Evan Davies was with you?—Yes.

I believe at that time, your opinion was that the girl was suffering from Hysteria?—Yes.

I believe in these hysterical cases patients are "apt to fancy all kinds of things," I am taking your own words?—I believe they do very often, if they are allowed to.

And in such cases, children are "very prone to use deceit"?—Yes, I suppose so, if you call her a child—and she was a child.

I use your own words—"In such cases children are very prone to deceit." Is that your opinion now, as it was?—Yes, when suffering under Hysteria. . . .

Cross-examined by Mr. Michael. . . .

You were allowed then to make a full and free examination?—Yes.

And the result of the examination was that you considered the child was suffering from Hysterical disease?—Yes.

Is Hysterical disease simulative? Does it put on the form of other diseases?—Certainly it does.

All other diseases?—Yes, I think so.

May you have feigned Paralysis?—Yes, certainly.

Is it not very common with girls, when they have Hysterical disease, to feign all kinds of diseases that they are acquainted with? I believe a number do.

And especially to secrete objects?—I cannot go so far as that really.

In your experience, are girls not very apt to secrete objects in the bed with them?—I have no experience of that; I have not much experience, except from reading of it.

Have you had any experience of the Cataleptic form of disease?—I have never seen a case of Catalepsy in my life.

I will not ask you about what you do not know; but are there diseases in which no food *can* be taken?—I don't know of any; I never heard of one.

Supposing there were something pressing on the tube that leads down to the stomach, could food be taken then?—In that case there would be a mechanical obstruction.

I ask you!—Yes, if you call that a disease.

Are there forms of disease that might prevent a person from taking food?—For a short time.

You mean that death would ensue?—Yes, certainly.

Are there other diseases in which it would be very difficult to take food?—Yes.

Would Hysterical disease induce a very painful condition to the person, of various parts of the body?—As a rule, not.

Well, as an exception?—Well, as an exception, it might happen so, but as a rule, certainly not. In nine hundred and ninety-nine cases out of a thousand, there is no harm to body or mind in hysteria.

But do not persons in Hysterical disease, fancy they are suffering pain?—Oh, yes, they fancy.

But would not that fancied suffering, prevent a person from taking food?—I cannot say that.

Is there something like a ball that rises up in the throat of girls in Hysterical disease?—Yes.

Does that prevent food being taken?—I don't know that it ever lasts any time.

How often may it come on?—I have never known or read of it coming on so often as to prevent the taking of food half-a-dozen times a day.

How often do you think?—Upon my word, I should not like to be an expert; it might come on many times in the day, perhaps only once a week.

Are there not some forms of this Nervous Disease in which a mere breath of air will bring on the symptoms?—Yes, I believe there are.

Or any noise?—Or any noise.

Or anything that excites the Nervous System at all?—Yes.

And would not girls, delicate girls, be very subject to that form, if they were Hysterical?—I believe they would.

About the gurgling that was heard in the stomach; do you wish the jury to understand that that is a direct evidence of there being some food in the stomach?—It is a direct evidence of there being some liquid—some fluid.

Would not air make the noise?—I do not believe it; I have never seen it or heard it.

Do you acknowledge that Casper, the German Physiologist, is a great authority on matters of this kind?—Yes, he is allowed to be.

The greatest in Europe, I believe?—He is allowed to be.

If he relates that in a person who had been voluntarily starving himself for many days, much intestinal flatus was to be felt on pressure, would that alter your opinion?—There would have been very little, I should think; there must have been some fluid with it.

Supposing there had been Hysterical Paralysis of the leg, would the mother have been able to distinguish whether it was real or feigned Paralysis?—I daresay not; I should say not.

Or the father?—Or the father.

No ordinary observer?—No ordinary observer.

Would the tickling of the feet, convince you that there was no Paralysis?—The general nature of the case, together with that.

I ask you about the tickling. You say there was no Paralysis?—That convinced me.

Do you mean the jury to understand that because the leg moved when the foot was tickled, that that was evidence that there was no Paralysis?—It was evidence to me. I understand there was no Paralysis, because the two legs voluntarily moved from her own muscular power.

Supposing a case of genuine and not Hysterical Paralysis, and you tickled the soles of the feet, would there not be some motion?—In some (cases of) Paralysis I think there is.

Would there be in Hysterical Paralysis?—There would in hysterical Paralysis certainly be motion.

And the mother and every other person would be deceived?—They would be deceived, there is no doubt of it.

Would that apply to Paralysis of the arm also?—Of course they would be deceived quite as much in the arm as in the leg.

If a girl, suffering from this form of disease, told her father and mother that she was unable to move the arm and the leg, would they

have any means, without medical knowledge, of knowing whether it was true or not?—No.

Re-examined by Mr. Giffard—What do you mean by Hysterical Paralysis? Is there such a thing as real Paralysis, in which the power of voluntary motion is entirely lost?—Yes, in real Paralysis.

What is called Hysterical Paralysis?—Where there is no real loss of power.

Mr. Bowen—Simulated.

Mr. Giffard—I rather object to long words, but I will put it to you, “simulated,” pretended?—In pretended Paralysis the persons fancy they have lost it, and have not.

My friend has asked you whether a mechanical obstruction might prevent food going down into the stomach; I suppose it might?—Yes.

Any mechanical obstruction?—Yes.

Either a gag externally or a lump internally?—Exactly.

Did you ever see, all the time you were examining this girl, any trace of the hysterical ball that rises in the throat?—None whatever.

Is it a matter at all difficult for any medical man to discover, if there is a fit of Hysteria with the Hysterical ball?—Not when it is once on.

You spoke of the “fits” that took place, or what the mother called “fits.” Was there any such indication during those “fits”?—No; I did not see any at all.³³⁰

Dr. Robert Fowler was then sworn and examined. We detailed the same facts as have been previously cited. On mentioning the sound of gurgling detected in the stomach, Mr. Coleridge asked:—“According to the best of your belief and opinion, that must be produced by a mixture of fluid and air?” *Witness*—“It is produced by the breaking of the bubbles of the air in the liquid.” After describing the symptoms of the so-called fainting-fit the girl had, when visited on the 30th August, 1869, Mr. Coleridge said—“In your opinion, were those symptoms likely to be such as you would find in a fainting-fit?” *Witness*—“Certainly not.” “In a fainting-fit, or in such a fit as they described this to you, what would be the symptoms that you would expect?”—“There would be pallor of the face; there would be more or less suspension of the pulse; there would be a motionless condition of the eyeball when you lifted up the lid.” “And none of those things did happen on this occasion?”—“They did not.” “Did the mother tell you at all, what it was? Did she make any explanation of this fit, as she called it?”—“It was translated (by Mr. T. E. Davies) to me as a fainting-fit.”³³¹ (It

was arranged that Mr. T. E. Davies should, if necessary, correct the witness as to what took place on the occasion.)

Mr. Coleridge—What sort of bed was it? Was it a very soft and easy one, or not?—It was a poor bed that she was lying on; there was a sacking beneath it.

Taking that bed, and judging from your experience, would you have expected to find bed-sores, or anything of that sort, from her having lain there during the time represented?—I certainly should have expected marks of pressure on the healthy side, and probably bed sores on the alleged paralysed side.

How long a time in your opinion could she have lain on such a bed without having sores?—I have known sores to follow in a week, on a paralysed side.

You would expect to find them there, rather more than on a healthy side?—Undoubtedly.

Taking a bed like this, how long do you suppose she could have lain without sores on the healthy side?—I certainly should have expected to find marks of pressure on the healthy side.

But within what time after lying on such a bed?—It varies, of course, with the condition of a person's body.

Twenty-three months, we have heard, she lay on this bed?—There would be undoubted marks of pressure.

As far as you are able to say from your judgment in examining her, did you detect anything the matter with her to prevent the possibility of her taking food?—Nothing whatever.

Cross-examined by Mr. Bowen—I believe the symptoms you saw,—the fits you speak of, were consistent with hysterical fits?—They were quite.

You say you wished to examine the back, and I think you told us the father said you could not do it, as it would throw her into a fit, but you might do it when they were changing the bed if you stayed there?—Quite so.

He did not object to your doing it; he only objected to the particular time?—To the time.

You speak of the state of the sheets. I believe you ascertained that another child, a little girl, slept in the bed with her?—On that occasion I did not.

Since you have heard it?—Since, I have heard that a child had slept there.

I believe the opinion you formed was, that she was suffering from Hysterical Epilepsy?—I believe the fits described, which she was said to have had, to have been Hysterical Epilepsy.

I am speaking now generally. It is a very common form of Hysteria, particularly in young persons, to conceal the fact that they are taking food?—That is one of the forms of Hysteria; I will not say a common form.

But you can tell us, from your reading and experience, whether it is not a common form?—I will not say a common form; it is a form of Hysteria.

I believe that deception is also a very common form that this disease

takes in young persons?—It is one of the symptoms of a form of Hysteria, no doubt.

I believe you saw both the parents, and the opinion you came to from this visit to Llandyssil was, that she was deceiving her parents?—At that time, I was decidedly inclined to believe that she was.

You did not see her afterwards, I believe?—I did not.

Cross-examined by Mr. Michael—Your opinion was that this girl was able to get out of bed?—It was.

And that she was a night-feeder?—I did believe that.

And that carrying out her deception, she used the dark hours of the night in order to obtain food?—I did believe it.

Now, suppose that a person had progressively abstained from food, would the quantity required, become less and less?—Some persons can habituate themselves to a smaller allowance of food than others.

Is that peculiarly so, in the abnormal conditions you have been describing?—In Hysteria?

In Hysteria?—In some forms of Hysteria.^{331*}

And have you in your experience noticed that there is a secretive tendency in those people, especially girls?—I have.

I suppose this girl would have been quite able to tear her own nails?—I should believe quite able.

Upon your examination, you had no doubt there was a form of disease of some kind?—I had no doubt in my own mind.

How do you account for the fact of the diminution of temperature on the left side?—Every part of the body that is not so much used as another, would necessarily be of less temperature.

Then do you say that she persistently refused to use that side?—I should say, certainly.

Would that deceive any one but an experienced medical observer?—It might.

But would it not require considerable medical knowledge to discover that a person was malingering, or shamming that form of disease?—It would require medical knowledge.

How do you account for the fact that after remaining in bed for twenty-three months, she had no bed-sores, on this unequal bed?—I do not believe she did remain in bed.

Then your assumption is, that she did not remain in bed during the whole of that time?—I should say certainly not—continuously, I mean.

Is that on the assumption that she got up at night?—That is on the assumption that she got up at night, and probably in the absence, in the daytime, of others who may have watched her.

Is the drawing-down of the foot that you have described, a form of Nervous Disease?—We get that—one would say—endeavour to show loss of power, in Hysteria.

There was that manifestation of something, to ordinary observers, different to the common?—They may not have observed the fact which I, as a skilled observer, did observe.

But you, as a skilled observer, noticed that?—I did.

How long do you say it would be necessary to be out of bed every day, in order to prevent bed-sores appearing?—It is very difficult to answer that. A daily getting out of bed would (in such a case as this, in my opinion) be quite sufficient.

For how long a period? Can you give me any idea?—I will not pledge myself to any time. It is very difficult to answer.

Would an hour be sufficient?—I should think it might, to allow the elasticity of the tissues to restore itself.

Then for twenty-three hours, a person might lie on a rough bed, and one hour would be quite sufficient to remove the tendency to any formation of sores?—It is quite possible.

I suppose you agree with the last witness, that there may be some mechanical obstructions, which would render it very difficult to take food?—Quite so.

What is the name of that tube which leads from the mouth into the stomach?—The gullet.

Is that subject to various forms of Hysteria?—One of the forms of Hysteria, is a spasm of the gullet.

Would the attempt to take food, be liable to bring on that spasm?—It might in an Hysterical girl.

I take it from you, that this was an Hysterical girl, and that spasm of the gullet does occur in Hysterical girls; would the attempt to take food, be liable to bring on that spasm?—It might in an Hysterical girl,—assuming that an aversion to food, and the allegement that she was not taking food, were some of the symptoms.

In these forms of the disease, is there any organic change in any of the organs of the body?—In Hysteria?

Yes.—None discoverable.

Suppose a person died suddenly, although that person had had very severe Hysteria, would you discover any symptoms in any of the organs of the body?—I have never heard of the case of a person dying from Hysteria.³³²

Assume, if you please, that a person died suddenly from any other cause, would you then, on examination of the organs of the body, find anything enabling you to say that the person who died, had Hysteria?—Certainly not.

There is no organic change?—I know of none.

In what part of the body is the disease resident?—I should call it a Perversion of the Will.

Does that affect the Nervous System?—It is a defect of the Nervous System.

Do you make the Will, synonymous with the Nervous System?—The Will is a function of the Nervous System.

What part of it?—The grey matter of the Brain.

Is it the grey matter of the Brain, that effects Motion?—The grey Brain-matter is the seat of the Will, which no doubt originates Motion. The result is transmitted through the white matter.

I must ask for information; we do not know these things. Is it the grey matter of the Brain, that you say originates these Nervous Motions in Hysteria?—I should say the grey matter of the Brain originates (as I have described) Motion in Hysteria, and in health.³³³

What has the Spine got to do with it—the Spinal Cord?—I do not say that the Spinal Cord originates the Motion. I will to move my hand; that Will is a function of the Brain, transmitted through the Cord.

Must both coalesce?—Quite so.³³⁴

Is there any other portion of the body, or of the Nervous System, affected in Hysteria?—According to some authorities there is.³³⁵

What is it?—What we call the Sympathetic System.

Does that affect the Stomach?—Largely.

Would you expect to find the Stomach largely affected, where there is that form of disease?—Not in every instance of the disease—in some forms of Hysteria.

That would be a very usual thing to find?—Symptoms referrible to the Stomach, are frequently found in Hysteria.

Does the Sympathetic System communicate very largely with the Stomach?—It does.

Mr. Justice Hannen—What is it that you mean by the Sympathetic System?—It is a portion of the Nervous System apart from the Brain and Spinal Cord.³³⁶

Mr. Michael—In these diseased states of the Nervous System there is a very Perverted Will, is there not?—I should say so.

People frequently drink their own water?—I do not say they frequently do so; they do it.

And they would do many extraordinary things to avoid detection?—They would.

And are they clever in avoiding detection?—Frequently.

Even by the persons most intimately connected with them?—Frequently.

Re-examined by Mr. Giffard—May I ask, is there any difference in the meaning of the word "Will," when used medically, and when used popularly?—I should say not.

Or "Perverted Will"?—Or "Perverted Will."

Then you mean that people desire to do what they ought not to do. Is that it?—Medical men recognise what they call a morbid condition of the Will.

That means disease?—Disease.

A "Perverted Will" is when people desire to do what they ought not to desire to do?—They desire to do, and they do, as they ought not to do.³³⁷

That is putting the Will into effect; but a "Perverted Will" is a desire to do, what they ought not to desire to do. I do not know that we have much to do with the grey matter, or the white matter, of the Brain; but you speak of that with some confidence. Is that one of those well-ascertained facts on which all medical men are agreed?—I think so—the grey matter of the Brain is the active part.

That is agreed by everybody?—I should say so, at the present day.³³⁸

Just one word about the opinion which you say you formed at one time. You told my friend Mr. Bowen that you had formed at one time, the opinion that this child was deceiving her parents. Did you continue to be of that opinion?

(Mr. Bowen objected to the question, but the objection was overruled, and the question repeated.)

The Witness—I did not.

Although I might leave it there, I will ask you what induced you to change your mind?—I heard sufficient at the Magisterial examination.

Mr. Giffard—You told my friend Mr. Michael, that you had discovered, or assumed, that there was disease existing in the girl at the time you saw her. Was that a conclusion from your mere observation of her physical state, or did you couple with it the statement made to you by the parents, in order to come to that conclusion?—I coupled them both.

And was it on the assumption that the parents told you the truth, that you came to your conclusion?—Quite so.³³⁹

Mr. Thomas E. Davies then gave similar evidence to that which he detailed before the Magistrates.

The four Nurses gave similar evidence to that which they had respectively and previously, and in the same order, given before the Magistrates.

Maria Duncan, the servant at Blaenblodau, was examined immediately after Sister Clinch, and gave similar evidence to that which she gave before the Magistrates.

Great stir and interest became manifest in the Court when Mr. Giffard, Q.C., rose, and called Mr. John Hughes. This gentleman was the only one of the five medical men visiting the girl, who was called as a witness by the Prosecution. He deposed as follows:—

Mr. Giffard—You are a medical man, I believe?—I am.

Were you cognizant of the watch about to be set upon this girl?—I was not cognizant of its being about to be set; I knew nothing of it until it had been instituted.

And I believe you found your name had been included as one of the Medical Committee?—Without my consent or consultation.

But after it had been done, did you go over to the girl's father's house?—I did.

When was that?—On Tuesday, the 14th of December last.

Mr. Hughes then detailed (in the manner previously cited in this history) the occurrences pertaining to his two visits to Llethernoyadd-ucha on the Tuesday and Thursday respectively. His examination was then continued:—

Was that the whole of the conversation?—That was the whole of the conversation that occurred in the presence of the father.

I must not ask you for any more; but in consequence of what you saw, and what you were not permitted to see, did you resign as one of the Medical Committee?—I did that evening, directly I came home.

If the child had been at that time suffering from want of food, in your judgment could her life have been saved by proper stimulants and food?—Do you mean on the Thursday?

On the Thursday.—I really cannot say.

You cannot say whether she was too far gone or not?—It would have been right to have tried, of course.

But you cannot say whether it would have been in time, even then?—I cannot say; I saw so little of the child, that my opinion is of no value—of very little value indeed.

You could not judge?—No.

Of course it would depend on the degree to which exhaustion had proceeded?—Quite so.

Is it the fact, that a time does come, in the case of a person dying from want of food and exhaustion, when it is too late to administer restoratives?—Oh, certainly; I should think so.

Cross-examined by Mr. Bowen—I believe it is a very common form of Hysteria in young persons to pretend that they do not take, and cannot take, food?—Yes, it is a form.

And they very commonly deceive their immediate relatives?—Quite so.

Do you think a person suffering from Hysteria——?—Excuse me; I am not called as an expert. I really decline to give any evidence except as to what I saw.

But I am now taking the advantage of your having been called by the Crown.—Well, if I must.

You have been in Court to-day?—I have.

You heard Dr. Fowler say that when he saw the girl some months before, he believed then that she was suffering from Hysteria?—I did.

Should you think it was a wise thing, to bring four strange nurses to watch and guard her in the way that was pursued here?—No; I do not think it was a wise thing.

Should you think it would be exceedingly prejudicial to a person suffering, as it is admitted she was suffering at the time,—as he presumed that she was suffering,—from Hysteria?—Yes; certainly I should think it would be very unwise.

Mr. Giffard—I do not quite catch your answer.—It would be an unwise proceeding, in the case of a person suffering from Hysteria, to have four strange persons suddenly forced upon her.—That is what I understand to be the meaning of the question.

Mr. Bowen—And it would have a most prejudicial effect on the person so suffering?—Yes; I am taking this girl's circumstances into consideration: I assume that she had taken very little food, and was in a highly reduced state.

I believe persons suffering from Hysteria, not only wish to deceive persons as to their not taking food, but in fact can exist with,—and do take—very little food?—Yes; so I have read. It is more a question of reading, than of personal experience.

A very small amount of food will preserve life?—Yes; if a person lies in bed constantly, as this child is said to have done.

And with a person in that state, as I said before, it is not only prejudicial, but dangerous, to adopt such a course as having four strange women guarding her, as these women are proved to have done?—Yes; I should never recommend such a course, nor adopt it myself.

Do you think that the appearances described by the medical gentlemen who made the post-mortem examination, were consistent with the symptoms of death by Starvation, as laid down in the books?—The presence of about an inch—as I think it was described—of fat

on the bowels, is certainly inconsistent with any account I have ever read (and I have certainly paid some attention to reading) of death from Starvation of this kind. A person might starve with cold, if the temperature is very low, and no doubt starving would occur very soon; but if a person were kept warm, it would be different.

We hear that flannels and hot water were applied in this case?—Then it would be different.

Did you hear the description given by medical gentlemen, of the appearance of the interior of the body at the post-mortem examination?—Yes; I heard that.

Were the appearances of the Omentum, and the other appearances, consistent with what you should have expected to be discovered at a post-mortem examination of a person who died from Starvation?—I really forget now whether they stated that there was much fat in the Omentum; but about the fat outside, I should say, as I told you before, the presence of fat is inconsistent with death from Starvation.

You are acquainted with "Casper," among other Books on the subject, I suppose?—Yes; I have read it attentively.

Does he not give you, as the result of his experience, that you are to determine in every individual case, not that death from Starvation must have, but that it has, occurred?—Yes; he lays that down positively in his second volume.³⁴⁰

There is a great distinction in the two propositions as to what must have, and what has, occurred?—Yes; he means that the proof must be in the dead body.

(Mr. Giffard objected to any explanation being given of the meaning of the quotation.)

Mr. Justice Hannen—It is very likely we should have to read many pages before, in order to appreciate fully the value of that remark. If persons had been seven days without food, and then died, to what should you attribute their death?—I should attribute it to the want of food.

Mr. Bowen—I think you say you do not exactly recollect the description which the medical gentlemen gave of the appearances at the post-mortem examination?—Not of the Omentum.

Did you hear their description of the condition of the intestines?—I heard Mr. Phillips or Mr. Thomas say that the intestines were thickened.

Is that what you would expect to find on a post-mortem examination, of a case of Starvation?—I have no experience of it, but Casper says differently; he says directly the opposite.

He sums up in these words:—"It is self-evident that amidst all these vital phenomena, there is scarcely one that can be declared to be quite specific, and exclusively pertaining to death from Starvation, if we except the attenuation of the coats of the intestines?"³⁴¹—Quite so.

That is not the description given of the state of the intestines by the medical gentlemen in this case?—No.

Cross-examined by Mr. Michael—Am I right in saying that Nervous Diseases take a very great variety of shapes?—Yes; quite right.

And that those diseases, however formidable in life, may leave no traces in death?—Certainly.

Is the Stomach very largely supplied with nervous influence?—
Yes.

Is it a fact, that a blow upon it may cause instant death?—Yes.

And leave no trace whatever?—So it is said.

Supposing there to be some affection of the Nervous System, and a part of the Nervous System that went to the arm and the leg on one side, would you expect to find that colder, as you did in this case?—
Yes, I should expect to find it colder.

Finding one part of the body colder in that way, would you naturally attribute it to some Nervous Disease?—No, not necessarily; it might be on account of the amount of clothing, its position, and so on; I should take all these things into consideration. I certainly should take the possibility of Nervous Disease into consideration.

Supposing, as we have heard from Dr. Fowler, that the arm and the leg were both colder on the left side, and that they were both equally covered with the right, would Nervous Disease account for that?—I think it might.

Would Hysterical Paralysis?—I don't know what Hysterical Paralysis is.

Well, the feigned Paralysis, if I may so call it, of an Hysterical person?—I need not tell you Hysteria means not so much a complaint, as a simulation of all other complaints.

Mr. Justice Hannen—As this is the first time we have had that stated, and as it is very important, we should know what you medical gentlemen do mean by it. Do you recognise it as a real disease?—
Hysterical Paralysis? No.

But Hysteria?—Yes, as a very important disease, and requiring very skilful treatment in its removal, and very often not succumbing to skilful treatment.

Mr. Michael—Lasting for a long time, and not succumbing to skilful treatment?—Very frequently—time generally being the best Doctor.

Would the excitement of your going into the room to feel the child's pulse, be likely to affect the rate of it?—I should think so,—in her condition certainly.

And excitement of any kind would materially accelerate it?—The excitement that day was explained to me. I spoke to the head-nurse about her pulse, and so on, and she described to me that the child had that morning been more than usually excited.

Mr. Giffard—I am afraid we must not have what the Nurse said.

Mr. Michael—Would you expect to find, where a person had lived without food for seven days, that the fat of the body had been absorbed?—I should expect it.

And if a layer of fat, an inch thick, was found in the body, over a large surface, would that go against the supposition that death had occurred from Starvation?—I should think so.

Is not emaciation of the body, one of the leading symptoms of death from Starvation?—Certainly.

Do you conceive it possible that a person might live eight days in an Hysterical condition of long duration, without food?—Yes, there are tolerably well authenticated cases to that effect.

Are there not many diseases in which food becomes loathsome to a person?—Yes, in most diseases, in fact—most Acute Diseases.

You would not call this Acute Disease?—No; if disease at all, it was Chronic.

There might be, I suppose, some Chronic Disease of the tube that goes from the mouth to the Stomach?—Yes, you might have contraction of it,—mechanical or organic.

All of these would affect the power and the wish to take food?—Of course they would affect the power, because if you contract the Oesophagus, you cannot get food into the Stomach.

Supposing you had any Paralysis at all, any loss of power, if you found any indication in the post-mortem examination, where would you expect to find it?—In the Spinal Marrow.

You would not expect to find it in the Brain—in the grey matter of the Brain?—Not necessarily.

Is the Spinal Cord, the part that affects Motion and Sensation?—It is considered to be so.

And is that largely supplemented with what we have heard called the Sympathetic Nervous System?—It is connected with it, of course.

Is that a very large system of Nerves, going all over the Spinal Cord?—Yes, it is a very important system of Nerves.

Affecting Nutrition?—Yes.

And very likely to be affected in these cases of Hysteria?—I should think so.

Re-examined by Mr. Giffard—In your personal experience, have you had a case of Starvation?—Never of Acute Starvation.

I suppose there might be a difference in the appearances attendant upon Acute and Chronic Starvation,—where the Starvation was protracted for a considerable time, and where food was *absolutely* withheld, say for four or five or eight days?—It is very difficult to define the difference between Acute and Chronic Starvation. I don't think any person who had been without food for many days, in a tolerable temperature, would be fat. That is my opinion.

I think you referred to Casper as an authority: does he not draw a distinction between Acute and Chronic Starvation?—I think he is the first that does.

But he does?—Oh, he does; I believe he does.

You heard all the symptoms described, as you say, at Llandyssil: to what in your opinion is the death of this girl attributable?—Am I bound to answer that question, my Lord?

Mr. Justice Hannen—I think so. It is a very obvious question to put.

The Witness—It is a simple medical question. I thought I was called here merely to testify to what I had seen. I ascribe the death to what is commonly called Mental Shock. That is what I ascribe the death to—to Nervous Exhaustion, in fact—a kind of Nervous Exhaustion.

Mr. Giffard—Would the withholding food for eight days produce that result?—It would tend very much to produce the same result.

That is what I ask you. Suppose a girl to be weakened by Hysterical affection—by Hysteria, if it be a disease—would the withholding

food from her for eight days, be likely to cause death?—It would be most improper.

And likely to cause death?—And likely to cause death,—certainly.

You told my learned friend that you should have thought that the putting four strange nurses in the room was a very imprudent and unwise (I think was your word)—a very imprudent and unwise course?—I mean as far as her disease was concerned, of course. I was examined entirely as to her condition, and her being Hysterical, and whether putting four nurses in the room with her was a wise remedy for a Doctor to employ. That is the meaning of my answer. I did not speak of the morals, or anything else, of it.

I was going to ask you: you were aware that was done when you consented to act?—I never did consent to act, except to mitigate the presence of these nurses. All I was asked to do was,—if the nurses wanted my advice, to give it; and it was to render the presence and existence of these nurses less an evil to the girl, that I consented to act.

Did you remonstrate with the parents and with your fellow-labourers on the Medical Committee, or the Committee that appointed you, against the wisdom of the course?—No, I was not consulted; I was appointed without my knowledge, and the watching was started without my knowing anything about it.

All I meant to ask you was, whether when you knew all that, you did remonstrate?—No, I did not.

With reference to the girl's condition, it almost speaks for itself; but when you say you told the father to withdraw the watch, and to give the girl food, was that in your judgment the proper course to pursue?—Certainly.³⁴²

Mr. James Thomas, who had conjointly with Mr. John Phillips, performed the post-mortem examination, was then examined by Mr. Coleridge. He gave details similar to those which have already appeared in this account, and concluded his examination in chief, with these strong words:—

All the organs were perfectly sound and healthy; they appeared just like those of a newly-slaughtered animal.

From what you now know of the case, to what do you attribute the death of the child?—Exhaustion from want of food.

Cross-examined by Mr. Bowen—You mean, in fact, Starvation?—A kind of Acute Starvation.

That is very different?—It is the same thing.

Cross-examined by Mr. Michael—I suppose you find, do you not, in all cases of death from Exhaustion, that the Gall-Bladder is full?—I do not know from my own experience.

Have you made many post-mortem examinations?—No, very few; they do not allow post-mortem examinations in this part of the Country, I am sorry to say. Fifteen to twenty, perhaps.

Should you have expected, in making a post-mortem examination of a person who had been eight days without food, to find the body plump and well nourished?—I don't see why it should not be.

You have quoted the Books: is it not laid down in all the Books, that there is great Emaciation in cases of Starvation?—Yes, in long and Chronic cases of Starvation, where a person is partially fed.

Then do you mean to say that where a person dies slowly from Exhaustion in a week, all the fat of the body is not absorbed?—Such was the case in this instance. We have the history, that the child did not partake of food during the watching, and here is the fact.

But that is not what I am asking you about. I am asking you, would you not expect to find it?—Well, I did find it.

Did you find Emaciation?—Not to any great extent. The muscles were flabby.

But in cases of Starvation and Exhaustion is not the fat, the first thing taken up in the body?—Yes, I told you before, in Chronic cases of Starvation, where it extends over weeks and months.

Supposing a person had an attack of Fever, and could not take any food, that is like a case of Acute Starvation, is it not?—There is a poison there in the system.

Is not the fat taken up in the course of a week, and does not the body become very emaciated?—It depends on the amount of fat that exists at the commencement of the disease.

But you found this girl plump to the end?—Yes.

And do you think that is in accordance with Starvation?—I should have said, there were a few isolated specks of fat in what is called the Omentum, and most likely there had been a good deal more at the commencement, but it had been absorbed.

What was the state of the coats of the Intestines?—It did not strike us. I don't think they were particularly attenuated, as it is laid down.

Did you examine the tube from the Mouth to the Stomach, through its whole extent?—Yes.

What was the condition of the Spinal Cord?—We did not look.³⁴³

What was the condition of the Sympathetic Nerve?—That we did not look at. It requires minute anatomy to get at the Sympathetic Nerve.

Then you were a little hurried in your examination?—No; we were there from three to four hours.

Are there not a great variety of diseases which upon post-mortem examination leave no trace whatever of their presence?—There are a few, no doubt, occasionally happen.

Supposing a person had Hysteria in a very severe form, would you expect to find any indication on post-mortem examination?—No; it is a kind of perverted function.

In Insanity would you expect to find any?—I am told very slight. I have no experience of Insanity.

Did you examine the Brain, or any part of the Nervous System, with the microscope?—No.

How are you able to say that there was no Softening at all?—I could feel.

Does Softening always indicate itself by feeling?—I should think it did.

How many cases of Softening of the Brain have you examined by post-mortem examination?—None at all.

Re-examined by Mr. Giffard—Have you ever known death arise from Hysteria?—No.

If I understood Mr. Hughes, Hysteria is the pretence of existing disease, when in truth disease does not exist?—Yes, it is. The patients will tell you they have pain in various parts of the body.

Mr. Justice Hannen—You must take this, subject to the qualification that it is a real disease?

Mr. Giffard—Yes, my Lord; but what I am upon at this moment, is this. If the disease existed so as to kill, it would not be Hysterical, I suppose; it would not be simulated—it would be real?—Just so.

Are you acquainted with anything that under these circumstances could have produced death, except Exhaustion from want of food?—In this instance?

Yes.—No; I am not.

Either personally from observation, or from your medical reading?—No; from what I have heard of this case, from beginning to end.

But I say you are not acquainted with anything that would produce death, in such a case as this, either from your former experience, or in your medical reading?—No.³⁴⁴

Mr. John Phillips, examined by Mr. Giffard, corroborated Mr. James Thomas's statement of facts; and in answer to the question, "Have you anything to add to it?" swore as follows:—

I have some things.

Kindly tell us what you have to add to it, from your observation.—From my own observation I noticed that the right shoulder was much more developed than the left; under the left arm-pit, there seemed to be a flatter disposition of the muscles of the left arm.

To what extent was the difference?—It was quite apparent. I lifted up both arms, and examined them carefully, comparing one with the other.

To what extent would the flatness under the left arm amount in inches, if it amounted to so much?—In bulk?

Yes.—To the extent of half a pound of substance.

I do not know quite what you mean. Do you mean that half a pound of substance might fit there, or what?—That would depend, I suppose, upon the nature of the substance; because the specific gravity of substances differs. A hard substance.

Very good. Is there anything more that you observed?—With regard to the greater thickening of the Intestines, it is a thickening of the contents of the Intestines that I would refer to, and not a thickening of the coats of the Intestines.

Mr. Justice Hannen—What do you say about that?—I say that the contents of the Intestines were thicker at one portion than another. The nearer you approached the lower end of the Intestines, the contents became gradually thicker.

Mr. Giffard—Did you subject the contents of the Intestines to microscopic examination?—I did.

Did you find traces of anything that you could recognise?—Yes. I found traces of starch-globules, and traces of bone-substance.

When you speak of starch-globules, what substances in Nature have the starch-globules, such as you recognised?—Such as I recognised were the globules of arrow-root starch.

You spoke of bones: what sort of bones were they?—Small bones; apparently the bones of a fish, or the bones of a small bird. I am inclined to think the bones of a fish.

Of course it is impossible to say exactly how long such matters might be in the Intestines; but can you give any limit at all?—It is really quite impossible to say. It may have been days, or it may have been weeks.

Or months?—No.

Mr. Giffard—Then, if you attend to my question, you can give a limit.—It could not have been months; it may have been weeks, it may have been days.

Cross-examined by Mr. Michael—Do I understand you that you really microscopically examined the contents of the Intestines?—Yes.

And you found bones?—I found bones.

And you are not able to say, from the microscope, whether they were the bones of a fish or of a bird?—I think they were the bones of a fish.

But can there be any possible difficulty in determining by a microscope whether they are the bones of a fish or of a bird?—I have not had great experience with regard to microscopes, but I will tell you my reason for thinking so. The central portion, the centre of ossification, was more transparent than it is in other bones.

That does not help me very much—I don't know whether it does the jury—and I will not pursue it. How did you know that it was arrow-root that you found?—By the shape of the globules, and the size.

Did you polarize?—No, I did not polarize.

Are you aware that it is impossible to determine without polarization what the globule is?—No; I am not at all aware of it. I do not believe it.

Have you had much experience of the various grains of starch?—I have examined them carefully.

These, you mean?—Yes; and others.

You do not agree in the evidence of the gentleman who came before you, as to the two sides of the body being symmetrical?—Perhaps not. My observation was more particularly directed to that, while he was engaged in another part of the dissection.

I understand you to say that the right arm was more developed than the left?—It was.

Therefore, if there had been any failure of power in the left, that would account for it?—The right shoulder was more especially developed.

But the cavity was more particularly under the left arm?—Yes.

How do you account for the right arm being more developed?—I account for it, by it being more in action than the left. The right arm was always exposed, I understand, on the outside of the bed, and the left kept in; consequently, the right arm was always engaged in doing what she required.

Did you make any microscopic investigation as to the nervous part of the body?—I did not.

Had you heard of this case, before you made the post-mortem examination?—Oh, yes.

Did you consider it a form of Simulated Disease?—I did not consider it so much a disease, as a cheat.

On the part of the girl?—Some of it.

I suppose you have had considerable experience of Hysterical people?—I have.

You made no examination of the Spinal Cord, I understand?—I did not.

Or of any part of the Nervous System at all?—No, except the Brain.

Are there not a great number of diseases that leave no traces on a post-mortem examination?—Yes; and I believe Hysteria to be one.

In Exhaustion, from whatever cause, producing death, it would be much the same?—It would leave no trace.

So that if a person died from Nervous Shock, putting food out of the question—from a blow on the stomach, or anything of that kind—you would not expect to find any traces in those organs you have described?—No; certainly not.

Re-examined by Mr. Giffard—Taking all the symptoms in this case, have you any doubt medically in your mind of the cause of death?—Not the slightest.

What do you say was the cause of death?—Starvation.³⁴⁴

Mr. George Thomas, Town Clerk of Carmarthen, and one of the Coroners for the County, produced the Depositions taken before himself, including a Statement made by the male prisoner, which was read by the Clerk of Arraignment.

Mr. Giffard said this was the case for the prosecution.

Mr. Michael submitted that there was no case against the mother, for while the father was alive, it was his duty to find food for his child. He quoted a case, the King against Rose Saunders, tried in March, 1836, in which it was ruled that a married woman could not be convicted for the murder of her child, three years old, by withholding food from it, except the food was supplied her for that purpose, and she neglected to give it to the child. They must show in this case, that the husband supplied his wife with food to give the child, and that she neglected to do so. There was no act done by the mother, but simply an act of omission; but it was the duty of the prosecution to show that it was her duty to supply food. In another case, the King against Squire, it has held that where a woman was the servant of her husband, she was not responsible for a breach of the law on his part, though she might have been cognisant of it.

Mr. Giffard said the cases quoted were not relevant to the case before the Court. He did not suppose that in this case, the food was withheld from the child, but rather that the child was a party to a trick or experiment, to which the father and mother were also parties, and that trick or experiment ended in the death of the child. Sup-

pose the father and mother, with their child's consent, agreed to hold the child's head under water for ten minutes, and the child died in eight minutes, all were equally guilty of manslaughter. In this case the wife had taken an independent part, and had acted in the absence of her husband. She had refused Mr. Hughes permission to see the girl, for instance, and at other times acted in the absence of the husband.^{344*} She was a party to a dangerous experiment upon the life of the girl, and therefore she was as responsible as anyone else.

Mr. Michael said there was nothing done in this case, but the abstaining from doing something. The mother had no voice in the matter, and could not have prevented the trick—as his friend had called it—being carried out. He contended that the wife had neglected no duty that belonged to her.

His Lordship said the question was whether or not there was evidence upon which the charge against the wife might be left to the jury. He thought there was, and believed the arguments of Mr. Giffard were well founded. His contention was, that three parties, the husband, wife, and child, entered into combination to try an experiment upon the girl's constitution, and if that were the fact—it was for the jury to determine whether it was or not—but if it were a fact, that the three persons entered into a combination to play with the life of the deceased, then all three were equally guilty of manslaughter. The cases quoted by Mr. Michael were not analogous. In those cases, the question raised was the duty of supplying food, in case food was required. In this case there was food supplied, and the fact that the girl would not take it, negatived the idea that she was in want of food in the ordinary sense. Again, the child was in bed, and according to the evidence, it was said that she could not have procured food, unless it was supplied her by those around her. The supposition was, that the girl had been fed secretly for a long time, and if so the parents knew her condition, and it was the duty of the mother, knowing the state of the child, to supply her with the food required. He thought therefore there was evidence upon which the case must proceed against the mother.

The Court then adjourned at five o'clock.³⁴⁵

FRIDAY.

The Court opened this morning (July the 15th) at ten o'clock, and was crowded in every part, especially in the ladies' gallery, where a large portion of the fairer sex, either from curiosity or sympathy, were seated during the whole of the proceedings.

Mr. Bowen remarked to his Lordship, that the argument of the prosecution was that the prisoners had been guilty of a trick, an act of commission, whereas if anything could be proved against them, it was rather an act of omission. A distinction ought to be drawn between the two things, and it was his duty to point it out.

His Lordship replied that the relationship of the parents to the child, must be borne in mind, and their consequent duty to administer food to her.

Mr. Bowen reminded his Lordship that Dr. Fowler had expressed his belief the girl was a night-feeder.

His Lordship said that would be a point to be dealt with in the defence.

Mr. Bowen then rose to address the jury in behalf of Evan Jacob. He said that they would be happy to think they were very nearly come to the end of the last scene in the case of the Welsh Fasting-Girl. He was sure he should not in vain ask them to bring their own good sense to bear upon it, and as his learned friend, Mr. Giffard, in opening the case had asked them, so would he repeat the request, to dismiss from their minds, all the idle gossip and the tittle-tattle they had heard on the matter, and come to a decision entirely on the evidence adduced. It was on behalf of a ruined man, that he addressed them, for whatever the result of this protracted inquiry and investigation, whatever might be the verdict, the worldly prospects of Evan Jacob were utterly gone and ruined. There had been a repetition of inquiries into the case. There was the Coroner's Inquest, there was the investigation before the Magistrates, extending over nine days, at Llandyssil, then the poor man had to come down to the last assizes, when the Crown did not think fit to put him on his trial. He was not going to say that the Crown was wrong in the course taken, he was merely telling them what a hard time Evan Jacob had had to pass through. The hardships were increased by the suggestions made and actually stated, that he had allowed his daughter to starve. But when they came to consider the evidence, and to take all the surrounding circumstances of the case, he felt confident that the prisoner would be proud not to have misplaced his confidence in the jury, and that they would pronounce him innocent of any such offence as that. In opening the case on Evan Jacob's behalf, he had a right to complain of the way in which the Crown had conducted this prosecution. It would have been fairer to the prisoner and more just, and certainly fairer to the jury, had the Crown called all the persons who might have thrown a light on the subject. A long list of names, professedly witnesses, appeared on the back of the Bill of Indictment, of whom a large number had not been put into the box.

His Lordship—If there is any one of those witnesses whom you would desire to examine, he shall be called.

Mr. Bowen—There is one witness I should like to be called certainly. I should like to have John Daniel called.

His Lordship—He shall be called.

Mr. Giffard, the Counsel for the prosecution, here entered the Court.

His Lordship then informed Mr. Giffard, that Mr. Bowen had complained because the witnesses on the Indictment had not been placed in the box, and he had directed John Daniel to be called in accordance with Mr. Bowen's request.

Mr. Giffard—Your Lordship is aware that the rule is, the Prosecution are bound to have all the witnesses in Court, but not to call them.

His Lordship—Quite so. I merely dacte in my discretion, and we will have Daniel examined.

Mr. Giffard—If your Lordship pleases. It is very immaterial in one point of view, because we have a reply in any event.

John Daniel, examined by Mr. Bowen, said—I am related to the

prisoner Evan Jacob, and am his brother-in-law. Both the prisoners were very fond of their child Sarah. I remember having sent for Mr. H. H. Davies from Pencader. I remember offering the child some water myself on the Thursday evening. She threw her head back, shut her eyes, as if she was going into a fit. I asked her if she would take something else besides water, and there was no answer.

Cross-examined by Mr. Giffard—The father was very angry with me for offering anything. He went into a passion. I believe when examined, I may have said he threatened to kick me for so doing.

Mr. Giffard—Did he threaten to kick you?

John Daniel—I told them so.

Mr. Giffard—Did he threaten to kick you?

John Daniel—I said so before the Magistrates.

Mr. Giffard—Answer my question, sir. I will have an answer one way or the other.

John Daniel—I do not recollect now, but I said so then.

Mr. Giffard—Then did you swear before the Magistrates, what was not true?

John Daniel—No, I could not do that.

Mr. Giffard—Then remembering what you have sworn, was it true?

John Daniel—As far as I knew at that time.

Mr. Giffard—That will do.

Mr. Bowen, resuming his address, said he was extremely obliged to his Lordship for allowing the witness to be called, because it was only fair that they should have the fact placed before the jury, that Daniel had offered the girl water, and the child refused to take it: and the jury would deem that a most material ingredient in the evidence, and one that ought to be laid before them. The suggestions of the Prosecution had placed the case before them in this shape—the Prosecution did not pretend to say that the prisoners withheld food from the child, but what they sought to make out was this, that the child pretended to do without food, and the prisoners did not interfere, but suffered the watching to take place, and so the child died. Let them examine the facts of the case. It appeared that some three years ago, the child was taken ill with a complaint called Hysteria. According to the evidence of Mr. Thomas, that was a well-known complaint, and one of its characteristics was, that the person suffering, and especially persons of the age of the deceased girl, simulated or pretended that they could not eat food, and that they had got certain complaints which in fact did not exist with them. If he understood the Doctors rightly, they all agreed upon that. In this particular case, the girl was convinced that one of her arms was paralysed, and Dr. Fowler said that it was a very common symptom arising out of her complaint. The Doctors started with this, that the girl undoubtedly had the complaint called Hysteria. It was admitted by all the medical men, and the distaste for food sprung out of it, as also the desire to conceal the fact that food had been taken. It was abundantly clear that not only the prisoners at the bar, but the whole neighbourhood, believed in the fact that the girl had abstained from food. Persons much higher in life than the prisoners at the bar, entertained faith in the possibility of the occurrence. He was not asking them to decide whether such an occurrence was possible, but it was acknowledged that persons

suffering from Hysteria, could bring themselves to exist upon such a small quantity of nutriment as would be insufficient to sustain life in a healthy person. With that fact he started. The next thing to inquire was, whether the prisoners at the bar knew the girl was surreptitiously getting food. He would ask the jury to apply their own good sense to such a matter. The father was a farmer occupying some 100 acres of land, a man who from his position in life was necessarily out about his farm cultivating it, the greater portion of the day. And although he was only defending the father (his learned friend Mr. Michael was defending the mother), yet Mr. Michael would have no objection to his making this remark, that the common sense and experience of the jury would tell them, that what applied to the father's absence from home, would also cause the mother to be absent. Women, in this country, in the position of life of the prisoners, were obliged to assist in making provision for the daily bread of the family, and especially as in this case there was only one man-servant employed. The mother would necessarily be absent from the house a good deal of her time. The girl had therefore ample opportunities of obtaining such small quantities of food as she required, without the knowledge of the parents. The family consisted of seven children, among them two daughters older than Sarah. Why had none of them been called by the prosecution? It was proved that there was a man-servant in the house; why had he not been called? Before he went further into the case he would ask them to consider the description of the house. Here is the plan; it consisted of a kitchen—

Mr. Giffard—There is no proof of the plan being a correct one.

Mr. Bowen here produced a photograph of the house.

Mr. Giffard—The photograph we may take to be correct.

Mr. Bowen, addressing the jury—Gentlemen, I was saying that the house is like all small farmhouses in this country, as you will see by this photograph of it.

His Lordship—But we have not done with the plan yet. We have not had that proved.

Mr. Lewis Bishop, Solicitor for the Defence, was then called and sworn. He said—I know the House of Evan Jacob. There are three rooms in it, all on one floor. There is the girl's bedroom on the right, the kitchen in the centre, and the room on the left in which the other children slept. (Vide page 50.)

Mr. Bowen—These rooms are distinguished by the three windows in the photograph? (Vide Frontispiece, and page 3.)

Mr. Bishop—Yes.

Mr. Giffard—Do you mean that this is a faithful representation of the place?

Mr. Bishop—It is, as far as it can be drawn.

Mr. Giffard—Is there any access between the girl's room and the dairy?

Mr. Bishop—Not immediately. I do not believe the plan represents there is. The girl's room opens into the kitchen, and the dairy opens into the kitchen.

His Lordship—There is no privy in the house?

Mr. Bishop—No.

His Lordship—Is there any privy near?

Mr. Bishop—I believe not.

Mr. Bowen, resuming his address to the jury, said they would know the arrangements of farmhouses in general, and they would have no difficulty in conceiving what sort of food, persons in the condition of life of the prisoners would get. The principal food would be supplied by the dairy; it would be bread and flummery, and skimmed milk. The luxury of butcher's meat was a very rare thing in the houses of persons occupying 100 acres of land. That was a point which it would be important for them to consider. In going through the case, he should not trouble them with the medical questions. Mr. Giffard had said that if 40,000 medical men were to say this girl did not die from Starvation, he would ask them to come to a different conclusion. His case was this—that the girl died from not being able to get sufficient food during the watching, but that there was no proof that the father and mother knew that the girl had not been living without food for a considerable time, and that she was therefore in no danger from the watching. There was not a tittle of evidence to show that the father was a party to the trick, as his friend had called it. The father deplored the loss of his daughter as much as anyone could, and firmly believed that she could live without food. The Rev. Evan Jones also believed, and so did Mr. John Jones, the solicitor who drew the agreement, and no doubt the major part of the eighteen Committee-men must have thought there was something unusual in this case. Did they believe the authorities at Guy's Hospital would have sent nurses down to watch the girl, if they thought it was a trick? Would the Doctors have lent themselves to this investigation, if they did not think there was something worth inquiring into? Would the father be likely to enter into this experiment, if he thought there was any danger to be apprehended? It was said by the nurses, that there was no alarm as to the girl's state until the Thursday. On that day Daniel offered her water, and she refused it. He asked her if she would take anything else, and she refused. The father was said to be angry at this, but that was only natural in a kind father, who believed that by offering food to his child, she would be injured and thrown into fits. There was everything to show that the father had always acted in the most kindly manner towards the girl. It had been thrown out that there was an object, and Dr. Fowler had mentioned that the girl was dressed like a bride. Now he had laid the articles of dress before them, and he asked them whether that was not one of the many false accusations brought against the prisoners in this case? There was a horrible suggestion, that the father had, by means of keeping his child in bed, been getting money from the public; but it was well known in the neighbourhood, that the girl abstained from food long before any money was offered. Mr. Davies had attended the girl from the first, and was the last medical man who saw her alive, and yet he had not been called. He should have thought it was the duty of the Crown to lay before the jury everything that would throw light upon the case they were investigating, whether it told in favour of, or against, the prisoners. If that was the way cases were to be conducted, he hoped the Crown would never undertake another prosecution.

He then detailed the facts of the case, and continued:—

If there is any one to blame, if there is any fault to be found with those who left the girl to die, there was much more blame attached to those who directed the watching—to those who occupied high positions in the neighbourhood—than to the parents of the poor girl. Was there anything to justify the Committee in getting the nurses down to watch the girl? If they believed the case was an imposture, then nothing could justify the Committee in not insisting upon food being offered to the girl, whether she was willing to take it or not. Could they imagine those gentlemen—the leading men in the neighbourhood—so far forgetting their duty to the child, as to leave her to die? What did they think of the trained nurses? Did they think that those women day after day would neglect to offer the child food? They were instructed by the Committee, and he did not blame them; but when they were asked to throw the blame upon the parents, he would ask them whether others were not morally more culpable than they? The whole history of the case showed that they were innocent. Their kindness throughout, showed that they believed they were acting for the best. They should remember that the medical evidence went to show, that hysterical persons simulated various diseases, and it was impossible for any one but a skilled medical man to detect the deception. No wonder therefore, that this girl should deceive her parents. If they believed in the first instance that the child was taking food, what object had they in concealing the fact? They were not the persons who first noised abroad the story of the Welsh Fasting-Girl. It was done by the Parson of the parish. There was no evidence that the father or mother ever invited people to come there. They had subsequently received visitors, and no doubt the mother had received some trifling sums, but not sufficient to induce any one to believe that they knew that the girl was eating. Why did the father submit to the rigorous rules the Committee imposed upon him, if he did not positively believe that the girl could live without food? Would he have signed the agreement giving up all control of the girl to the Committee, unless he believed that all he had been saying, was the truth? He always allowed the medical men to see her; and in short, there was not a single fact in the evidence consistent with the prisoners' guilt; on the contrary, all the facts were consistent with their firm belief that the child lived without food. Suppose that a person in the girl's state, could live upon a very small quantity of food, there was nothing easier than for her to go to the dairy and get food, without any one in the house knowing. What part had the unhappy parents taken in the matter? It was not suggested that they refused the girl food. The girl was the principal actor in what had been termed a trick, and it was for the prosecution to make out that the father and mother knew of this trick. All went to prove the contrary. What had the father done to make himself criminally responsible? He had always shown the greatest affection, the greatest kindness, not only to this girl, but also to all the other children. On the last night of her life, she showed her affection for her father by calling for him repeatedly, even when in the delirium of

death. It had been suggested that the girl concealed a bottle under her arm, and by that means fed herself; but if the parents were parties to the fraud, there was no need of secreting a bottle. The house was shut up early in the evening, and there was no necessity for the bottle at all. But that was only one of the idle gossips of the neighbourhood. Gentlemen, continued the learned Counsel, I ask you again, once and finally, whether there is any evidence consistent with the prisoner's guilt? I ask you whether all the facts of the case, are not consistent with his innocence? No one who has been called before you, has proved that Evan Jacob did not believe in his daughter's statement. He acted for her according to the best of his judgment; he procured for her, according to the best of his ability, the ablest medical assistance the neighbourhood produced; and he feels satisfied in his conscience he has done his duty to that child; he feels that his conscience does not upbraid him for having done any wrong; and he anxiously now awaits your decision in this matter.³⁴⁶

Mr. Michael—May it please your Lordship—Gentlemen of the Jury, did the prisoners at the bar feloniously kill and slay Sarah Jacob? I appear for the mother; did the mother feloniously kill and slay Sarah Jacob? That is the issue you have to try; and the only way in which it can be brought to you, is by the ingenious suggestion of my learned friend, Mr. Giffard, who ingeniously endeavours to put upon you that three parties, the deceased girl, the father, and the mother, were jointly concerned in a trick, without any idea of the fatal consequences which eventually supervened, and these fatal consequences coming upon them, the two survivors are responsible for the result of that trick. That is the issue I venture to put before you; and I shall ask your attention for a few moments, while I carefully endeavour to analyse the evidence by which it is endeavoured to be supported. Now, Gentlemen, the issue is to be proven by my learned friend,—and the only way in which he can prove it, is by presumption. I venture to think you will be with me, when I say that presumption is not sufficient, and especially when it is a violent presumption, and a presumption not supported by evidence, and when there are other presumptions which are much more probable to men of common sense. In cases of circumstantial evidence, of which this certainly is one, because there is no direct evidence whatever of these persons being cognizant of the trick, as it has been ventured to be called before you, it is not sufficient that the evidence shall be such as is consistent with the guilt of the prisoners, but the evidence must be such as excludes any other supposition. It is not enough to say that the circumstantial evidence is sufficient to show that the prisoners in the dock, or the female prisoner, might be guilty; the circumstantial evidence must be so complete as to show that she must be guilty; and I say, taking that, as the issue, it is not proven before you that any presumption of guilt arises, which will enable you to say that the female prisoner at the bar is guilty of the charge of feloniously killing and slaying Sarah Jacob. Now let me ask you carefully to consider the evidence that has been brought before you. There is this general consent and accord in all the medical witnesses—and this is one very important part of the case, which I will ask you to bear in mind most carefully through the whole of the attention, which I hope you

will give to me—that the girl, for two years and a half at least, was subject to a disease. This disease has been called Hysteria, or Hysterical disease, and I want you carefully to bear in mind that it is a true disease; and when it is said that it is a Simulative disease, it is not meant by that, to say that it is any less a disease, but that the features and symptoms of that disease put on, at various times, the forms of other diseases. You have it, from the evidence of the medical witnesses, that it is a real disease, a disease of great length, very difficult to cure, acting very largely on the Nervous System; and I shall ask you to consider directly, what the condition of this girl was, mentally and physically. The medical witnesses tell you, that it is not only a disease in itself, but that it puts on the appearance of all other forms of disease—that it is Protean, and is continually changing its character—that it varies so much, that it is impossible to tell, day by day, what form it may assume; and that it is a disease peculiarly affecting young girls, and more particularly young girls of the special temperament of the poor deceased girl Sarah Jacob. Now when she first comes upon the scene, we have it brought before us, by the evidence of the Clergyman, that here is a girl who has an intense form of religious excitement; she is, according to his very words, so anxious for the salvation of her soul, that she can have no rest by day or by night. She has had, at that time, some symptoms of spitting of blood, which in your experience you all know is a thing which naturally very much alarms parents for their children, and she has some form of obscure disease which confines her to her bed. And here look at the evidence of the medical men, as we have had it before us. One says it is inflammation of the brain; another says, "I can do nothing for her; I ought to have been called in seven, eight, or nine days earlier;" but by general consent, they say that the girl was ill, and so remained all through that long period of time, and also that the disease was one peculiarly of a nervous character. Well, this girl, confined to her bed, and the characteristic of this disease being that it puts on the form of other diseases, and that one especial form of it, is a loathing and abstinence from food,—an abstinence continually growing and increasing, and enabling the body to be nourished on a very small quantity,—we have the father and the mother seeking every means in their power, employing all the Doctors that come within their reach, in order to obtain a remedy, and showing by the whole of their conduct their intense affection for this child. I am not going to weary you with the whole of the subsequent history till we come to the time when, according to the evidence that has been brought before you, "in the interests of Science," a *cordon*, a bar, is placed round the girl, in order to prevent her from taking any food: the "interests of Science,"³⁴⁷ as represented by the gentleman who could not tell, under the microscope, whether the bone he discovered, was the bone of a fish or of a bird, and the "interests of Science," as represented by another gentleman, who ventured to say that there was no Softening of the Brain, though he never saw a case of Softening of the Brain in his life! I don't wonder at my friend's scepticism, when he said that if forty thousand Doctors—I presume he meant forty thousand of such Doctors—came here, he would not believe them. You have had also the evidence of a gentleman who

was brought from Bishopsgate Street, and who has been described as an "Expert," though he never saw a case of this sort in his life; and the evidence of a gentleman formerly connected with the London University, who goes to the parents' house, and represents himself as a Doctor coming from London in order to cure the girl. Gentlemen, I take the whole of that evidence, and I claim it on my behalf, to show that this girl was diseased—that she had a disease which was extremely difficult to cure, a disease which was persistent in its character, and would deceive any one around her—a disease which would deceive even Doctors, and that it would require special medical skill, which I suppose these Doctors claim to have, in order to discover, not whether the girl was ill or no, for there is no dispute about that, but whether the symptoms pertained to the special disease, or whether the Paralysis, the Epilepsy, the Fainting, or whatever it was, was really some other disease, superadded to the Hysteria. But can you doubt for a moment, that these poor ignorant people believed their child was ill? She really was ill, she really did abstain from food; there can be no doubt about that. We have the evidence of all these Doctors that the child did abstain from food, and that the persistently abstaining from food was continually increasing, until she was able to live on a very small quantity. We have that evidence, and I claim on behalf of the mother, the statement of the father, not that the girl absolutely abstained from food, but that she took at uncertain intervals small portions of food, until at last it appeared, as far as they knew, that no food was taken by her whatever. Gentlemen, I ask you to consider what was the position of these two parents. The highest men in the district in which they live, the Clergyman, the Unitarian Minister, eighteen other gentlemen, representing, I suppose, the sense and intelligence of this district, and a whole band of Doctors, "*in the interests of Science,*" induce this poor man, and his wife, to consent that the child may be tested! Now I re-echo the argument of my learned friend. If it really were the case, that this man and this woman were intending to deceive the public, what more fatal issue could they have thrust upon themselves, than in surrounding their girl with four nurses from Guy's? And what could the authorities of Guy's have been about,—if, as my learned friend said, it were a thing that forty thousand Doctors would not induce him to believe? But I am happy to think that my learned friend, Mr. Giffard, is not the jury who are to determine on this case. If the thing were so perfectly impossible, what could have been the sense of surrounding this girl with such circumstances as inevitably, in the judgment of these very persons themselves, must eventuate in death? Why, I venture to say, if that were the case,—if it were so positive that death must ensue,—it is the Clergyman who ought to be in the dock, it is the Unitarian Minister who is the Secretary, it is the whole Committee, and the whole of the Doctors who induced these poor ignorant people to submit to a state of circumstances which they knew, in the "*interests of Science,*" must inevitably and infallibly lead to death. Is not that a fair showing of the case? Here are two poor, comparatively uneducated, illiterate people, who are persuaded by the Rector of the parish, by the intelligent Unitarian Minister, by the Doctors who are the *élite* of the pro-

fession in Carmarthenshire, by Mr. Jones, the Attorney, — by the representatives of the whole of the learned professions, — and by the principal inhabitants of the district, to do this, “in the interests of Science” — to kill their child: a child they had tended and nourished with the utmost care and affection, as you have heard on all hands! And these are the persons to go scot free; these are not charged before you, but the parents whom they persuaded, to the loss of their child, to the loss of their goods, to the peril of their reputation, to their own fall — these are the people who are arraigned before you, and charged with Manslaughter; while the persuaders, the persons of education, who knew this to be impossible, according to my learned friend, — who, if it were a trick, were parties to the trick, were the urgers to the trick, — are the parties who ought to be charged, and not the poor parents, who are pushed into the net, in which they are to be dragged to ignominious punishment! Gentlemen, my learned friend, Mr. Giffard, whose perverse ingenuity, I venture to say, in this case, distorts every fact to the prejudice of the prisoners — I say again, whose perverse ingenuity in this case distorts every fact to the prejudice of these poor people, and turns their very affection and love against themselves, in order to secure a verdict of “guilty” against them — my learned friend ought to have exhausted the possibility of other parties, besides the parents in that household, being parties to the deception. My learned friend first goes on this presumption. He says it is impossible that there should be such a persistent keeping from food as to allow life to be sustained. Well, I am not here to say, because I do not know, and in that statement of a want of knowledge I am joined by the greatest authorities at present existing, and by the greatest authorities in the last hundred years — whether or not the human body can exist in a state of quiescence and rest, if carefully warmed, for an almost indefinite period of time, without food.³⁴⁸ The greatest Physiologists of this day, and of the past age, have said that there are cases continually occurring, without the possibility of deception, or in which it is impossible to believe deception, which show conclusively that for a long period persons may exist without food. My friend is sceptical; the forty thousand Doctors will not convince him. I don't ask you to be convinced, Gentlemen; but I do say this, that we are not to limit the Infinite. We are not here to put our little knowledge, against the knowledge of accumulated ages; we are not here to say that anything is impossible in the human body, for our knowledge is so small, that we ought humbly to bow before the Great Infinite, and acknowledge how very little indeed is the span of our knowledge, and how absurd it is, with our limited knowledge, to say that anything is impossible. But, Gentlemen, I have not to urge before you, that this girl could have lived without food. I put it before you in this way. She was ill; she had abstained for a lengthened period from food; and it was a duty thrust upon my friend, a duty which he has not discharged, of proving to you conclusively, that supposing this girl were a night-feeder, supposing she were in the habit of periodically getting small supplies of food, the parents must have been cognizant of such supply. Where is the man-servant, that he is not called? Where are the elder members of the family, who, if the fraud had been perpetrated, would have been the most likely per-

sons to have been concerned, with their sister, in perpetrating such fraud? Before you can find the female prisoner at the bar Guilty, you must be satisfied that there was no other way of perpetrating the fraud, but by her consent, or by her actual interference. Now, the man-servant might have been a participator in the fraud, supposing there had been any fraud; the sisters might have supplied food. You cannot, I venture to say, find the prisoners at the bar Guilty, on the violent presumption that has been brought forward by my friend, until he has excluded all possible sources of the fraud, as he calls it, except the persons charged in this Indictment. I say he has not done so. For anything that appears in the evidence, this girl might have been fed every hour in the night; the food might have been supplied by her brothers or sisters, by the man-servant, or by some relatives; or she might (and you will remember the suggestion of my learned friend)—she might have had it concealed about her person, in this abnormal (as they venture to call it) hollow under her left arm; and she might have obtained a supply by some other persons besides the mother. Because, Gentlemen (and I claim this as most important to my view of the case), I assume there was that hollow, and I take the evidence of that learned gentleman the Dissector, who—differed from his friend, who, he said, did not pay much attention to the part, and—told us that the two sides of the body were not symmetrical, but that there was some wonderful accumulation of flesh about the right arm, and an abnormal hollow under the left arm. Now, did the prisoners at the bar, put that bottle there? According to the evidence of one of the learned Pundits, who wanted to assure us that the girl got out of bed one hour in twenty-four, to avoid the bed-sores, the whole of that time might have been spent in obtaining food. And what object could the parents have had in making use of this abnormal hollow, by placing a bottle there? If it were used for that purpose, the bottle must have been secreted without the knowledge of the parents, because the girl, as soon as the house was shut, could have got her food. The moment the door was shut, the girl could have got out of bed, “to prevent bed-sores;” and the food could have been obtained, and no one in the house have known anything about it. Therefore, supposing the hollow to have been under the arm, and the bottle to have been placed there, this is conclusive to show that the prisoners at the bar had nothing to do with it. Gentlemen, I venture to urge upon you, that there is not conclusive evidence, nor a particle of evidence, to show that the prisoners at the bar had anything to do with the fraud, if fraud there were. I venture to urge upon you strongly, that here was a case of disease, in which very small quantities of food could be taken—that the parents knew this—that the parents, perfectly innocent, may have joined in that which is called a trick, urged by these respectable gentlemen “in the interests of Science” to do so,—and doing this perfectly innocently, with a great shock to them, Death supervenes. Now, Gentlemen, is it at all proven to your satisfaction that Death occurred from Starvation? What right have you to say that? What right has any one to say it? According to the statements of the gentlemen who conducted, and, as I venture to think, most improperly and most inefficiently conducted, the post-mortem examination,—because they could not find any evi-

dence of disease, they jumped to the conclusion that Death occurred from Starvation. Well, Gentlemen, as I said, I must direct your attention to this one point: it was the point upon which I cross-examined the whole of the medical witnesses. This was a Nervous Disease; this Nervous Disease especially affected Motion; the foot was drawn up, the heel was drawn down; there was coldness on one side; there was inability to move the side. Why, that is evidenced by those four experienced nurses from Guy's, who were watching most anxiously by her bedside, and who never for a week saw a movement of the arm or the leg, and who only saw it at last, when Exhaustion supervened, and death was imminent; then, for the first time, during sleep, one nurse saw a convulsive motion of the arm, and the next day one of them saw a motion of the leg. Now those learned gentlemen who conducted the post-mortem examination, conducted it on the principle of not looking at the place where the seat of disease really was. They looked at every other part, but the part that should have been examined. They looked at the Brain, because that, they say, is the seat of the Will; they looked at the Stomach, because, they say, the Stomach is the seat of Food; they looked at the Heart, and they looked at the Chest; but the Spinal Cord, the one thing that affects Motion,³⁴⁹ and that especially affects these parts, and the Great Nerve, which has been described to you by all the Doctors as the Great Sympathetic Nerve that supplies the Stomach, and a morbid condition of which would prevent food being taken, they did not examine.³⁵⁰ These two gentlemen—the first gentleman, and the gentleman with the microscope, who so cleverly told us about the grains of starch he found in the Intestines, making so wonderful a discovery that no doubt it will be taken up by the scientific periodicals of the day,—the grains of starch being taken up, without being changed, so that he could say positively they were grains of arrow-root—actually made no examination at all, of the very parts which would naturally be affected by Nervous Disease! And moreover, Gentlemen, I ask you to consider this. It is supposed that this is a case of Starvation; but Death ensues, as Mr. Hughes told us, from Nervous Shock. In the progress of the Case, you have no evidence that Death resulted directly from the absence of food. It is quite true *that* might have accelerated it; but Death might have occurred a week before the watching commenced. What would have been said then? Those diseases, or that state of the Nervous System which caused Hysterical Epilepsy, as it has been called here, might have caused Death. And the appearances after death, seem to preclude the supposition that Death occurred from Starvation. In cases of Death from Starvation, you would expect to find extraordinary emaciation of the body; you would expect to find the whole of the Fat taken up, and that Nature would have fed upon herself.³⁵¹ But was that the case here? No; there was actually an inch of Fat upon the body. And I want you to consider this carefully. None of the traces of progressive Starvation were prominent in this girl during all the time of the watching. I claim the evidence of the whole of the four nurses. There was apparently nothing the matter with the girl for the whole week; she had so long abstained from food, that actually there was no physical symptom whatever present, to warn any one of danger for the whole week of the watching. It is

quite true that when excitement was caused—and I venture to say, the intense excitement to a girl of a highly Nervous Organization, of having four strange persons put as gaolers round her bed, and being perpetually subject to Doctors hauling and mauling and pulling her about in every direction, was certainly the best way to ensure a fatal result. But I ask, during the whole week, where were the progressive symptoms of Starvation in this girl? How was it, that she did not follow the ordinary rule in such cases? People cannot abstain from food, and have the pangs of Hunger and Thirst, without manifesting dreadful symptoms; and Madness at last, closes a scene of fatal issue.³⁵² But where were the symptoms in this case, except the breaking of a water-bottle, which causes excitement, and a fit of Hysterical Epilepsy, which has been described to us? Not one single symptom occurred to alarm these four experienced nurses from Guy's. Where were the Doctors who attended day by day? Did they warn the father during the whole of those seven days, from Thursday to Thursday, that there was any danger whatever? And the moment danger is apprehended, Mr. Davies is sent for. And what shall we say of the conduct of this Crown prosecution, when the very Doctor who is the regular medical attendant, and the Doctor who last saw the girl, and knows all the progress of the case,—because it is supposed he would say something that would not support this Indictment, is not called by the Counsel for the Crown. I ask you, is this fairness or Justice? Mr. Davies, the man who of all others could have thrown light upon the case, who knew the origin of the disease, and the progress of it, and was present at its fatal termination—the man who is sent for when the symptoms of danger first show themselves—the man who of all others should have been here, to have given you information, and to have aided you in giving, what I am sure you will give, according to the best of your judgment, a just, righteous, and honest verdict—the man who could have helped us here, is not called by the Counsel for the Crown, because it is believed that he would say something that would exonerate these two people in the dock, from the Indictment which is hanging over their heads! I ask you, Gentlemen, is this fairness? Is this Justice? Is this right, in a case acknowledged “in the interests of Science,” to be surrounded with so much difficulty?—a case in which it is said we are here sitting, in order to free the ignorant Welsh mind from the trammels of superstition and darkness? Was it not the duty of my learned friend to put into the box, every scientific gentleman, and the best he could find, and especially those most intimately acquainted with the case, to show the vulgar and ignorant and benighted and superstitious Welsh mind, that there was no truth in this case, and that the girl really died of Starvation, and died at the instance of a loving father and a loving mother? I ask you, my friends, to consider what has been the conduct of these parents during the whole of the case. Have they refused at any time any assistance which has been offered them? When the Doctor from London, *alias* the commercial traveller, comes to the house, and is refused permission to examine the child, as soon as the mother knows that he really is a gentleman of the medical profession,—although there is such a dislike on the part of Nervous persons to have the slightest touch impinging on their persons, and although, as the medical witness told you, a mere breath of air will

bring on symptoms of great pain, and terror to them,—what does the mother say? It is conclusive to my view of the case:—"Allow the Doctor to examine you, because he will cure you." That is the key to the solution of the whole of this matter—the kindness and affection of that mother, who will allow her child to be subject to that which she knows will pain her, in the hope of being relieved from a terrible and long-standing disease! And are you to presume, Gentlemen, sitting in that box, that according to the perverse ingenuity of my learned friend, food was not to be eaten in the presence of the girl, because it might induce her to wish to have some? Oh! how dreadful and horrible is the supposition—that this mother, for a few shillings trafficking in the blood of her child, will prevent the possibility of life being retained to her, will not allow food even to come into her presence; because—such is the way my friend ventures to put it to you—that this mother, denying every instinct of human nature, the love of a mother, the Divine feeling within her, for the sake of a few shillings will traffic in her child's life, and see her die in agonies before her, and keep food out of her presence, lest she might be tempted to eat! But, Gentlemen, the whole facts are against this ingenuity, and I sweep it away with this—that the nurses did eat in the presence of the girl, that the very tea which was said to have been kept from them, was taken by the nurses afterwards, in the girl's presence; and I put upon the incident this kindlier and more natural interpretation, that, as in cases of Madness, where water becomes horribly repulsive to a person suffering from the bite of a dog, so the mother, in this case, seeing that the sight of food continually brought on this form of Hysterical Convulsion, in the kindness and lovingness of her heart, wished to save her child from the pang that would thus be inflicted. I ask you which is more likely—which more in accordance with the instincts of Human Nature—which more in accordance with the instincts which this woman has shown, of love to her child,—that you should take, what I venture to call, the violent presumption of my friend, revulsing and turning back the whole flood and tide of human life and love; or rather the more natural suggestion, that the conduct of the mother, throughout the whole of the illness, and up to its fatal issue, was an endeavour to save her child from any pang or from any pain that she could? (Applause.)³⁵³

Mr. Giffard replied on the whole case, and said it would be satisfactory to the Jury, as it certainly was to himself, to know that the two persons who were accused of this grave offence, were so ably and vigorously defended, as they had been by both the learned Counsel who had preceded him. His learned friend Mr. Michael had rather roughly handled him, and ascribed to him a perverse ingenuity more than once. He had no other feeling towards Mr. Michael than that he was extremely obliged to Mr. Michael, inasmuch as no feeling for himself, no desire to use courteous and pleasant language, had prevented Mr. Michael from saying what he thought was necessary, in a vigorous and earnest manner, in behalf of his client. Whatever the result of this trial might be, it must be satisfactory to every one to know that nothing had been left unsaid to the Jury, that required to be stated. And it was not in the smallest degree for the purpose of justifying himself, which he hoped was unnecessary, but because with

the proceedings of Courts of Justice, and the mode in which justice was administered, he was necessarily more familiar than the Jury could possibly be, that he ventured to say one word about the duty of the Counsel for the Crown. He said it not, he would repeat, for the purpose of self-justification, but that the Jury might not be misled by one or two observations made by both the learned Counsel, Mr. Bowen, and Mr. Michael. It was not the duty of the Counsel for the Crown to endeavour to procure a verdict which was not warranted by the evidence; it was not the duty of the Counsel for the Crown to call witnesses before the Jury, whom the Counsel for the Crown did not deem it necessary to bring forward, whose testimony so far from being calculated to enlighten, might on the contrary be calculated to deceive. There was the witness-box, and there were the witnesses, and the Counsel for the Defence had full leave from the Court to call them, if they chose. The reason why the Crown did not call them was apparent; the reason why the Defence did not call them, was not a whit more obscure (laughter), and whether those reasons told against him, or against his friend the Counsel for the Defence, he left to the Jury. Mr. Michael had made one observation which, though perfectly true in one sense, yet when applied to the ordinary affairs of life, was as wide of the truth, and of common sense, as anything could be. He said that they had no right to assume that this child died of Starvation, and that they must not judge the case by the ordinary dictates of human reason. But suppose one man shot another in broad day: you see him fall; a bullet is found to have transfixed his heart, and the man is dead. One would think that was a good reason why the man died; but Mr. Michael might suggest, according to the terms of his speech, that it was equally probable that the moment before the bullet reached the man, he died by spasm of the heart, and that the bullet entered the heart of a corpse. (Laughter.) That sort of argument only showed the folly of speculating on what might happen under peculiar circumstances, instead of depending upon the facts of a case, and applying to them the ordinary rules of life. In the administration of Justice, error could not well be avoided, but that was no reason why the ordinary mode of obtaining Justice should in certain cases be abandoned,—no reason why it should be balked by fantastic reasons, assuming facts which were not always what they seemed to be. If the parents' story were true, this child, for two years, must have evaded the vigilance of the parents and the two sisters, one fifteen and the other eighteen years old. That was the reasonable and probable hypothesis which Mr. Michael put to the Jury! If the Jury were guided by ordinary modes of reasoning, which was most probable,—that the parents aided and abetted in pursuing this scheme so profitable to themselves; or that the child was able to evade the vigilance of the whole household during two years, the functions of Nature being suspended, the parents seeing to her bed and person, and sleeping in the same room with her? As to the medical evidence. He never said that he would not believe forty thousand Doctors, but that he would not believe them, if they swore that a human being could live for two years without food; he repeated that he would not believe them, and he did not think the Jury would either. There were some matters altogether too absurd to believe. A Doctor might put his head into a

bush, and think nobody could see him (laughter); but would anybody but the Doctor himself be deceived? A Doctor might swear that the sun did not rise yesterday, because he did not see it (laughter); but who would believe him? Mr. Michael had spoken of the Doctors with a degree of familiarity and virulence, which led one to almost think he was a Doctor himself. (Much laughter was caused by this witticism of the learned Counsel, it being well-known that Mr. Michael formerly practised at Swansea, as a Surgeon of some distinction, and had been selected for this case on account of his medical knowledge). Doctors' facts should be accepted as facts, but Doctors' theories must be received as cautiously as the theories of other men. Mr. Michael, in speaking of the Physiological aspect of the case, seemed almost as if he were giving evidence himself, but we know well that Physiologists had made great blunders before now, and that some propositions, advanced and accepted in one age as truth, had been rejected by the next, as downright error. They had read in Books, of strange cases of this kind which had happened, but they did not know with what degree of care those cases had been watched. In this case, if death had not happened, it would after some time have been found in the pages of some foreign jurist, as a well-authenticated case of human Fasting in Carmarthenshire. That would have been mischievous, because it was error, and error is ignorance. Error was all the more difficult to deal with, because it was written error. But taking all things into consideration, he said—better the written error, than the cruel experiment which resulted in this poor child's death. Little Sarah Jacob might have been alive at this moment; but then "the interests of Science" would have been sacrificed. The fact was, the Jury had to deal not with abstruse medical questions. No one knew better than the Counsel for the Defence, how much better it was to put before a Jury, instead of the plain facts of the case, something which might appear to be the plain facts of the case, but which were not. No one could doubt that the child died of Starvation; or that up to the watching, she was fed regularly by the parents; that after the watch began, they abstained from feeding her. Then, the Jury would see how responsible the parents were for her death. The only question for the Jury was, whether there was a delusion, and whether the parents were a party to it. It was not his interest to seek to bring their mind to a wrong conclusion. What interest had the Crown to convict those people? The Crown was there to-day in the interests of the State, in the interests of Society, to say that if such things as these are done, they shall not be done with impunity. The Crown was there in the interest of every subject, to say that if the prisoners at the bar were not proved to be guilty, they should go free, and that if found guilty, they should be punished. Was the conduct of the parents that of persons courting inquiry? Why, the father refused to allow Mr. Hughes to touch her. Mr. Michael had, somewhat rashly, alluded to the state of the poor girl's mind on the Thursday, the day preceding her death. There the poor child lay, surrounded by vigilant nurses, who took care that no person should approach the bed; on the night preceding her death, what did she do? Four or five times, she called for her father. Her father well understood what she meant. In the pressure of hunger, she piteously called for her

father, appealing to him, as it were, to give way, to allow food to be given her. And when her father came in, she could say nothing. Of course not; because the father made no sign, the delusion was to be persisted in. Then as to the "fits." Was there the smallest pretence of proof that "fits" had taken place? Great talk had been made about Epilepsy; but what did these so-called "fits" consist in? Merely closing the eyes, and opening them again; and that was what they called a "fit." One really could not argue upon phrases like that—as if the Jury were expected to deliberate upon a word, and not upon what that word represented. These "fits" could be proved by Mr. Davies, and by the grown-up members of the family; yet none of them were called. Mr. Hughes and Mr. Davies both told the father to withdraw the watching, and he replied—"Not for the world." Why not? It had been said more than once, that this experiment was forced upon the parents by the acts of others, yet the father, in spite of the remonstrances of two medical men, persisted in maintaining the watch. If this case was a delusion, could any human being doubt, or suppose, that the parents were not perfectly cognizant of it? If the case were reduced to that simple proposition, the Jury should weigh well what the facts proved, and then could anyone doubt that the parents were trafficking in the child's blood, as his friend had somewhat rhetorically put it,—for they probably did not at first contemplate the sad catastrophe which had occurred,—and that they were fully acquainted with all that was going on, and assisting in it. He could not tell where Mr. Michael got such ideas as this—that this trial was intended to dissipate the darkness of Welsh ignorance and superstition. He (Mr. Giffard) had used no such phrases. He was not one of those, who considered that there was so much darkness and ignorance in Wales, which required to be dissipated. He could not tell who had suggested to his friend that stupid theory. There was not more darkness in Wales than in England. But whether this alleged darkness is in Wales, or England, is immaterial; what is material is this—to show that if persons engage in any such dangerous practices as these, the protection of the Law will surround the weak against the strong; and if those who should be the natural protectors of children, from ten to thirteen years of age, do engage with others in dangerous experiments, with either Clergymen, Ministers or Doctors, with all the weight of their authority and their reputation,—they will be punished. And if the Local Administration of the Criminal Law should, as it appeared to him, be faulty, then they must be taught that there is a Central Authority that will not suffer a misfortune to balk a Criminal Prosecution, but will nevertheless bring the offenders before a Jury, independent of, and uninfluenced by, Local Authority, and possessed of firmness of judgment sufficient to enable them to give a verdict, according to what is true and right in the case.³⁵⁴

His Lordship then summed up the case to the Jury, and said—Gentlemen of the Jury—The prisoners at the bar are charged with having caused the death of their child, through their culpable abstinence from giving her food. Now the case has excited a great deal of attention, and undoubtedly it was calculated through its circumstances to do so, because it is fortunately a rare thing to find parents, by any conduct of theirs, expose themselves to the possibility of any such

charge. There can be no doubt, that in the first instance, this case was put forward, as one in which a miracle was being worked, in this age, and in this country. And when it was found that it had been thought worth while, by persons of position and education, and peculiar knowledge, such as Doctors and Ministers of Religion, and finally by some of the most eminent medical men up in London, to investigate this case, it was natural there should be an investigation. And one of the consequences of that general inference was, that it was thought desirable on the part of the Crown, that this case should not be left to the chances of a private prosecution, but that the investigation should be conducted with all the care, and industry, and attention, that could be given to it. In that you will agree with me, that they whose duty it was to consider that question, only discharged their duty properly. If ever the Crown is to take a special part in criminal proceedings, it must be in cases of this peculiar and exceptional character. I make these allusions to the fact that this is what is called a Government Prosecution, because that has been made use of as a topic in the speeches of the Counsel who have addressed you. And I am sure you will agree, that it is the duty of those who represent the Crown on these occasions, to act dispassionately, and with a view to advising and assisting both Judge and Jury. And I see no room to think, that that duty has been in any way departed from by the learned Counsel who has conducted the prosecution. Now, interesting as the case has been, it really involves the consideration of but a few facts; and first of all I invite you to direct your attention to this fact—What was the cause of the death of Sarah Jacob? Now we are obliged to argue in this case, from the latest period of time backwards. She died on the 17th December, and immediately afterwards a post-mortem examination was made of her body. And the result of that post-mortem examination was, that no sign whatever of any disease, in any way, was found. One of the medical men, who conducted that post-mortem examination, used a strong expression; he said that her body presented the appearance of a fresh-slaughtered animal,—that it had all the ordinary appearances that you would expect a person to have, in such a condition. The result therefore, so far as we can form any conclusion upon that examination is, that there was not in her body any trace of Disease which could have caused her Death. Observations have been made upon the evidence of one of those witnesses, who conducted the post-mortem examination, with a view of shaking your faith in his evidence. It has been said, that he made a microscopic examination of the contents of the Stomach, and the Intestines, and that he discovered grains of starch and fragments of bone, and it has been suggested, that there had been some want of intelligence and knowledge manifested by him, because he expressed some degree of uncertainty, whether that fragment of bone belonged to a bird, or a fish. It has also been suggested, that he ought to have made a microscopic examination not merely of the contents of the Stomach and Intestines, but that he should have examined the Nerves also, and have seen whether they might not have afforded evidences of disease. All I have to say on that, is this—that the learned Counsel who made those observations, presumes on a greater amount of knowledge, or ignorance, than belongs to me; I know not, Gentlemen, how it may be

with you. We have no evidence in this case, and I have no knowledge,—whatever you may have, that the microscope would have afforded any means of seeing whether there was any change in the tissue of the Nerves, by means of the presence of the only disease suggested in the case—viz., Hysteria. Therefore, without such evidence, and such knowledge, these observations do not assist us in arriving at a right conclusion, as to the value of the evidence, which taken by itself amounts to this—"I use my means of knowledge in making this examination: I find no trace of Disease;—I use my microscope, in order to find what was the nature of the contents of the Intestines." The theory was, that the girl had been without food for two years, and according to that, the medical gentlemen ought to have found no trace of food at all, but when the microscope was used, he tells us he found grains of starch, which enter into the nature of all farinaceous substances. The granules were so minute, that it required a microscope to detect them. And the result of the examination is, that to the skilful minds of medical men, the body presented nothing which could account for death. And further, the only evidence which has been offered with regard to the condition of the child's health is this—that she had this disease which has been spoken of as Hysteria. The nature of that disease, so far as anyone can collect it from the evidence, seems to be this—that it is a disease, the seat of which is in the Mind. It is called a disease, because the symptoms exhibit themselves, in various patients, so differently, that the Doctors cannot regard it as a fictitious disease. But its seat is in the Mind. And its symptoms are, that it makes the person subject to it, simulate other diseases. I shall not think it necessary to trouble you with the various illustrations of this disease, which have been made during this case, for this reason, that the medical men, or all of them who have been asked the question, and the others who were not asked it, because it was thought they would give the same answer, have stated that Hysteria is not a disease which caused death.³⁵⁵ Therefore, the only disease which has been pointed to, as existing in this child is not a disease that would cause death. That being so, there being nothing in the body, or in the history of the ailment, of the girl, which would account for death, what are the facts? Why, that for eight days before she died, she had been carefully kept from having food; in that sense that she was a person, whether from illness or any other cause, who did not, who would not, ask for food; and those who were about her saw that no one brought her food. What was the object of the watching which had been entered upon? Gentlemen, I make it a rule, as far as I possibly can, never to make observations upon the conduct of persons who are not directly before me, in any way. It may sometimes be my painful duty to make observations upon the conduct of others. It is a rule that is self-imposed; I confine myself to observations, whereby I may point out the facts of a case, and assist the Jury in coming to a conclusion upon the single fact, whether or not they find a verdict against the persons committed to their charge. And it is in obedience to the rule I lay down, that I abstain from making any remarks on the conduct of the Doctors and the Nurses in this case. But the object with which the watching was set about, was this: it was to see if the girl could live without food. Put

it in other terms, it was to see whether, if she had not food, she would die. They kept watching her, and saw that she had no food, and she did die. What inference would you, or any other reasonable men, draw in such a case with these facts, but that she died because food was not given to her? It has been suggested, not only by the learned Counsel (and I am not surprised it has been suggested in the course of an argument—but there are many things which do not recommend themselves to the minds of the Jury, from the fact that they proceed from Counsel, who naturally take a bias, which induces them, no doubt, to attach importance to certain modes of argument), but I am surprised that one of the medical witnesses (Mr. Hughes), when asked to what cause he ascribed death in this case said—he ascribed it to Nervous Shock or Mental Exhaustion. That answer was given after hesitating for some time, and after appealing to me, to be excused from answering so painful and difficult a question. But his reasons for giving that answer, appeared from the cross-examination to be these—that in one portion of the body, more Fat was found, than he should have expected would have been found in the case of a person dying from Acute Starvation. I adopt the medical phrase, but it appears to me to mean Absolute Starvation,—absolute denial of food—as contra-distinguished from Slow Starvation, where some food is given from time to time, but in sufficient quantities for supporting life, and so at last, after a longer time, life gives way. He appears to have been surprised that, where there was a total abstinence of food, there should have been found some portions of Fat, in parts of the body, where he should not have expected it. But the very authority he referred to—and a passage was read from some learned author—refutes, if it were necessary to have a refutation of,—any such theory. In that passage it was stated that in Acute Starvation, there is scarcely any symptom, which may be set down to be constant, and that you must therefore look at the particular facts of the case itself, in order to determine whether there has been Starvation.³⁵⁶ If there has been only Gradual Starvation, there may be room for the theory of Mr. Hughes, but if there has been a total absence from food, it could not be entertained. That learned gentleman was careful for his reputation's sake (and he had a right to be careful), to say that he did not approve of this experiment, and that his name was put on the list of the Committee without his knowledge. He says he paid a visit on the Tuesday, the 14th December, and again on the following Thursday. But he says he was only there, for the purpose of mitigating the presence of the nurses. He examined the state of the child's pulse on the Tuesday, and found it at 144. And his expression with regard to that, is—"I did not like the feel of her pulse." It is very much to be regretted, that he did not take more active steps than he did. He paid his second visit on the Thursday, the day preceding the girl's death, and then he found that her pulse was at 160. His expression is—"That frightened me." He then took steps which were very proper indeed. He then told the parents that the child was worse, and that the watching ought to be put an end to. The answer given was, though it belongs to another part of the case, that the father said—"No, she has been weaker before." Up to that time, remember, all that Mr. Hughes had seen—the child was in this condition:

on the Tuesday her pulse was at 144, and on the Thursday he found it was 160, and then he said—"That frightened me." It was then, he gave that proper advice, it was then he withdrew his name from the Committee, in order that he might wash his hands of anything further. My reason for calling your attention to all this, was to contrast it with the answer which he gave to that direct question—What do you think was the cause of death? He says—Nervous Shock or Mental Exhaustion. When he was frightened at the pulse being at 160, when he told the parents they ought to withdraw the watch, there had been no Nervous Shock then,—no Mental Exhaustion. All that was present to his mind was, that the girl had been closely watched; the effect of which was that she had had no food. And then he took no steps beyond those I have mentioned. It is for you to ask yourselves what weight you can attach to the theory of Nervous Shock, and whether you will not attach greater weight to the fact, that the girl had been watched to see whether she could live without food. The end of it was, that she died. Now, Gentlemen, you must remember that the proof to which this unhappy girl was put, was just the sort of experimental proof by which you can arrive at such certainty, as the human mind can possess upon any subject whatever. Imagine that any person should tell you he had a lamp, that would burn for two years, without any oil or other material being supplied. You would say—Let us test it. I know that a lamp of that size cannot burn for more than six hours, without having oil. Put it in a certain place and watch it. You watch it. It burns six hours. The flame then begins to pale, to flicker, and finally it flashes up for a moment, and goes out, leaving a long wick, and the ordinary disagreeable effects of a lamp that has gone out for want of oil. You do not end your experiment there. You look into the inside of it; you find there is no oil in it, except a little that is hanging about the sides of the interior, showing that some oil has been there, and that all those minute portions hanging about there, are the usual remains, where lamps have gone out for want of oil. What inference would you draw? Would you not draw the inference, that the lamp had gone out because there was no oil? or would you hold it to be, that there was a current of air that had blown it out, and that there was no want of oil, as suggested? Would you not draw the inference, not that it was a miraculous lamp that had been burning for two years without oil, but that it was an ordinary lamp that had gone out, because it was an ordinary lamp, that had been supplied with oil up to the time the experiment began, and that it burned only during the time such oil would last? And what is there in this case before you, that should lead you to draw a different inference? When the food which is necessary for the support of human life ceased to be supplied for eight days to this child,—she died, and you must come to the conclusion that she died because she had no food. I pass from that part of the subject. If you come to the conclusion that she died because during these eight days she had no food, I presume you will come to the conclusion that she lived during the preceding two years because she had food. The question that arises on that part of the subject is this—Do you believe that the parents of that child, who now stand charged with this offence, continued during those two years giving her food, and that she was receiving food?

In considering that question, you must look at the facts of the case as deposed. You must remember — (it is not necessary to analyse the evidence, because your memory will serve you in support of the statement I make upon a careful perusal of my notes), and I need not do more than remind you,—that there is evidence scattered over the whole case, that the statements, which were made with relation to the child's living without food, were made not by one prisoner only, but by both, and at different times. Take for instance, the evidence of the Clergyman who was first called—Mr. Evan Jones. He says, in November, 1867, he was told by the mother, that the child had not taken food since the previous month. He says he continued to visit the child, from time to time, down to the beginning of the year 1869, that is, throughout the whole of the year 1868, from January 1st to December 31st. And he says, that during that time, from time to time, both parents continued to tell him that the girl was taking no food whatever, or only taking a little occasionally. Not only did they say she had taken no food, but that from that time, that is from October, 1867, her bowels had not evacuated, and that she had only occasionally voided urine; and also they specified particular occasions when excitement had produced that effect. But further, they stated she had been in her bed from that time. They also stated a thing, as to which it is only right and fair to them to say they might have been deceived by the girl—that her arm was paralysed. The girl asserted that she was unable to move her arm, and they might be deceived as to that. They stated that she had only been out of her bed since November, 1867, when removed to her parents' bed that her own might be made. But further, on the occasions when Dr. Hughes, as well as Dr. Fowler, visited the house, they said that the girl had not opened her mouth, so as to enable them to look at her tongue, for eight months. I say you must look at the circumstances as a whole. There is the statement, that the operations of Nature have ceased, and that she has been unable to perform any evacuations of the bowels, for so long a period. Who made those statements? In the first place it was the parents, who, whatever their condition in life, would naturally be much about the sick child, and have various opportunities of testing the truth of those statements. But more than that, they were parents who, from their particular life, not being able to afford greater accommodation, slept in the same room with this child,—a small room twelve feet by seven. Their bed was in one portion of the room where the girl slept, and the girl's bed in another. For the parents, having no family servant, had to render all the ordinary services to the child which she required. The father makes the bed, and apparently prides himself upon his ability to make it comfortably. They are, therefore, constantly about her, and they sleep, as I say, every night with her, in that small room. Now, then, can you conceive the possibility of persons, so situated with reference to that girl, being ignorant, if the fact were so, that her bowels had operated, and that she had passed urine during that time, and had got out of bed? ³⁵⁷ Gentlemen, I thought it worth while to mention these things in order to enable you to have a clear view of the case. I thought it was necessary I should inquire this morning, whether there was any privy in the house. I ascertained there was

not. You would not expect persons of their station to have it. Gentlemen, I assume that if you come to the conclusion that the child had taken food, you will come to the conclusion that the operations of her bowels, and her bladder, were not suspended, but that on the contrary she had voided excrement and urine. If you come to that conclusion, then what is the consequence you would draw from the fact that there was no privy in the house? It follows that the girl, who was said to have been lying in the bed, must either have got up herself out of bed, or there must have been some utensils used either in that room, or some other part of the house. One has a sort of hesitation in entering into these matters. But I must ask you to apply your knowledge to them. Can you think it would be possible, during this period of two years, for persons to sleep in the same room with the child, and that they should never know she had in any way ever got rid of natural excreta? I cannot conceive of such a state of things existing at all, not even for a week or a month: and that it should exist for two years, that the child should perform the operations of nature during that period, and the parents not know it, certainly startles me. I think it is very necessary you should consider, whether they knew she had food, or not. The reason why it is important you should consider that, is this—that if you think they did not tell the truth, when they told Mr. Evan Jones, that she had not had any motion of the bowels since the beginning of the year 1868, or rather 1867, if they did not tell the truth, when they said she had not voided urine during the same period,—although she voided it repeatedly when the watch was put upon her,—then they must have known she was fed. Dr. Fowler says, when he examined her, he distinctly smelt the smell of urine. He also says he saw the stain of dried fæcal matter. By the way of meeting that, it is asked, whether he did not afterwards learn, or whether he was not afterwards told, that another child had been in the habit of sleeping in the bed with this little girl? And that is therefore, suggested as an answer. It will be for you to consider yourselves, whether this does account for it. But there is this to be considered: if you think, or if you believe, they were not telling the truth when they stated that Nature had not acted, and that the girl had not been out of bed during all this period,—if you believe they were not telling the truth in all these statements,—do you believe they are telling the truth in the statement, that to their knowledge she had never tasted food during that period? Well now, Gentlemen, if upon review of all the facts of the case, you come to the conclusion that you do not believe them, when they stated that to their knowledge she had not had food during all this period, then it comes to this, that they had a knowledge that she had been supplied with food during the period they say she was not so supplied, and they allowed her to remain, during that fatal period of eight days, without that food, which their own experience of her told them was required, as much in the sense of keeping her alive, as any other person, although perhaps, not in such large quantities as would be needed by ordinary human beings. And yet, having that knowledge, they permitted her to remain for seven or eight days without food. If they did that, then it matters not to what extent you think the girl's mind was diseased, or to what extent you think she was a consenting party to any such trans-

action. It amounts to this, that if those two persons who, by the laws of Nature, as well as the laws of their country, have imposed upon them, the duty of supplying the daily wants of their children,—in order to avoid detection in the contrivance which they had entered upon, for motives which I do not stop to analyse,—abstained from giving their child that food, which they knew she required, as much as anybody else, in order to keep her alive; if they did this, in order that they might not be detected in the deception which they practised by asserting that she had no food, then they are guilty of the crime of Manslaughter. And that is the crime with which they are now charged, and that is the charge, of which you have now to determine by your verdict, whether they are guilty or not. And now I leave the case in your hands. I leave it to you to say whether they are guilty, or not guilty.

The Jury then retired, and after being absent about half-an-hour returned into Court. There was at once instant silence.

The Deputy Clerk of Arraignment—Gentlemen of the Jury, have you agreed upon your verdict?

The Foreman—We have.

The Deputy Clerk of Arraignment—How say you? Do you find the prisoner at the bar, Evan Jacob, Guilty or Not Guilty?

The Foreman—GUILTY.

And that is the verdict of you all?

The Foreman—It is.

Do you find the prisoner at the bar, Hannah Jacob, Guilty or Not Guilty?

The Foreman—GUILTY.

And that is the verdict of you all?

The Foreman—It is. But we wish to recommend the female prisoner to the merciful consideration of the Court, because we believe she was under the control of her husband.

The Deputy Clerk of Arraignment—Prisoners at the bar, have you anything to say why the Court should not pass sentence upon you according to law?

Evan Jacob (in Welsh)—We are not guilty.

The female prisoner here buried her face in her shawl, and cried bitterly.

His Lordship—Prisoners at the bar,—You have been found guilty of a most aggravated offence. I entirely concur with the verdict which the Jury have given, and I shall also act upon the recommendation which they have presented in favour of the female prisoner, the mother, though I must say that I cannot but feel that it is a greater crime in the mother, than the father, since it is more contrary to the common nature of mothers, to neglect their children in the manner in which you have treated this unfortunate child. It is contrary to the nature even of a father. But I shall act upon the recommendation of the Jury, upon the ground they have put forward, that you have been subject to the control of your husband more than has appeared from the evidence of the case. But the offence is, as I have said, a serious one on this ground—that there can be no doubt that both of you have persisted in this fraudulent deception upon your neighbours, and upon the public, and that in order to carry out that fraudulent deception, and

to preserve yourselves from detection, you were willing to risk the life of that child. The life of that child has been lost in that wicked experiment which you tried. Therefore the sentence that I shall inflict on you, Evan Jacob, is that you be imprisoned and kept to hard labour for twelve calendar months; and that upon you, Hannah Jacob, will be more lenient, in consideration of the recommendation of the Jury, and it is that you be imprisoned and kept to hard labour for the period of six calendar months.

The two prisoners were then removed. When they learned their sentence, the father preserved a firm countenance, but the manifestations of grief by the mother were much increased. A large crowd accompanied them on their way from the Court to the Gaol. On Tuesday (July the 19th) they were taken to Swansea Gaol to serve their sentence (the Gaol at Carmarthen at that time undergoing repairs).³⁵⁸

COMMENTS.

Two considerations evolve themselves from the preceding History—the Legal, and the Medical, aspects of this truly eventful case. The Legal responsibility incurred, requires to be regarded at two distinct periods of the judicial proceedings, and in reference to two different combinations of personages involved.

Omitting for the moment the position of the parents, and judging the matter by its results, it now appears to have been a questionable decision on the part of the Advisers of the Crown, to have confined the preliminary investigation to the alleged *misfeasance* (or rather *nonfeasance*)^{358*} of the five medical men alone.

The law of England, as laid down at the Trial by Mr. Giffard, Q.C., who is recognised in his Profession as one of the soundest Criminal Lawyers at the Bar, is that “any persons who engage in a dangerous trick, the result of which is loss of life, even if it is the person who is the most injured in the transaction, are in Criminal Law, and in a Criminal Court, liable; and it is totally immaterial that the negligence of the deceased contributed to death If any person carry on any dangerous experiment, for which there is no legal excuse, and death is the result, that person is guilty of Manslaughter, although the person whose life is lost, were a party to the transaction.”³⁵⁹ Assuming the correctness of this definition, it certainly appeared singular to not a few, that the Government should have elected for prosecution, those very five gentlemen who in fact were, or at all events were considered by the Secretary (the Rev. William Thomas) to be, merely the servants of the General Committee.³⁶⁰

Of the five medical men, Mr. Davies alone was one of the eighteen members of that General Committee, which “was formed for the purpose of having it ascertained whether the deceased lived without food, or the

case was one of imposture."³⁶¹ Whether so comprehensive a law, as that laid down, could have involved not only these eighteen members, but others antecedently advising, together with all the instruments and subordinates engaged in the transaction, was never in any one of the judicial proceedings authoritatively announced! Had the Governmental-haul been so inclusive, Justice would doubtless have been entirely defeated, in consequence of the failure of sufficient evidence to establish the charge. No one is called upon to incriminate himself. A Queen's Pardon would, in fact, have been necessary to have successfully disposed of this preliminary difficulty.

The Law Officers of the Crown, however, "thought the exigencies of the cases would be met, if the medical gentlemen (who undertook, with the skill and experience which they are presumed to have, to watch the case on the part of the Committee generally") should appear before the Bar of Justice, "without summoning the rest of the Committee."³⁶² Mr. Coleridge, on the second day of the Magisterial Inquiry, admitted "that this Committee were all liable, but the Doctors, being delegates of the Committee, took the *onus* upon their own shoulders, and rendered them(selves) guilty of the offence with which they were charged."³⁶²

The Lawyers, however, were not at one, respecting the legal responsibility of the medical men. In the *Law Times* of March 12th, 1870, appeared the following words in reference to this very point:—

THE FASTING-GIRL CASE.

The legal, as well as the scientific questions, that will arise in this case, are many and difficult, such as will tax the learning and ingenuity of the ablest Criminal Lawyers. Granting the fact to be proved, that the girl died from want of proper food, then comes the question—who is responsible for that negligence? Orders were given that the child should be supplied with food, should she ask for it. She did not ask for it. Was this a criminal withholding it? She was not a baby, but a girl having possession of a will of her own; and no restraint whatever was put upon her. If such a person, from any motive whatever, chose not to eat or drink for a certain number of days, food being disagreeable, or believing that she could live without it, would death so caused, be Suicide in her? And unless it would have been Suicide in her, it could not have been Manslaughter by those

about her, to abstain from forcing food upon her. If anybody is criminally responsible under these conditions, then next comes the question—who? What part was taken by each of the parties charged? The defendants are, firstly, the father; secondly, the Doctors who agreed together, with the consent of parents and child, that a watch should be set over her, to ascertain if food was, or was not, supplied to her. They were not placed there to deprive her of food, but only to see if food was given, the assertion of the family having been that no food had passed her lips for a certain number of months. First, then, comes the question—Is this in itself an illegal act? It might well be so, if their compact had been to deprive her of food, to prohibit its access to her; but that was not the letter of their agreement, which was, only to keep watch for the discovery of a supposed fraud. They had no power to restrain her parents, or whosoever may have fed her before, from feeding her again; nor had they had any such desire or design; on the contrary, they hoped and expected that, as she had been fed formerly, she would again be fed, and thus they would detect the truth; and, in the absence of any active prevention by them, how can they be criminally responsible for negligence in not feeding her? Moreover, is it an unlawful act to watch, for scientific purposes, the progress of something done by others, it being a moot-point in Physiology, whether that act was or was not in itself likely to cause death?

The five medical men were charged with “aiding the parents, and conniving at their end, by permitting such a system of watching to be brought about, that the child must eventually be starved to death.”³⁶²

To support this charge, reliance was placed on the 8th Suggestion (recommended from London but) adopted by the General Committee, viz. :—

That the parents be not allowed to sleep in the same room as the girl; that if they cannot at all times be prevented from approaching her, they should be previously searched (their pockets and other recesses of clothing and also the interior of their mouths) and that no wetted towels, or any such articles, be allowed to be used about the girl, by the parents or any other person save the nurses; that the children of the family, and in fact every other person whatever (except the nurses) have similar restraints put upon them.

Mr. Coleridge thus prefaced his sequent observations :—“*That*, unfortunately, was carried out.”³⁶³

Now in making this assertion, Mr. Coleridge must have been under a complete misconception of what his witnesses would say. As a matter of fact, this 8th Suggestion was,—by one and all engaged in the watching,—practically and wisely regarded as a positive dead letter. With the sole exception of the parents not sleeping in the girl’s room, there was not one tittle of evidence to

prove that any one of the other restraints therein alluded to, was in any shape or way, ever attempted to be enforced. On the contrary, all the sworn testimony was in a directly opposite direction. Sister Clinch expressly states:³⁶⁴—"I had no instructions or orders to search the father or mother, or anybody else. I never kept them away—they might have got into her bed, &c. &c." Anne Jones, in corroboration, observes:³⁶⁴—"There was no opposition of access by the parents into the room during the time I was watching." Sarah Attrick also says:³⁶⁴—"The parents could go and give her anything they liked. We had no instructions to prevent the parents doing so at any time, whether we were near the bed, or not. If the parents had brought any food, or anything else, for the girl, we should merely have looked on and seen what they did with it."

In reality there was abundant evidence at the Magisterial Investigation to show that the father had never, throughout the whole of the watching, given up his parental authority. The Rev. Evan Jones, B.D. (in cross-examination by Mr. Jones in behalf of Dr. Lewis), said:—"Dr. Lewis proposed to get the child to the Carmarthen Infirmary, and made the proposal to the father. He declined to allow the child to be removed, but he would consent to her being watched by nurses at home. He did not resign his parental authority over her, because he thought her too weak to be removed so far away. He did not substitute any one else to exercise his parental authority over his child."³⁶⁴ Again, in answer to the Court, the Vicar observed:—"I know of no parental duties being assumed by the Committee, and never heard the father authorize any one of the Committee to act for him in this respect. I have never heard from the father, that he had deputed anybody to act for him in his parental duties. I never said anything about food, because the father always got into a passion when it was spoken of."³⁶⁴

The fact that not one of the medical men who visited her during the watching, was ever allowed to examine any portion of the girl's person, which was under the bed-clothes,³⁶⁵ is also sufficiently corroborative of the continuance throughout, of the father's exercise of parental con-

trol. Failing to convince the Magistrates on the point of delegation of parental authority, Mr. Coleridge fell back on the assumption that, inasmuch as these five gentlemen were medical men—*ergo*, they became legally liable, because “they did not interfere and administer food when they ought to have done.”³⁶⁶ To this argument one of the Magistrates most pertinaciously objected. Mr. Fitzwilliams observed:—“It assumed a fallacy against the Doctors. They were not in the position of medical men attending her— . . . There is no evidence of that whatever None of the Doctors were attending her as medical advisers. They were there simply to look on, and be consulted by the nurses. Take it at the worst, you cannot put it in any other way, than that the Doctors erred in judgment.”³⁶⁶

Mr. Coleridge laboured his theory up to the very last day of the investigation; but Mr. Fitzwilliams then (as we have stated) retorted:—“I do not see any culpability on the part of the Doctors. I see a mistake in judgment.”³⁶⁷ Mr. Coleridge thereupon virtually gave up the contest as regards three of the medical gentlemen, but still somewhat persisted in his argument against Dr. Lewis. In respect to Mr. Davies, he pressed “strongly for *his* trial on the charge of Manslaughter,” because “when he had the opportunity given him by the parents, to save the child’s life, he declined to do it, on the ground that something might be said to him afterwards.”³⁶⁷

We have previously pointed out that, despite all Mr. Coleridge’s eloquence and arguments, the decision of the Bench was totally adverse to the committal of either all, or any one, of the medical men.³⁶⁷

As a member of a common fraternity, we cannot but heartily rejoice at the escape of our brethren from the false position in which they had been placed. False! because each, and all of them, assumed a *moral* responsibility, without previously ensuring that complete freedom in their actions, and absolute obedience to their advice, so imperatively necessary for the rigid investigation of one of these anomalous cases of the Neuroses or Nervous Disorders!

Fiat tabula rasa! and let us “hope that members of the

Medical Profession will stand aloof from all such investigations in future."³⁶⁸

"It is a most dangerous but common fallacy, that men are exonerated from the penal consequences of criminal acts, by their own good intentions. Elsewhere, good intentions are supposed to constitute a good defence; but in this world, they meet with no respect from stern matter-of-fact law. However excellent the motives, however amiable the disposition, if a man takes away human life, and does so by acts which were likely to bring about that result, his crime, in the absence of malice aforethought, is Manslaughter."³⁶⁹

These quoted remarks, indirectly corroborate the Law as laid down by Mr. Giffard, Q.C.

From a Judgment recently delivered by Judge Sutherland, it would also appear that in the United States of America, the legal relationship between medical men, and their patients, is also similarly regarded.

Ignoring for the moment, Mr. Fitzwilliams's *dicta*, it would appear, from certain phrases in the following Judgment, that the Law in America is analogous to the Law in this country, as defined by Mr. Giffard; and that, in truth, in both places medical men incur certain onerous responsibilities in the performance of professional duties.

As reported in the *Detroit Review of Medicine*, it appeared that—

The plaintiff, Dr. Hesse, a Practitioner of good repute in Saginaw (Michigan), brought an action for the recovery of thirty-two dollars, for attendance on the defendant's wife. Immediately after her delivery, alarming hæmorrhage came on, during which it was supposed three quarts of blood were lost, and which Dr. Hesse,—called in half an hour afterwards, succeeded in arresting. Next day he found the patient much better, and took his leave, desiring the husband to send for him, if his services should be needed again. On the twelfth day he was sent for, and found the patient feeble. The lochial discharge continuing, tonics and astringents were prescribed, and, after a few days, the discharge being offensive, an examination was made, and some coagula removed. No alarming symptoms were set up until about three weeks after delivery, when she fell off rapidly in a state of general Anæmia, having, also, Partial Paralysis just before death. On an action for recovery of payment, it was proved that great attention had been paid to the case, but the defendant appealed against the decision, and again lost his cause.

Judge Sutherland, charging the Jury, made in his interesting statement, these observations:—

The first duty—that of ascertaining the condition of the patient—is not an absolute duty, but a duty to use the means and methods for

that purpose, sanctioned by Science and Experience, as understood by well-instructed Practitioners of the same school, and to pursue the inquiry and examination with reasonable thoroughness. He is not answerable for the error of an enlightened judgment, but *he cannot interpose his judgment contrary to that which is settled. He must apply without mistake, what is settled in his Profession. He cannot try experiments with his patients, to their injury. . . .* On the other hand, should the jury find that the defendant's wife was in a condition, from time to time, *which the plaintiff could have ascertained by reasonable diligence and skill, and he failed to ascertain her condition; or, after having learned her condition, if it appears that, by a diligent exercise of reasonable skill in the use of remedies well known to educated Physicians, he could have saved the patient, and by failing in this due administration of remedies his treatment was unsuccessful, he cannot recover.*³⁷⁰

This Judgment, although given in a Civil action, would *à fortiori* apply to a Criminal procedure. Its applicability to the case of Sarah Jacob, necessarily involves the question—What was the interpretation of the girl's symptoms (the Diagnosis) during the last eight days of her life?

Before however, investigating this subject, it is preferable to previously complete the consideration of the second division of the Legal aspect of this history—namely, the relative guilt of the parents of the “Fasting Girl.”

Evan Jacob, and Hannah his wife have, by two and three Tribunals of their country, been respectively found guilty of the Manslaughter of their daughter Sarah.

In face of a law defined by a Giffard, and laid down by a Hannen, it would of course be presumption for a non-legal writer even to attempt a discussion of the question.

This much may be stated—that after the arguments which had passed, on the first day of the Trial, between the Judge, Mr. Giffard, and the Counsel who defended the female prisoner, it appeared strange to not a few of the auditory (as well Lawyers as Laymen), that Mr. Michael did not at once rise and take advantage of the finding of the Jury. The Foreman said:—“But we wish to recommend the female prisoner to the merciful consideration of the Court, because we believe she was under the control of her husband.”³⁷¹

Such a belief on the part of the Jury was deemed by many, equivalent to a verdict of “Not Guilty” as regarded the mother of the child.³⁷²

Prior to the committal of the parents, the *Law Times* thus commented on the legal responsibility of the two parents:—

Is the father amenable to a charge of Manslaughter? The general rule is clear, that a parent is bound to provide necessary food for his child, and that if he unlawfully neglect to do so, and death be the consequence, he is guilty of Manslaughter. But there is a limit to this responsibility. The child must be wholly dependent upon that parent for food. Was this girl so dependent upon her father? There was abundance of food in the house, and there were also in it father, mother, brothers, and sisters. Was it the legal duty of the father, or of the mother, to give the food? This is not the usual case of necessaries not supplied at all. The father supplied the house abundantly, and there is no proof that he ever denied food to her; for aught that appears, the mother, or the brothers or sisters, may have given it to her at any moment. Is not the mother in this, as in some other cases, the party principally guilty, if guilt there was; and could she plead in such case marital coercion? Further, is there a legal obligation to force food on an unwilling child—that is to say, is it criminal negligence not to do so? To deny food to a child would be criminal, certainly; but this is not a case of denial, but a charge of not compelling to eat, where there was an aversion to food. Again, is it criminal negligence not to force food upon a person who does not desire it, honestly and truly believing that it was neither required nor desired? Upon this there is an express decision, which seems precisely in point upon this one of the many curious questions that crop up in the present inquiry. In "*Reg. v. Thomas Wagstaffe and Mary Anne Wagstaffe*," 10 Cox Crim. Cas. 530, where the tenets of a sect were that God would miraculously heal by prayer, the parents, honestly believing the creed they professed, and praying, instead of sending for a Doctor, whereby the death of the child was caused, were not held to be guilty of criminal negligence. If the legal questions are of interest to the lawyers, the scientific question is still more interesting, and important to Science. Did she die from Starvation? If not, there is no negligence, and the defendants will be entitled to an acquittal. Upon this, the medical authorities are divided. At first it was positively asserted that no human being could live more than from eight to fourteen days without food. But now a whole swarm of experts are ready to adduce cases of subsistence for weeks, and even for months and for years, without eating and drinking. When searched, the Medical Books and Reports of the Transactions of Philosophical Societies, at home and abroad, are found to be teeming with such cases. Mr. Wilkinson, who has so humanely taken up the defence, and is raising a subscription to defray the costs of it, has published a small pamphlet, in which he has collected a mass of instances, from the highest authorities, of lengthened fasting, together with the opinions of some of the ablest Physiologists, all decidedly negating the assumption of Death by Starvation—an assumption, let us add, not borne out by the post-mortem examination, which discovered a fat, plump, well-nourished frame, very different from any appearance that Starvation has ever presented. To complete the array, the most famous of the French Physiologists, M. Brown-Sequard, has volunteered other cases, and an

opinion which ought, of itself, to settle the question as to death from Starvation. The views of all these great authorities agree in this, that Death was caused by the *Excitement* of being watched, and having strangers about her day and night, and not by lack of food. Of course, there will be a count in the Indictment for death by this cause. Thereupon will arise the further question—is an agreement to keep watch over a patient, for a purpose not in itself illegal, a criminal act, if, by reason of that act, death is caused, such death not being the necessary or probable consequence of such act? To this also there appears to us to be but one answer. But the question must be formally raised, argued, and determined. These considerations, added to those suggested last week, will surely suffice to secure for this case a fair and full trial in London, by a competent Jury, with competent witnesses. The Home Office having taken it up, should go through with it in a manner that alone can secure Justice and satisfy the country.³⁷³

After the conviction of Evan and Hannah Jacob, the same Paper expressed itself as follows:—

THE FASTING-GIRL CASE.

For the credit alike of Justice and Science this case should have been brought into the Queen's Bench by *certiorari*, and tried by a Special Jury in London, where the most competent scientific examination could have been given to it by the Physiologists who have made the subject a study. Tried in an obscure Welsh town, far from the centre of modern research, with no funds to provide a sufficient defence, and submitted to a Jury of farmers, to whom the very terms of Science were as an unknown tongue, it was impossible that the case could have had a fair hearing. It may be that, after such an investigation as would have been given to it in London, the same result would have been arrived at; but then it would have been a verdict fairly given after full inquiry, and not one pronounced in necessary ignorance of the Science that was in contest. At all events, we have now the spectacle of a man condemned to prison for twelve months by the decision of an ignorant Welsh Jury, upon a question upon which the ablest Physiologists of both worlds are at issue!

So far as we can gather from the curt reports that have appeared in the London papers, the defence rested mainly upon some nice questions as to the Criminal Responsibility of a father for not supplying to his child necessary food. The application of that Law to such a case as this, was novel. Nothing like it had ever occurred before. In all former cases, the neglect was designed; there was a Criminal Intent, a purpose on the part of the parent, or master, to ill-treat or injure. In this case no such motive was assigned. On the contrary, the parents were fondly attached to their child. The course of argument against them, was singular. It was contended that, whilst asserting her to be living without food, they had been privately feeding her, and that when the test was applied, rather than confess the fraud previously practised, they persuaded her to die for want of food. But this involves two questions: First, did she die starved? Secondly, if so, are they responsible for her not being fed? As to the first, there is no evidence; on the contrary, the evidence is all the

other way. All medical authorities agree in this, that Starvation is invariably attended by absorption of fat.³⁷⁴ But this child's body was well lined in all parts with fat; there was no wasting of flesh, not a solitary symptom of Starvation presented itself.³⁷⁵ Had the body been submitted for post-mortem examination to a hundred Surgeons, without any history of it, with directions to form their own judgments of the Cause of Death from the appearances, *not one* of them would have pronounced it to have been a death by Starvation, or privation of food. As a matter of fact, the child died from Nervous Exhaustion, caused by the watching, and its attendant excitement. Now such a Cause of Death would be a complete answer to the Indictment,—for the charge against the prisoners was, that she died from neglect of the defendants to supply proper food. But even if it were otherwise—if she *had* died from Starvation, who were the guilty parties? Surely those who had the custody of her. She was given up to medical men, and experienced nurses, who made it a condition that they should deal with her as they pleased, and that the parents should not interfere.³⁷⁶ It was *their* place to see her fed, if they found her life endangered by want of food. *They* took upon themselves the task of her safe custody, and if any harm came to her while *they* had possession of her, in reason and justice, and, as we contend, in *law*, *they* were the persons who should have been made responsible criminally for the child's death. At any moment it was in their power to have fed her, and, having undertaken the charge of her, not to feed her, if food was needful to life, was culpable negligence. The answer to this probably would be, that the law lays no obligation upon strangers to supply food to a child incapable of providing its own. But it may be replied, that, having put themselves *in loco parentis*, they had for the moment assumed the parental obligations. However this may be, if the negligence was theirs in fact, the law should not have been strained to make victims of the parents, because it would not permit the punishment of the real offenders, by whom the negligence was actually suffered.³⁷⁷

These are the mixed Legal and Scientific questions which present themselves even on the narrow view of the question, as it appears to have been presented at the trial. There remains the wider and more interesting and important question, as to the ability to fast, for a much longer time than is supposed, by people who know only that they are hungry if they don't eat every six hours—faint if they abstain from food for a day, and who would die of Starvation if they did not dine for a fortnight. As a matter of fact, the annals of Medicine are full of cases of fasting protracted even beyond the time assigned to the Welsh girl. That fasting may be endured by an organized being for a very long time, is proved by innumerable instances in the animal world; and what a dormouse, or a fly, or a snail, or a carp, or a toad, or a mudfish does every year, cannot be *impossible* to human beings in abnormal conditions. If the case alleged of this poor child, though uncommon, was not unprecedented—and of this an overwhelming mass of evidence might have been produced, if it had had a fair trial—how unjust the verdict, and hard the sentence, based upon the assumption of the impossibility of that which has not only occurred before, but is of frequent occurrence.

There is now but one redress, if a wrong has been done. Application should be made to the Home Secretary for a fuller inquiry here in London, where the best authorities can be consulted, and if they report that fasting is not necessarily death, as proved by experience and by Physiology, a free pardon should be given to the parents.

A memorial to the Home Secretary, stating the facts, and praying for investigation, if extensively and influentially signed, would not be rejected by Mr. Bruce, who is always ready to hear whatever can be advanced on behalf of justice and humanity.³⁷⁸

The legal doctrine here laid down, respecting the responsibility of the medical men, was replied to the following week by one of the Magistrates, who had investigated the case, in the following letter:—

THE FASTING-GIRL CASE.

In the course of your observations on this case last Saturday, you state "that she was given up to medical men and experienced nurses, who made it a condition that they should deal with her as they pleased, and that the parents should not interfere." The evidence taken before myself and my Brother Magistrates, negatived all this most distinctly. The nurses were instructed only to watch what was done by the parents or anybody else, not to prevent anything being done, as had been suggested by a London Doctor. As to there being any experiment tried on the girl by the Doctors who were before us, or anyone else, there was not a particle of evidence. The Doctors simply did nothing but feel the girl's pulse, and foolishly did not tell the parents of her danger, till Mr. Davies did so—too late to save her life. It was evident to me that some of them knew what species of Hysteria she laboured under, and that none of them had ever seen a similar species before, which is not to be wondered at, as not one medical man in a thousand ever does. Sir Astley Cooper himself never saw more than three cases in his long practice. That a patient labouring under that kind of disease (call it Pseudo-Cataleptic Hysteria, or any other name you please) may go for a week, or fortnight, or a month, or even more, without food or natural secretions, was taught me more than forty years ago by the late Dr. Gordon Smith, when lecturing on Medical Jurisprudence. The nature of the deceit practised by the parents was, in concealing the fact that in the intervals, between the various accesses of the disease, the poor girl had required food, and had had it administered, and that in those intervals, secretions had passed. If they had stated this, there would have been no "miracle," and no "donations." From the evidence it appeared clear to me, that when the watching began, the disease was upon her, but that in a day or two its access ceased, as shown by a "Syncope" fit, and the return of the power of Motion on the left side, and increasing acceleration of pulse. She then required food as you or I, and not getting it, she died within the usual time.

Adpar-hill, 27th July.

E. C. L. FITZWILLIAMS.³⁷⁹

Whilst in a degree agreeing with the learned Justice

of the Peace, in the possibility of powers of very Prolonged Abstinence, and of (apparent) Cessation of some of the Vital Functions, in certain rare forms of the Neuroses, we may premise (what we shall soon, in more detail comment on) that in all such authenticated cases, *Emaciation* is a more or less constant concomitant. There is no evidence but that Sarah Jacob *continuously grew fat* from the discontinuance of any medical attendance upon her, to the commencement of the last watching. We believe this one fact to be directly antagonistic either to her having any such very prolonged capabilities, or to her going entirely (or even almost) without food for any lengthened period, between the time when Mr. Davies ceased to give his professional attendance, and Dec. 9th, 1869.

The various articles on the case which appeared in the *Law Times*,³⁸⁰ give expression *ab initio* to views very strongly concordant with certain opinions expressed in an extraordinary "pamphlet"³⁸¹ issued during the Magisterial Investigation.

On March 26th, 1870, the *Law Times* thus complimented (!) the Medical Witnesses at the Judicial Investigation:—"Some of the Medical men there examined, showed the most astounding ignorance of modern researches in Physiology, and opinions were put forth with confidence which have been exploded for ten years."

"Humanity" also boldly announced on two or more separate occasions,³⁸² that a subscription was being raised to scientifically rebut this Provincial and Metropolitan ignorance! Unfortunately, however, for the just expectations of the anxious parents of the girl, they had to be solaced, *after their conviction*, by the assurance that, because the case had not been brought into the Queen's Bench by *certiorari*, and tried by a Special Jury in London, the funds so "humanely" raised were quite inadequate to supply "able Physiologists," to swear that their daughter did not die from her eight days' Absolute Starvation!

The *legal* arguments laid down by the *Law Times*, do not, indeed, appear to have found any support from the able Criminal Lawyers prosecuting and trying the case. We shall presently, on our own part, endeavour to show the non-applicability, and irrelevance, of all such

medical arguments, used both by the *Law Times*, and by others, who are opposed to the view that the girl died from actual want of food. The *Law Times*³³³ avers that not one Surgeon in a hundred would, from the post-mortem examination alone, without any history of the case, pronounce that the girl died of Starvation. Of course not. To determine such a Cause of Death, *all the antecedents and concomitants* of the case must be known. We shall try to show, that these great adjuvants to our judgment, were not wanting in this instance; and that, conjointly with the after-death revelations, they are all-sufficient to determine our opinion. Most certainly the condition of certain of the Vital Organs, at the autopsy of the body, was quite incompatible with Death from Mental or Nervous Shock. We are prepared to admit that Medicine is not an exact science;³³³ and that, in the multiplicity of Nature's operations, individual peculiarities of the economy, preclude those precise deductions which a Mathematician, or may be a Statistician, would invariably exact. In the Legal Profession also, it would, however, appear that opinions *may* likewise differ on the interpretation of even *written* data, and *established* laws.

When visiting the girl, on August 30th, 1869, we (perhaps hastily and after insufficient inquiry) thought more of the *possibilities*, than of the *probabilities*, of the surroundings. In the subsequent account of our visit we stated:—"I am inclined to believe that Sarah Jacob in reality deceives her own parents."³³⁴

That this "inclination of belief," was in strict accordance with the teachings of practice, all medical men of experience will agree. The following observations from a leading Professional Journal, fully and entirely coincide with the impression then formed, of this singular case of Moral obliquity at Llethernoyadd-ucha:—

THE WELSH FASTING-GIRL.

Our readers have doubtless had an opportunity of perusing Dr. Robert Fowler's sensible letter, and they will see that the view taken by him, is in perfect accord with that which we ourselves expressed long ago. We pointed out the frequency with which stories of a similar character were always springing up, and how all those which had been thoroughly sifted, had broken down; and we indicated what

ought to be the proper course of action, if the persons concerned were really desirous of having the truthfulness of their statements tested. The girl ought to have been removed to an Infirmary, placed under the care of one of the medical staff, and in charge of one of the nurses, in a separate ward; and in a week, there would have been an end to the mystery altogether, or else the production of something like evidence, as to what element of truth existed in it. We suspect few people would be so credulously simple, as to swallow all the statements that have been made.

The impressions of Dr. R. Fowler, as described by him, are exactly those which every medical man of experience would have been led to expect. A girl in a weakly state of health, with a highly impressionable, emotional, nervous organization, that has been unduly stimulated, as well as disordered, by religious reading and the sympathy of visitors, and having her vanity gratified by fuss, flowers, and ribands, will simulate anything almost well enough to deceive herself into believing it. And this case leads us to say that Perversions of Volition, similar to those observed in Hysteria, are by no means uncommon among children.³⁸⁵ The marvellous way in which even ordinary children will exercise their imaginations and fancies, so as to realize the creations of these to themselves objectively, may be witnessed by those who will attentively watch a child. And there is nothing so curious as the fancies that a sick child, accustomed to concentrate the attention of a household on itself, will entertain, unless it be the still more remarkable pertinacity with which it will act them out. Many of the protracted convalescences of children, like those of their elders, are the results of an unconscious kind of Simulation, engendered by the sympathy and coddling received when ill, and which they cannot bear to part with, when getting better. In the present case, the girl, like the damsel with the Spirit of Divination who met St. Paul in the streets of Philippi, doubtless brings much gain to her parents, besides making them the object of wondering interest to the Welsh mind; but we have no doubt that if the child were removed to the nearest Infirmary, she would soon be cured sufficiently to eat Welsh mutton with a relish. The question now arises, whether the stupidity or selfishness of parents, as in this case, ought to be allowed to bar the way to their child's return to health and happiness.³⁸⁶

Looking at all the collateral circumstances of the case, with the skilled acumen of a practised lawyer, the Judge very logically summed-up dead against the slightest probability of non-collusion, or ignorance, on the part of either of the parents. Assuming that they were not to be believed, when they stated that, to their knowledge, the girl had not passed any excreta, and had not got out of her bed for the space of two years, therefore they were not to be believed when they stated that Sarah Jacob had not had food during all this period. Having the knowledge that she did take food during those two years, they permitted their daughter to remain eight

days without food; and consequently upon her Death therefrom, the parents were guilty of Manslaughter.

With a now thorough knowledge of all the antecedents of this painful case, it must be confessed that the whole conduct of the parents, after the spring of 1869, would appear to fully corroborate the doctrine laid down by the Judge. The great fact of their making the girl a complete show-child, receiving money and presents from the hosts of visitors to the farm,—the alteration of their demeanour to persons who gave money, &c.,—the suspicious nature of their conduct and proceedings at the first unsuccessful watching of the girl,—the state of preparedness in which visitors, almost invariably, found the patient attractively ready for company,—the anxiety always displayed by the father respecting the making of the bed,—the circumstance that the father was evidently cognizant of the hollow under the girl's arm-pit, as shown by the readiness with which he found the Sister-Nurse's lost scent-bottle,—and the direct and indirect opposition evinced to those, who showed any disbelief in the marvel—are all circumstances calculated to excite the gravest suspicion and distrust.

It is, therefore, not necessary—as it would not be proper—to dwell on other occurrences (trivial though often telling) not proved in evidence, to substantiate the opinion now expressed. The day (Saturday) following the girl's death, a Local Paper reported:—"We are in a position to state that on Thursday evening, a letter was received in Carmarthen from a relative (who has always expressed himself as positive that the child fasted), stating that the story of the Fasting was a falsehood, and that she was dying."³⁸⁷

Without yielding our opinion as to the *possibility* of Sarah Jacob having practised all the cunning stratagems and deceptions imputed to her, and of which young girls, afflicted with this form of Moral Perversion, are capable, it must be acknowledged (after the Legal Evidence adduced) to be the greater *improbability* that the parents were so ignorant, credulous, and innocent as at first we were "inclined to believe!"

At the time of the girl's death one of the Medical Journals gave the parents the benefit of this *possible* doubt. Inasmuch also, as the article in question, otherwise very

fairly apportion the responsibility and the blame, its part-insertion here, will form a fit conclusion to the consideration of the Legal aspect of this case :—

THE WELSH FASTING-GIRL.

The melancholy end of the investigation into the Welsh "marvel," has naturally excited considerable criticism. Although we cannot think that those most immediately concerned acted prudently, yet there is very much to be said in extenuation of their mistake. In the first place, the error is one in which the Community at large, and the Public Press in particular, must take some share. What was done was done very openly, with the best intentions, and, we doubt not, with the approval of thousands who had no part in it. The imposture was gaining disciples; it was becoming a public scandal; and it was high time that it was set at rest. So felt the great bulk of the Community; and, when means were devised for bringing the matter to a conclusive test, a general feeling of satisfaction was experienced. No one thought seriously of the possibly fatal result to the precocious deceiver. Some of our Daily Contemporaries of the Public Press, who now loudly denounce it as "a cruel scientific experiment," were, up to the day of the unexpected event, eager to secure the latest news respecting it, and uttered no single word of caution or disapproval.

In asserting that the public approved the test determined on by the Local Committee, we by no means imply that the responsibility of those who undertook to conduct it, did not far exceed that of the lookers-on. All we ask is fair play, and a candid appreciation of the circumstances. It is very easy to be wise after the event. To assert, as some of the Newspapers have done, that a life has been sacrificed to Science, and to charge the death of the miserable child to the Medical Profession, is most absurd. We do not believe that five medical men could have been found in the kingdom, who felt the slightest tendency to belief in the "marvel," or who, as far as their own minds were concerned, cared an iota about its elucidation. Some of them were however, laudably willing to aid in disabusing the public mind; and, as trained investigators, a large share in the task not un-naturally fell into their hands. To them, it was no "Scientific Experiment," but simply an attempt to unmask deception. The question to be determined is, Was this praiseworthy attempt conducted in a sufficiently cautious manner? Amongst those who shared in it, were some who believed the girl's story, and others who half believed it, and from neither of these parties, could caution be expected; and, beyond this, they were also entitled to plead partial exemption from responsibility, on the ground of ignorance. It is impossible not to admit, that it was from the medical members of the Committee, who were presumably both incredulous and well informed, that caution was especially to be looked for. Their exculpation consists in the fact, that they probably never for a moment doubted that either the child, and her accomplices, would manage to outwit the watchers, or the deception would be confessed and abandoned. These were the two alternatives. All candid minds will admit that it was the last thing to be expected that the child would allow herself to be starved to death, and that her parents would look calmly on. As a matter of

fact, we believe that no suggestion of such a probability found its way into print, from any quarter whatsoever. It is only fair also to remember that a previous watching, had been practised without ill results, and had extended over a longer period than the fatal one.

After all has been said that can be said, it is however, impossible not to admit that medical men, who had every reason to believe that a human being under their care was absolutely deprived of food and drink, ought to have shown faith enough in Science to take alarm when the seventh day of the fast was reached. From the Nurses' account, it would appear to have been sufficiently apparent that the fast was telling on the child's strength, two or three days before her death. . . . In conclusion, we cannot but advert to the calmness which seems evinced by almost all the local actors in this sad affair. Whether it results from that sense of intense relief which must naturally be felt at being rid of a long-standing mystery, we do not know; but really the cost of the solution seems not to have caused the degree of remorse which might have been expected. We have read few documents of a more thoroughly self-possessed character than the Report of the Meeting at which the Nurse's Final Statement was received. After reading her Daily Notes of the case, the Nurse records that, at the closing scene, believing the child to be dying, she allowed the parents to come close to the bed, but still faithful to her duty, watched carefully that they did not feed her. We do not blame the Nurse, but it is not a pleasant thing to read. The concluding resolutions make no mention whatever of regret at the unexpected catastrophe. They record unanimous thanks to the Nurses; nor had the meeting even good manners enough to forget the customary formal vote to its Chairman.

It is to be remembered that this meeting was not composed of "cold-blooded Doctors," but of the Lay Public, with the Vicar of the Parish in the Chair. Its conduct is certainly conclusive proof of our argument that the public shared most thoroughly with the medical men, in the wish that the watching should be carried out efficiently, and in the responsibility for its results. Of dismay at what had happened, we see no trace, the minds of all having evidently been too much pre-occupied with the strange mystery which had just received its solution, to think of collateral issues.³⁸⁸

The strictly Medical aspect of Sarah Jacob's history, is likewise divisible into two distinct portions, and periods of time.

In commenting on the morbid condition of this girl from the commencement of her illness, we shall regard her case solely from a professional point of view. We shall eliminate, as much as possible from consideration, the question of collusion, or non-collusion, on the part of the parents, except in so far as it has a bearing on the medical questions involved.

When investigating the import of the symptoms observed during the last eight days of the girl's life, we

shall endeavour to express our opinion, with due consideration and, we hope, becoming regard for the adverse views of others differently interpreting to ourselves.

All the medical men who were judicially examined in the foregoing case, agree that Sarah Jacob suffered from Hysteria. Admitting the absurd etymology of the word, inasmuch as the malady may be found in the male sex, Hysteria is nevertheless a true disease. The most recent writers on the subject, consider it to be "a perturbed condition of the Nervous System," and to be "closely associated with affections of the Mind;" and that it "is brought into existence, if not inherited, by those conditions which are the most active in producing Disorder of the Mind."³⁸⁹ "Disturbed Cerebral Nutrition may be said to be its foundation; using the word 'Nutrition' in its broadest sense, and considering the proper performance of this function, to involve the healthy action of every organ in the body."³⁹⁰

Sarah Jacob appears to have been a highly impressionable, emotional, precocious child, and much addicted to religious reading,—circumstances indicating that she possessed a condition of Nervous Organization which, assisted by her age and sex, would be very predisponent to this Disease. The apparent causeless vomiting or spitting of frothy blood—the "agonizing" epigastric pain—and the peculiar character, and sudden subsidence, of the primary convulsions, all tend to confirm such Diagnosis. The "arched back" was certainly not the Opisthotonos of either Tetanus, or Acute Inflammation of the Membranes of the Spinal Cord.

Mr. Davies—presumptively on account of the state of unconsciousness which was one of the early symptoms during the first month—appears to have then^{390*} considered the case as one of Catalepsy. In true Catalepsy, however, there are no Convulsions: the more or less complete suspension of Sensation and Voluntary Power, being only accompanied by a partial or general stiffening of all the muscles. During the last four weeks of Mr. Davies's first attendance, this condition apparently somewhat obtained; and after he resumed charge of the girl, the case certainly still more approached, in some of its characteristics, a state analogous to first, perhaps Cata-

lepsy, when it was hard to "tell whether the girl was dead or alive;" and, then, to the allied form of Nervous Disorder—Ecstasy,³⁹¹ when the "fits" had ceased to be of the convulsive type, simply consisting of temporary loss of consciousness, with sudden awakings and throwing about of the arms.

Hysteria, Catalepsy, and Ecstasy are, in fact, allied maladies, forming a more or less connected link in a train of Nervous Disorders, whose phenomena bear a relation "on the one hand to Mind, and the other to Body."³⁹²

As a study of the comparative effect on the human frame of taking *very little food during about six weeks*, and living, as alleged, *without any food at all during two years*, the case of Sarah Jacob is remarkably interesting! During his first attendance, Mr. Davies prescribed rice-milk and oatmeal-gruel, of which the girl took *but little*, and *subsequently* "became much emaciated, almost a skeleton." *This very natural sequence appears to have been entirely lost sight of, by the after-believers in Sarah Jacob's "wonderful" powers.* Whilst the girl was undoubtedly and veritably suffering from frequent attacks of the convulsive and anæsthetic³⁹³ form of Hysteria, she became in *a few weeks* "much emaciated,—almost a skeleton"—*because she in reality took but "little food."* Whilst the girl was lying in her bed *for nearly two years*, and the alleged "fits" are truly momentary and conveniently habitual, she becomes fat and plump,—although, as is declared, she *all that time* does not take any description whatever, of either solid or liquid food!

This bare fact considerably detracts from any value that might have been placed on the reliance of the Defence—both at the Magisterial Investigation and at the Judicial Trial—on the opinion, that Hysterical patients can live on very much less food, or even entirely without food, much longer than persons in perfect health.

It is admitted by one of our first Physiologists that "in certain states of the system, commonly known as 'Hysterical,' there is frequently a very remarkable disposition for Abstinence, and power of sustaining it."³⁹⁴

Dr. Carpenter also states:—"It is quite certain that an *apparent* cessation of *all* the vital functions, may take place without that entire loss of vitality which would

leave the organism in the condition of a *dead* body, liable to be speedily disintegrated by the operation of chemical and physical agencies."³⁹⁵ As illustrations, he instances temporary and prolonged Syncope or Fainting, cases of Trance or Catalepsy, and the phenomena of artificial Somnambulism, "Hypnotic" or "Mesmeric." He also includes in his category "the performances of certain Indian Fakeers," who have been stated, "if these assertions are to be credited," to voluntarily undergo an underground burial "for some days or even weeks, until, in fact, means are taken to produce resuscitation." Other writers, ancient and modern, corroborate these views.

During winter, and even under other favourable conditions, for a much more prolonged period, the vegetable world will also sustain its vitality, with a considerably diminished or suspended functional activity. The cold-blooded and warm-blooded hibernating animals pass their long winter-sleep on little or no food. Even the non-hibernating Mammalia will exist, under certain circumstances, for a very long time without food. On December 14th, 1810, "In the Ordnance yard under the Castle at Dover, near Guildford Battery, . . . an immense quantity of the cliff fell with a dreadful crash upon the house of Mr. Poole (the foreman of the carpenters), and entirely destroyed it; his wife, five children, and niece were buried in the ruins (their remains being subsequently dug out). . . . Near the foot of the cliff that fell, was an excavation in the rock about eight feet square, which formed a pig-sty, in which was a fat pig, intended for slaughter in the course of a few days; the rubbish closed the entrance, and covered the sty to the depth of thirty feet. A number of waggons being constantly employed in clearing the rubbish away, on the 23rd of May following (a period of 160 days), the men at work heard the moan of a pig amongst the ruins, and proceeded to clear the entrance to the sty, which when they had opened, to their utter astonishment they found the pig alive, and very lively, though literally nothing but skin and bone, with the bristles and hair grown extremely long, and the backbone forming an edge like a piece of board; the creature having subsisted five months and nine days without any other nourishment than the litter on which

.t lay; this was entirely consumed, and could have supplied the animal but a very short period; water it was entirely without, the whole time. . . . The animal by great care and attention recovered, and was shown in its emaciated state, for a length of time, for emolument."²⁹⁶

In our examination before the Magistrates, we expressed (as we had previously written) our opinion that Sarah Jacob had acquired the habit of Prolonged Fasting; and, from the account of the effects on her of the eight days' Abstinence, we judged that this power of hers was limited to about two days. We confessed to no personal knowledge of Cataleptic or Pseudo-Cataleptic Hysteria; but stated that Insanity was the only "abnormal state of health, according to our personal experience," in which a person could live twice as long without food, as could a person in a perfectly normal condition. We believe this opinion accords with the experience of Medical men specially devoted to the study of Lunacy. Certainly, Insane patients will appear none the worse physically, after a week's absolute deprivation of solid and liquid food. As is also well known, Lunatics are not either so amenable to changes of temperature, as are persons *cum mentibus sanis*.

Omitting from consideration the abnormal condition of human Insanity, two great Factors rule in all the other *exempla* of organized beings, living for a prolonged period of time without their ordinary food. *In such instances Functional Vitality is more or less suspended; and Physical Activity is almost, if not quite, in abeyance.*

As in the hibernating animals,—as in the Dover pig,—so also in all the *authenticated* cases of prolonged Fasting, in *bonâ fide* instances of abnormal health,—these two conditions pre-exist. Of all other cases insisting on their powers of Abstinence, "*but maintaining an active condition,* it may be safely asserted that they were impostors."²⁹⁷

Fortunately for the cause of truth, we have in these cases of Prolonged Abstinence—whether in the hibernating or non-hibernating of the lower animals—whether in the normal or in the abnormal state of health of the human being—one unmistakable, ponderable, physical symptom. Though slowly in cases of Suspended Vitality, yet surely, does Nature feed herself from her storehouse of

accumulated Fat, as well as probably on the several fluids, and possibly tissues, of the system. The Body, *more or less*, loses in weight.

This fact has been experimentally ascertained as regards hybernating animals. In the apparently authentic case of the Fakir Haridas, who in 1837 was entombed for the space of six weeks, it is distinctly stated that the body before resuscitation was stiff *and emaciated*.³⁹⁸

Dr. Henry Barber, of Ulverston, has lately published two cases of long-continued abstinence from food. One case was a healthy girl of 16, afflicted with Hysterical Vomiting, for which "every remedy that could be devised was tried, without effect; and for a few weeks the patient was supported by nutrient enemata, until the bowels would not retain the smallest quantity, so that they had to be discontinued." Recourse was then had to tepid sponging, rubbing with Cod-Liver oil occasionally, and the exhibition of "draughts of cold water or a lump of ice when asked for." "The poor girl lay for eleven months in this condition, suffering no pain whatever beyond the pangs of hunger and thirst, and eventually died from sheer Inanition. Her body was wasted to such a degree, that she resembled a living skeleton."

The second was a "Case of Lethargy and Abstinence" in a girl of 11, and which attracted notice in the Local Journals as "the Sleeping Girl of Ulverston." From the excellent account given of this case, it would appear to have been one of Ecstasy or Trance, evidently dependent on perverted religious feeling. This condition first lasted about fourteen weeks, and then after living on wine and Cod-Liver oil for a month, the girl seems to have relapsed for another twelve weeks. During these two periods, she was treated with "inunction of the whole body daily with warm oil; hot applications (bottles and flannels) to the feet and legs; nourishing the body by absorption, and deriving the blood from the head." Dr. Barber in his description of her appearance and condition states:—"The limbs are wasted, the Abdomen sunken, the ribs and bones of the Pelvis very prominent; and, with the exception of the face, the whole body is emaciated, apparently to the last degree."³⁹⁹

Now, we have previously shown that there was a

period in the eventful history of Sarah Jacob, in which her disease may be said to have approximated, in certain of its characteristics, a Cataleptic or Ecstatic state. In this period she "took little food;" and, alike with all similar cases—"she became much emaciated—almost a skeleton."

The natural excreta were also more or less suspended, requiring operative means for their relief.

At this time, therefore, at the onset in fact, the Disease of Sarah Jacob may be said to have comported itself, in a manner strictly consonant with all that is known respecting its Semeiology^{399*} and resultant effects.

After May, 1867, when Mr. Davies, Surgeon, Llandyssil, discontinued his attendance, we for a time in reality, lose all safe ground whence to deduce any reliable data of the girl's progressive condition.

Beyond the ridiculous balderdash given on oath by the Father, before the Coroner, all is comparatively blank until we have the significant evidence of the Vicar as to the girl's state in the following October. He then finds her looking weak and delicate, though not pale. Towards the end of this October, the Father acknowledges that his daughter was *not thin*. The Vicar very frequently visits her, and eventually reports a "going forward in health;" and that by the summer of 1869 her face had become *more* plump, and her general improvement more conspicuous. He also tells us that during the period of his visitation, her intellectual faculties became proportionately developed, and progressively augmented. All this is fully corroborated by all who visited the girl between October 1867 and November 1869. As far as medical investigation extended, the girl had at, and even long before, the latter date, apparently acquired sound physical health.

Skilled knowledge, united with common sense, may venture indeed to give a scientific explanation of the altered features in the girl, from the time Mr. Davies discontinued his professional attendance, to the advent of the London Nurses.

Rallying from her Ecstatic state on the prophesied Sunday—asking for and drinking her milk—receiving the necessary operative interference—she was evidently

sufficiently convalescing to do without Mr. Davies's attendance.

The discontinuance of medicinal treatment certainly appears to have been followed by an alteration in the character of the "fits": they ceased to be of a convulsive type. *All Catalepsy or Ecstasy was at an end.* The attacks, no doubt, gradually approximated, in nature, to what has been so frequently described in the foregoing history, by all competent observers—a mere momentary closing of the eyelids—dignified in name, by the parents, as "a fainting fit."⁴⁰⁰

The natural, and well-meant, sympathy and attention of her parents, during her period of convalescence, doubtless soon engendered in Sarah Jacob's wrongly-balanced Mind, notions of merely ideal creation. The oft-expressed wonderment and surprise of the ignorant household around her, as to the very little food she had lately lived upon, tended to give a morbid direction, form, and shape, to these visions of the mind. The occasional refusal of some temptingly-offered article of sick-diet, was followed by more parental coaxings, endearments, indulgences, and pettings. The resultant self-gratification, the feeling of childish pride at treatment so different to that of the other children, conduced, for the same ends, to a more frequent declining of food when offered. Gradually thus became acquired, the power of Fasting, without distress, for unusual periods. The cultivation of this habit—followed, as doubtless it was, by its still (to her) desirable sequences—led on (unconsciously, perhaps, at first, but in time) to acts of Simulation and Deception. The partiality and ignorance of the parents may have led to their being (for an unknown period) duped. The regular habits, daily duties, and more or less out-door occupation of the elder household, would afford many opportunities for obtaining the required food. The formation of the house, the position of the Dairy, and proximity of the other places where food is usually kept in these small Welsh Farms, are favourable to the possibility of this theory. The very furniture in the girl's room was evidently available for concealment of food if needed! Legal, as well as other, evidence has furnished a more than suspicious probability, that the peculiar

Moral Perversion of this unfortunate girl had, by degrees, induced her to submit her body to uneasiness, if not to pain, for the purpose of hiding her food on inconvenient occasions! The unusual depression discovered after death beneath the left arm-pit, had been apparently produced by more or less continuous solid pressure. Nay, more! it is in the highest degree probable, that the Moral Delinquency of this Hysterical girl, had led to the cunning contrivance of gaining over the little sister, of five years old, to, in many ways, aid and assist in her deceptive doings. Too many parents can, from sad experience, credit the power which designing minds have of securing, by promises and threats, the silence and acquiescence of young children! From the very first, when independent observers visited the house, it was remarked that this little girl, of five years old, was more or less always in the invalid's room. She appeared to be quite "a kind of necessity" to the Hysterical girl; and slept in the same bed with her at night. How often has it happened in families and schools, that the wetting or fouling of the bed has, by the elder or naughtier, been laid to the fault of the younger or other bed-fellow!

An alleged incapacity of emptying the Bladder or Rectum, is a not uncommon symptom in Hysteria. Left to itself, an inevitable overflow relieves the supposititious Retention. The prevailing idea of Deception and Simulation morbidly ruling Sarah Jacob's mind, would at once incline her to impute to her little bed-fellow, the dirty consequences of her own perverted natural functions!

It must be remembered that the asserted entire stoppage (with modifications as stated by the Father), of these natural functions, is dated from November and December, 1867, respectively. By this time the girl's *Physique* (though not her *Morale*!) had become decidedly improved. We have no Medical opinion of the girl's physical powers in these two months. No possible confirmation of the truth of the assertion, that she could not get out of bed is, however, in any way derivable from the Vicar's statement. The ability becomes more and more probable as time goes on.

The weight of the Medical evidence assumes the girl's perfect power to get out of her bed, at all events during the

period between March and November, 1869. Whether she was a clandestine day- or a night-feeder is immaterial, even though she slept in the same room with her parents. Sound sleep is a blessing to the agricultural population; and need be no obstacle to the practicability of cunning and stratagem.

Assuming the power implied, no difficulty even arises respecting the clandestine disposal, either with or without the little sister's help, of the solid and liquid excreta.

In summing-up, great stress was laid on this point by the Judge, adversely to the parents. With the knowledge we all of us now have, we of course do not attempt to impugn Sir James Hannen's logic; we only wish to record what medical men would regard as perfectly possible, amongst the other disgusting tricks and subterfuges, sometimes practised by young girls so unfortunately afflicted.

At what precise month or day, the parents first became cognizant that their "marvellous" little daughter did not live entirely without food, nor without voiding her excreta, and getting out of bed as other human beings, is not likely now ever to be accurately known.

The absurd and wicked "oath" which the parents confessed to have taken about two years before the girl's death, is the only evidence we have of the period when, as they say, they ceased to offer her food.

With all due deference to our Law, it is not too imaginative to assume, that this acquired knowledge of these poor ignorant persons was doubtless accidental in its origin, and gradual in its development. Nor is it too absurd to believe, that from (at first) a mistaken sympathy for their invalid daughter, the parents concealed this acquired knowledge from her—finding from experience that the mere mention of food, and their occasional insinuations and doings, were invariably followed by one of these suppositiously terrible "fits."⁴⁰¹ There does not, indeed, throughout the whole history, appear the least evidence that the girl herself was ever aware, or, at all events, acknowledged that she was aware, that her parents had detected her Simulations. Mr. Coleridge's theory respecting the strong evidence against the father, from the collusion between him and his daughter, being virtually implied in the last night's Delirium of the girl, cannot be Psychologically supported.⁴⁰² The father's

evidently constant attention to, and frequent attendance upon, his daughter, are sufficient to have given a direction and shape to her Delirious utterances — without necessitating the far-fetched theory, which was subsequently withdrawn.

It is quite within the range of possibility, and even probability, that up to her very death, the girl had brought herself to believe, that her parents were ignorant of her deceptions. This belief, on her part, in no way, as we can see, antagonizes the definition of the Law laid down by Mr. Giffard. She assented to the "experiment," doubtless, with a morbid vanity, and a contemplated gratification of being hereafter regarded as a complete heroine and marvel.

Her determined resistance to the Death, becomes indeed, of Psychological interest. Had this emotional child so brooded over this peculiar perverted fancy, that at length she had actually come to realize in herself a competency to live without food? or had she imagined that she would be able to outwit the Nurses from Guy's, as she had previously outwitted the four or seven respectable witnesses to her previous fortnight's "total abstaining?" *During the second watching the little sister did not sleep with her!* Had she then, too sanguinely clung to one or other of these ideas,—forgetting, or rather not knowing, that outraged Nature would, in a few days, render her incapable of thinking or fancying anything at all? It became too late to hark back. The secretive and deceptive tendencies of this young girl, become, in conjunction with every other circumstance of her whole history, sufficiently indicative of that peculiar Aberration of Morality which, in such a case of Simulative Disease, brings her state to the very border-land of Insanity.

This morbid Perversion of Mind, would be further encouraged, by the fuss and folly of the parents in dressing the girl up in the flowers, ribands, and trinkets described. The increased attention therewith bestowed upon her, the false vanity thereby engendered, would serve to augment and perpetuate both her Simulated symptoms, and her cunning devices. The poor silly parents, having made up their minds as to the incurability of their daughter, may have deemed there was no harm in granting these few pleasures for her enjoyment!

As the fame of this "marvel" spread around, and neighbours and strangers, from short and long distances, came to visit her—leaving behind their many contributions in money and kind—it may perhaps be more difficult to believe that the girl was still not acting in collusion with her parents.

The damning fact against Evan and Hannah Jacob, of having made their daughter a complete show-child, is nevertheless not irreconcilable with the theory we would adopt. Every day would bring some fresh confirmation of the various sly methods she resorted to, for the obtainment of her ends.⁴⁰³ The mistaken sympathy, which at first prompted the parents to conceal their discovery from their impressionable daughter, would be gradually stimulated, if not supplanted, by a motive not so strictly parental, at the sight of the gifts of the credulous and the foolish. Yet there was no necessity to drag their daughter into collusion. *Her* part in the "show" could be equally well performed by not divulging to her a discovery, which the parents knew would be followed by unpleasant, and (as they believed) perhaps dangerous, results. It is also perfectly possible, that the girl still hugged herself with the idea of her own success; and, finding numbers, as well as her parents, crediting her "marvellous" powers, that her petty pride, her childish vanity, and her self-gratification gradually augmented, whilst her morbid fancy became further perverted until she, in fact, was almost deceived into believing it all herself.

Sarah Jacob became, during her two years' alleged Total Abstinence, plump, healthy-looking, and fat! Dr. Carpenter states:—

"The smallest quantity of food upon which life is known to have been supported with vigour, during a prolonged period, is that on which Cornaro states himself to have subsisted; this was no more than 12 oz. a day, chiefly of vegetable matter, with 14 oz. of light wine, for a period of fifty-eight years. There is another well-known case (that of Thomas Wood, the miller, of Billericay, reported to the College of Physicians in 1767 by Sir George Baker), in which a remarkable degree of vigour was sustained for upwards of eighteen years, upon no other nutriment than 16 oz. of flour (containing about 14 oz. of dry solids) [daily] made into a pudding with water, no other liquid of any kind being taken."⁴⁰⁴

Such cases are, however, very much the exception of our nature. Active bodily and mental exertion would in

the majority necessitate an ampler diet. Shipwrecks, Coal-mine and other accidents, have shown, however, "that life, with a moderate amount of vigour, may be preserved for some time on a very limited allowance of food."⁴⁰⁴

Although Sarah Jacob's later life was unattended with "much mental⁴⁰⁴ or bodily exertion," it is nevertheless, abundantly demonstrated that during the two years preceding the fatal watching, the various organs of her body maintained their (albeit perverted) functions *in an active condition*. Growth and development of the grey matter of her Brain must have coincided with her daily improving intellectual capacity. All the organs of the Special Senses duly performed their respective functions. The only aberration was an alleged exaltation of the Sense of Touch over the whole body: this universal tactile Hyperæsthesia being a not unfrequent concomitant of Hysterical Disease. Her hair, nails, and her whole body grew in actual length. Her permanent teeth appeared. There is not the least mention of Jaundice; she cried real Tears; there was sensible moisture on certain, if not all, parts of her body. Hence one great function of the Liver still went on—the Lachrymal and Perspiratory Glands continued their work. Although the Bowels and the Bladder participated in the Hysterical bias, there is sufficient skilled and ordinary evidence to show, that the functions of neither the Kidneys nor the Intestines were altogether suppressed. Moreover, between October, 1867 and December, 1869, a layer of Fat from half to one inch thick was deposited on the Abdominal walls!

Well may Mr. James Thomas have so lucidly expressed his irresistible reasons, that the child had been fed up to a certain time:—"First, That she lived; secondly, That she failed to live when the severe test of watching was brought to bear upon her; thirdly, That she was encased in a layer of Fat; and fourthly, That she had Fæces in her Intestines."⁴⁰⁵

What further evidence is wanted of Life in an active condition?

Yet the credulous and the miracle-mongers would attribute this girl's alleged marvellous powers to the fact

that, ever since she ceased to be Mr. Davies's patient, she was suffering from Catalepsy or Trance; or that she was surrounded by some wonderful Mesmeric or Magnetic influence, or by some other occult radiating Vital Force; or that, being in some peculiar Negative state, she was fed by the Organic Bodies dissolved or otherwise existent in atmospheric air!

We have previously expressed our opinion that the girl's *first* seizure was, at an early period, allied to one of those anomalous forms of Nervous Disorders—generalized by the name of Cataleptic or Ecstatic Hysteria. There is (albeit slight, still sufficient) evidence that at this time there was a temporary diminution of Vitality—with a more or less suspension of certain of the Animal and Organic Functions. *Life was certainly not then in an active state.* But little food was taken; and in a few weeks, she became almost a skeleton!

Such is the condition, and such is the sequence, in all the authenticated instances of Nature's like "marvels!" Whether it be a Hybernating animal; whether it be a voluntarily Hypnotized Fakir; or whether it be any form of prolonged Syncope or Trance, there is invariably a diminution of the Vitality, followed by a ponderable reduction in the Weight of the Body!

It is therefore an insult to the common sense of the nineteenth century, to presuppose the possibility of *Active Life* being carried on, even in an Hysterical girl, for two whole years, without the necessary fuel for Life's fire! Had Nature's functions—under any wondrous influence whatever—lain semi-dormant for twenty-four months, the Fat would have been slowly but surely absorbed, the Body would have certainly and proportionately wasted! It is futile then, to seek an explanation of Sarah Jacob's case from October, 1867, in Causes, whose manifestations and effects, as witnessed in all similar and allied cases, were not only non-existent, but were in reality actually reversed! Stubborn facts are opposed to the Spiritualists!

On Dec. 9th, 1869, we start therefore with a young girl of thirteen, said to be suffering from some form of so-called Hysterical disease, who,—notwithstanding certain alleged symptoms,—was according to the evidence of our

friend Mr. Thomas E. Davies, "Gohebydd," the Rev. Wm. Thomas, ourselves, and others, in the enjoyment of continuous good physical health for some longer or shorter time up to that date.

On this day (Dec. 9th, 1869), we actually get a Medical Certificate that she was "cheerful; face flushed; eyes brilliant; pulse regular, *averaging* 86 per minute; temperature in mouth 98° after two minutes' rest. . . . She seems quite well, and says she has no pain anywhere if not touched." We note that the pulse is said to *average* 86, showing that the observers had made every allowance for the influence of Hysteria, or other disturbing causes, on the rapidity of the Heart's action; and had calculated the *mean* of a number of separate observations.

We have no evidence that the girl's sleep was ever otherwise than natural; and there was no reference whatever, to either restlessness, or wakefulness, prior to the last eventful watch. The expression of her countenance is never said to be otherwise than cheerful; and her face on the date specified is "plump," and she appears well fed.

Regarding the positive evidence of the Nurses, we cannot admit otherwise, than that the total abstinence from solid and liquid food commenced on Dec. 9th, 1869, and was rigidly maintained until the girl's Death at the end of the eighth day.

It is also as positively affirmed that after Death, no visible cause was discovered contradictory of the opinion, that on the said December the 9th, she was apparently physically healthy; and no detectable morbid change, antagonistic to the continuance of life beyond December 17th, was in any way observed. The Counsel for Hannah Jacob very rightly and severely commented on the omission to examine the Spinal cord and Sympathetic Nerve, made by the Necroscopists.⁴⁰⁶ This neglect, from causes to which it is unnecessary to allude, is doubtless of not unfrequent occurrence in post-mortem examinations. In subsequent judicial investigations, the omission is, however, oftentimes used as a lever whereby to displace the infallibility of asserted facts. Whilst regretting that this one loophole of escape was thus incautiously left open, it does not require much skilled knowledge to avow—despite

the vituperative eloquence of the learned Counsel (a quondam medical man!)—that, reasoning from the analogy of similar cases, any changes observable by the highest known magnifying powers, in these portions of the Nervous System of Sarah Jacob, would have but little availed to have accounted satisfactorily for the symptoms of her last eight days' existence. The applicability of this theory of undetected Organic Nerve-changes, either to the previous history, the eight-days' symptoms, or the death of this girl, may be said to have been tersely disposed of by the learned Judge when, in summing up, he stated⁴⁰⁷—“The only Disease which has been pointed out as existing in this child, is not a Disease that would cause Death.”⁴⁰⁸

We need not indeed, further labour the question of whether or not Sarah Jacob was, during the last two years of her life, afflicted with a mortal disease. She most certainly was not. It is also satisfactorily proved that at no period of her recorded history, since Mr. Davies finally discontinued his professional attendance in 1867, had the girl exhibited symptoms in any way similar to those sworn to by the four nurses on watch on and after Dec. 9th, 1869. It consequently follows that, superadded to her usual condition, there must have been a *tertium quid* causative of her last symptoms, and her Death.

At the preliminary judicial investigation it was held that neither of the medical men had done anything to bring himself under the operation of the Criminal Law. The Solicitor of Hannah Jacob based his defence of her on the non-liability of the wife—that she was not independent, but under her husband's control. No attempt was consequently made by any of the Solicitors engaged, to at all account for the new symptoms which presented themselves during the last eight days of Sarah Jacob's life. It was rather attempted merely to disprove the existence, or at all events the importance, of symptoms indicative of progressive physical exhaustion; and to establish a dissimilarity between the reported symptoms during life, and the observed appearances after death in the “Fasting-Girl,” with the indications and post-mortem signs in acknowledged cases of Starvation, as recorded by various authorities.

It was reserved till the Trial of the parents for Manslaughter, for one of the medical witnesses to enunciate the opinion, in cross-examination, that the girl's Death was attributable "to what is called Mental Shock to Nervous Exhaustion—in fact, a kind of Nervous Exhaustion."⁴⁰⁹ The witness however, admitted that the withholding of food for eight days would produce that result; and that this withholding would, in an Hysterical girl, be "likely to cause death certainly."⁴⁰⁹ The witness had just previously expressed an opinion, that the post-mortem appearances in Sarah Jacob's body, were "against the supposition that death had occurred from Starvation;"⁴⁰⁹ consequently we must deduce that he did not attribute the "Mental Shock" or "Nervous Exhaustion" *in her case*, to the withholding of the food. We rather gather from his evidence, that the effect was (in his opinion) caused by the "not only prejudicial but dangerous course of having four strange women guarding her, as these women are proved to have done."⁴⁰⁹

The question becomes thus simplified:—Did the mere presence of the four strange nurses, prejudice and imperil the girl's life; and were the new symptoms,—observed after December 9th, and until her death,—the recognised indications of "Mental Shock" or "Nervous Exhaustion?"

Inasmuch that the cordon,—so strictly held round the girl as to render the obtainment of food (without detection) a practical impossibility,—was of course a continuously increasing prejudice and peril, insomuch may we regard the presence of the four nurses as most disastrous. But as to the otherwise sinister influence of strange nurses on this girl in particular, and on Hysterical girls in general, we do not think the universal view of the Profession will coincide with the *opinion* alluded to.⁴⁰⁹

As a matter of fact, the girl's sleep was more natural the first, than on any subsequent, night of the watching. Had this emotional girl been seriously "shocked" by the influence of the strange faces and presence of the nurses, an otherwise immediate effect was to have been expected. Throughout the whole history of the last eight days' watching, there is abundant evidence to prove, that the girl became really very much attached to, and

actually loved, her four nurses. She took to them from the very onset. Instead indeed, of any one of the medical gentlemen "mitigating the presence of these nurses,"⁴⁰⁹ it would really appear that the tables were actually reversed. On the Tuesday, when Mr. Hughes was visiting Llethernoyadd with Mr. Rowlands, Sister Clinch tells us:⁴¹⁰—"The girl cried, and I told Mr. Hughes that she refused to let him examine her. *She thanked me, and put her face to kiss me.* Mr. Hughes was allowed to feel her pulse, and that was all." Again, we have the indubitable result of the tact and discretion of the nurses, in the complete and entire subsidence of the so-called "fits." This was incontrovertibly shown on more than one occasion, when it was necessary to shift the girl on to a dry and fresh bed. The parents had always asserted, that not only would such a removal be invariably followed by a "fit," but that the girl could not possibly sleep on a strange bed! The nurses discreetly contrived both events, without either of the predicted sequences! During the whole time of the nurses being present, but one "fit" occurred, and that was totally distinct in character from the precedent ones, being a "fit" of pure temporary Syncope, caused by the dropping of the water-bottle.

Apart of course, from the results of the tenacity of the four nurses, the whole history of the last eight days fully also substantiates the opinion of most medical men:—that it is the reverse of "prejudicial and unwise," for strange nurses to be "forced" upon a patient suffering from Hysteria. The withdrawal of an Hysterical patient from the false sympathy, the mistaken kindness, the un-called-for indulgence, and the antagonistic surroundings of anxious relatives and friends, and their replacement by the necessary firmness, the watchful attention, and the discreet nursing of proper and skilled (albeit strange) nurses, are the great elements in curing the varied symptoms of this Protean malady.⁴¹¹

It has been said that these four strange nurses were "suddenly forced" on Sarah Jacob. Any one who has carefully perused the foregoing history, will distinctly recognise that the girl was carefully prepared for, and timely made cognizant of, the advent of the nurses from Guy's. She unreservedly acquiesced in their proceed-

ings. The presence of four *men*-watchers for one whole fortnight in the preceding April, produced no such (alleged) symptoms and effects of "Mental Shock" as did eight days' watching by four skilled, kind women in the following December! To this latter watch, then, there must have been a superaddition evidently non-existent in the watch of the previous April. It would be a supererogation to continue the comparison,⁴¹² the more especially as the symptoms of the last eight days of the girl's life, and the post-mortem appearances in her body, were decidedly not the indications recognised as the effects of "Mental Shock."

We cannot do better in this branch of the investigation than follow the excellent example of Sir James Hannen, and argue from the latest period of time backwards. Death from "Shock," or strong Mental Emotion, results in consequence of the suspension or deviation of the influence of the Nervous Centres on the action of the Heart, whose contractions consequently become stopped, either directly,—or indirectly through a paralysing effect on the muscles of Respiration. The former mode of Dying, is technically called Death by Asthenia, and after death, we should expect to find the "Circulation, . . . as it were, arrested and fixed in what may be termed its normal state,—each side of the Heart containing its due proportion of Blood (of proper colour), and all the cavities . . . distended from the sudden loss of power in the Heart to propel its contents."⁴¹³ In the latter, we should find the post-mortem appearances of Death by Apnœa (commonly called Asphyxia), and the Heart's "right cavities and the large venous trunks (would be) gorged with blood; but its left cavities . . . nearly or quite empty."⁴¹⁴

In the autopsy of the body of Sarah Jacob, the discovered state of her Thoracic Organs, did not tally, in any one particular, with either the one or the other of these conditions. The most detailed account of the post-mortem appearances of the Welsh Fasting-Girl, states⁴¹⁵: — "Both Lungs were perfectly healthy . . . The Lungs were collapsed and dry, of rather bright red outward appearance. . . . The Heart was of moderate size. . . . The Auricles contained about a tablespoonful of

dark clotted venous blood. The Ventricles were empty, and their walls flaccid. The Valves were all healthy."

Death by Starvation, is indeed the type of a mixed mode of dying—"intermediate between Death by Anæmia and Death by Asthenia."⁴¹⁶ After Death by Anæmia, such as from profuse Hæmorrhage, we find "on inspecting the body, the Vessels generally are found to contain little blood, and the Heart to be nearly or quite empty, and contracted."⁴¹⁷

The condition of Sarah Jacob's Heart after death was indeed in almost exact accordance with the description given by Sir Thomas Watson, Bart.:—"Accordingly, after Death by Starvation, the Heart is not found to be so much contracted, nor so nearly empty, as after Death by sudden and copious Hæmorrhage."⁴¹⁸

A glance at the subjoined table, will show the differences in the condition of the Heart after, and in reference to the Cause of, Death as just previously detailed:—

A. Death from Anæmia.	B. Death from Asthenia.	C. Death from Apnœa.
The Heart is—		
nearly or quite empty, and contracted.	distended with its due proportion of Blood (of natural colour.)	gorged with black thick liquid Blood in its right cavities, nearly or quite empty on the left side.
D. Death from Starvation.	E. Sarah Jacob's Heart was "of moderate size. The Auricles contained about a table-spoonful of dark clotted Venous Blood. The Ventricles were empty, and their walls flaccid."	
The Heart is— not so much contracted, nor so nearly empty, as in A.		

If deductions from post-mortem appearances are pathologically admissible, the Heart of the Fasting-Girl evidently therefore ceased to beat, simply because "the Blood, renewed no longer from without, and fed only by Absorption from the system itself,"⁴¹⁸ had gradually diminished in quantity, and deteriorated in quality. Speak-

ing broadly, Sarah Jacob's Death more particularly commenced at her Heart. Had she died exclusively from "Mental Shock," Death would have commenced at the Brain. The deprivation of the Cerebral influence, either directly or indirectly, on the Cardiac Organ, would have produced the post-mortem appearances of either B or C in the foregoing table.

On the contrary however, Sarah Jacob's Brain became secondarily and ultimately affected, and its functions gradually suspended, in consequence of the paucity and poorness of the Blood transmitted thereto from the Heart. Dr. Carpenter⁴¹⁹—quoting certain experiments of M. Chossat, which show that, in the Starvation of warm-blooded (lower) animals, the Nervous System undergoes scarcely any loss of weight, remarks:—"It would seem in fact, as if the supervention of Death was coincident with the consumption of all the disposable combustive material; and that up to that point, the whole remaining energy of Nutrition is concentrated upon the Nervous System."

Sarah Jacob's condition most fully indeed, corroborates the opinion of those, who affirm that in cases of Starvation, the Intellect is unaffected, and Delirium by no means an early or constant attendant.⁴²⁰

However, in those cases unmistakably recognised as the sequence of severe "Mental Shock," symptoms more especially referable to the Nervous System, are more or less early predominant. Semi-unconsciousness is perhaps the one most usually observed. A state of Mental Bewilderment and Incoherence, even Coma and Convulsions, are sometimes also exhibited. In addition also to the depression of the Vascular System, secondarily consequent on Nervous Shock, nausea, vomiting, and hiccup, are by no means likewise rare in appearance.⁴²¹

As the state after death of Sarah Jacob's Heart did not conclusively tally with the Cardiac conditions produced by the mode of dying from Mental Shock (Death by Asthenia or Apnœa); so neither did her symptoms, during her last eight days of life, exclusively coincide with that condition generally recognised as the depressing effect of a Shock to the Nervous System.

The constitutional symptoms of severe Burns, probably

afford the most typical effects of great Nervous Shock. Such patients not unusually present, in a very marked degree, one or other of the two forms of Prostration very graphically described by Travers.⁴²² After stating that "A fit of Syncope, and the recovery from it, present an epitome of the phenomena of Shock," Travers adds:—"It is upon the Brain in both cases, that the first impression is made; and to its influence upon the Organs of Circulation and Respiration, the phenomena which differ in degree and duration more than in kind, are to be ascribed."⁴²³

The embarrassment of the Cerebral faculties, which appears to be a prominent and early symptom consequent on Nervous Shock—whether the result of physical injuries operating at a distance from the Nervous Centres, or of powerful emotions of the Mind—does certainly not appear to have existed in Sarah Jacob's case.⁴²⁴ On the contrary, not only,—as in other recorded cases of Starvation,—were the symptoms indicative of depression of the Nervous System late in appearance; but if there is one circumstance more remarkable than another in the Fasting-Girl's condition, it is the fact of the continued clearness of her Intellect, and the persistent exercise of her Cerebral faculties until almost the very last day of the ordeal she was undergoing.⁴²⁵

Had her Nervous System been suffering from the impression of "Mental Shock," she would have most certainly, been Cerebrally unfit to support (as she did) for one whole week, the task she had determinedly undertaken! Apart from all questions of parental collusion, it is most important to remember, that this girl had a character for truth to support, and that she had the strongest of motives to prove to the world, that good physical health was not inconsistent with two years' total deprivation of food. Her determined resistance to the Death, becomes of course of great Psychological interest; but whether her Will was morbidly, or otherwise, perverted, it must be admitted that a brain obtunded by the impression of a "Mental Shock," could not have so successfully performed its allotted work. We advisedly say "successfully!" Such symptoms of the last eight days as were, to a certain degree, under the influence of her Will, Sarah Jacob for some time very successfully main-

tained. Her Cheerfulness and her General Conduct were admirably sustained. Throughout the majority of the eight days, it was evidently a constant struggle between a morbidly, or otherwise, perverted Will and the operations of Nature: the symptoms of the former, almost to the very end, commingling with, and masking (though never overpowering) the effects of total Abstinence on the latter. Under such circumstances, we may understand Professional Judgment, ignoring for the moment all reliance on the dictates of Science, being deceived in the estimation of the relative value of the separate indications. We cannot so readily understand but that, had the acknowledged symptoms of Mental or Nervous Shock been in any degree observable or present, they must have been recognised, and would therefore have received their appropriate treatment and management. When the power of Volition had ceased from sheer Physical Exhaustion, discrimination of course, became a necessity. Nature at length had vindicated the attempted outrage on her laws.

As the post-mortem appearances in Sarah Jacob, demonstrated that her mode of dying, was a mixture of Death by Anæmia and Death by Asthenia, so also her symptoms during life, indicated (until the vitality of the Nervous System itself became almost exhausted) perfect activity of her Cerebral faculties, and also that her Brain was not suffering from any impression of a Mental Shock.

In the absence of any ascertained cause of Death, and by the method of exclusion we have heretofore adopted, we cannot—with the knowledge of *the one great factor* in the case (*the total deprivation of all solid and liquid food for eight whole days*)—arrive at any other conclusion, than that Sarah Jacob died of Acute, or as the Judge naïvely called it, Absolute Starvation.

Dr. Johann Ludwig Casper, Professor of Forensic Medicine in the University of Berlin, &c. &c. states in his work, "based upon personal experience":—

It is well known, and certain, that there are two kinds of Death from Starvation, the Chronic and the Acute. The former is brought about by the gradual withdrawal of all nourishing food, and the restriction of the diet to Starvation-pitch, whereby diseases of every kind, particularly Atrophy and Phthisis, are produced, and finally Death from Exhaustion follows. The latter, the true Death from Star-

vation, ensues more rapidly upon the complete and total withdrawal of every article of nourishment. Since only completely isolated cases, could afford any correct criterion for deciding how long total Abstinence might be borne, before Death occurred, it is readily explicable how the opinions of Authors have varied within so wide a range, that this term had been rated at from three to sixty days!⁴²⁶

Casper then relates a case of a healthy male prisoner, aged thirty-six, who, after being in prison for a year, "vowed to God to eat nothing more in prison, come what may." Casper states, that this case "seems to justify the opinion that a powerful, healthy man is not *likely* to die in less than ten to twelve days of total Abstinence from every article of nourishment."

Mr. Charles Lingen, Surgeon-Extraordinary to the Hereford General Infirmary, has recorded the case of "a thin spare man, in fair health," who persisted in absolute avoidance of all solid and liquid food; and in whom Death occurred on the tenth day.⁴²⁷

The literature of *bonâ fide* cases of Acute Starvation, is exceedingly sparse and scanty. The cases in any way analogous to that of Sarah Jacob, are evidently exceedingly few; and their history when recorded, is so sadly deficient of all accurate description of the early symptoms, as to render them of but slight value for comparison.

In the instances of Starvation resulting from Shipwreck, or Imprisonment in Mines, more or less access to rain and other water, appears to be generally mentioned.

Even the occasional use only, of water is sufficient to greatly prolong the duration of life under the entire abstinence from all other food.

"Redi made experiments upon Capons, by keeping some of them without food, and others without food and drink. None of the latter lived beyond the ninth day, whilst those which were allowed to drink, survived to the sixteenth or twentieth day. He was also led to infer, that the age and strength of animals had some influence on their ability to sustain hunger."⁴²⁸

During the Irish Famine of 1847, Dr. Donovan remarked that the time required to cause death by Chronic Starvation, depended very much on the absence or presence of water.⁴²⁹

Foderé mentions that some workmen were extricated

alive, after fourteen days' confinement in a cold, damp vault, in which they had been buried under a ruin.⁴³⁰

We are cognizant of a lady, aged seventy-nine, who for three weeks prior to her death, most certainly did not take anything but water, which she was constantly calling for. On some days she took no more than a wine-glassful. She passed both Urine and Fæces in small quantities, to within a day or two of her death. Her Intellect remained firm until the day preceding her decease; by which time she had become much emaciated.

The reviewer of M. Chossat's Essay, records⁴³¹ a case of some peculiar condition of the Nervous System—

"In which we are fully satisfied that there was no *deceit* (and) in which there was *complete* Abstinence from all solid food during more than three weeks, a small quantity of tea and toast-water being the only fluids ingested, or on some days not even that: and yet, at the end of that period, the flesh was as firm, the voice as strong, and the muscular strength as great, as at the beginning."

Dr. Sloan mentions the case of a man, "aged sixty-five, of a spare habit of body, and uncommonly vigorous for his time of life," who was brought alive out of a coal-mine, in which he had been incarcerated twenty-three days. During the first ten days, he had access to water "strongly impregnated with iron." "After that period, he became so weak as to be unable to move, and he had unfortunately laid down at some distance from the water." Dr Sloan, commenting on the duration of life in a coal-pit, gives the opinion, that—"An atmosphere slightly impure, by lowering the vital powers, might tend to prolong life under privation of food."⁴³²

Captain Casey, of the *Jane Lowden* timber vessel, was picked up at sea, having been twenty-eight days without food. He was "pale and thin," and had sustained life "by drinking as much rain as he could collect, by tying his cravat round the mast, and when it became drenched, sucking it."⁴³³

The following case is quoted by Guy, as reported by Van Swieten, in his "Commentaries upon Boerhaave's Aphorisms—Melancholy Madness:"—"I knew a woman who obstinately refused all kinds of nourishment for six weeks, drinking nothing but a little water at intervals,

so that at length she perished quite juiceless and dried up.⁴³⁴

Guillaume Granet, a prisoner at Toulouse, resorted to Starvation to avoid punishment. After a period of seven days, he drank water occasionally, to relieve his excessive thirst. He lingered till the fifty-eighth day, when he expired, after struggling four hours in Convulsions.⁴³⁵

Dr. Willan records the case of "a young gentleman, who voluntarily abstained from everything but a little water, just flavoured with orange-juice, for upwards of sixty days."⁴³⁶

This saving, or rather prolonging, power of simple water,⁴³⁷ was of course, by the very circumstances of her case, denied to the poor little Welsh Fasting-Girl.

The absence of this conservative fluid, undoubtedly told most fearfully against Sarah Jacob; and to this fact must, in a great measure, be attributed the inability of Nature to prolong her life beyond eight days. But apart from the mal-influence of this non-access to water,⁴³⁸—when Casper's assertion is remembered—when, moreover, a man in fair health has actually succumbed on the tenth day of absolute deprivation of food⁴³⁹—when other men similarly vigorous, and even with access to water, have after ten,⁴⁴⁰ and even eight⁴⁴¹ days, been quite unable to walk, it need occasion no surprise that a young girl, at a period of life when the changes necessitated by growth, were comparatively more rapid and extended, and whose Nerve-power was most unmistakably defective, should have died at the period she did.

"Hippocrates . . . said that young persons, and especially children, sustain abstinence with most difficulty; persons of middle age with less inconvenience than the former; but not so well as those who are advanced in years."⁴⁴²

Dr. Guy tells us that:—"According to the Civil Law of England, if parent and child perish by a Common Death, the child shall be presumed to have survived if above, and to have died first if under, puberty."⁴⁴³

It would appear, however, from Dr. Alfred Taylor (quoting legal authority), that correctly speaking, the Law of England recognises these natural circumstances of Age, Sex, and Strength, standing alone, as "insufficient to shift the burden of proof. If, therefore,

the party who, by laying claim to property on the ground of the Survivorship of one individual over another, takes upon himself the onus of proving *that* Survivorship, has no other evidence than the assumption that, from Age or Sex, one party struggled longer against their Common Death than his companion, it seems that no decree would have been made in favour of the claim."⁴⁴⁴

In such an investigation however as we are now upon, it may nevertheless, for all practical purposes, be assumed, that the Age,⁴⁴⁵ Sex, and state of Innervation of Sarah Jacob formed no slight elements in defining the period of her actual existence under an absolute deprivation of all solid and liquid food.⁴⁴⁶

These determining causes, added to the entire absence of water, in fact, entirely countervailed the conservative influences of the other surroundings of the girl.

It requires very little stretch of the imagination to conceive that, *cæteris paribus*, fat persons would be more likely to bear hunger longer than the emaciated. The fat pig entombed at Dover in 1810 (page 199), would appear to warrant this assumption. Sarah Jacob was a very fat girl.

The amount of Fat deposited in the tissues is indeed the surplus of that expenditure not previously required, either for Nutrition, or for the process of Combustion necessary to the maintenance of Animal Heat.

It is almost unnecessary to assert that the addition of Physical Fatigue would conduce to an earlier Death from Starvation. Sarah Jacob's physical exertion was literally reduced to a complete minimum.

So, again, with the operation of depressing Mental causes on the physical changes in the body. We have freely and sufficiently expressed our opinion, that the "Welsh Fasting-Girl" was spared these sinister influences on her mode of death. We gather, indeed, from certain of the recorded cases of Starvation, that a determined Will is, for a time, not altogether inoperative in retarding certain of the serious symptoms pertaining to the more or less deprivation of food.

On the seventh day after the prisoner quoted by Casper, had persisted in his Starvation, the Professor observes:—"In the absence of every alarming symptom,

I could not help asking myself, how long might this still unendangered life, yet continue obstinately to prolong its existence?"⁴⁴⁷

For the first seven days, the symptoms of the prisoner of Toulouse (who had resorted to Starvation to avoid punishment), were not very remarkable.⁴⁴⁸

Guy also states:—"The longest Abstinence from food, with free access to water, of which I have had experience among prisoners, is ten days. In two men, and one woman, complete Abstinence from food during this period, was followed by no bad symptom, and the ordinary prison diet was resumed without injury to health. The prisoners were weakened, but by no means exhausted."⁴⁴⁹

In the case of voluntary and absolute Starvation recorded by Mr. Charles Lingen, of Hereford, the patient "kept his purpose" from Sunday, Aug. 20th, 1854. "He was up, dressed, and in his business on (the following) Wednesday—I think on the Thursday and Friday also—when weakness compelled him to remain in bed, which he did till his death on the afternoon of Tuesday, the 29th, the tenth day."⁴⁵⁰

Every possible precaution was also taken to conserve the temperature of Sarah Jacob's body, during the ordeal of the last eight days; but nevertheless the characteristic symptom of the effect of Starvation, was not to be kept off. Despite the blankets, and hot bottles, perseveringly used by night and by day, Sarah Jacob, on the night of Tuesday, Dec. 14th, or on the morning of Wednesday the 15th (between the sixth and seventh day of the watch), "complained of *Cold*." In the afternoon, Dr. Lewis states:—"The right hand at first felt cold; but after being covered with a shawl, it became warm."⁴⁵¹ At seven P.M. on the latter day, she "woke very cold," "shivered a little," "and her legs and feet became very cold." This diminution of temperature, gradually and hourly increased. It extended by six A.M. of the 16th, to the hands and arms, but was somewhat relieved by Friction, superadded to the other means. During the visit of Dr. Lewis, on Thursday afternoon (the 16th), he reports in the Sister's Diary:—"The right hand becomes cold when exposed, and gets warm

when covered."⁴⁵² At ten P.M. of this day, every calorific appliance the place afforded was tried, "but she could not get warm." Her little sister, about six years old, was put, quite naked, into the bed with her, but apparently without any good effect. *No allusion is ever afterwards made by any one of the witnesses, to Sarah Jacob's ever again becoming warm.*

The whole case, on this aspect alone, very aptly illustrates an opinion expressed by Dr. Carpenter:—"That there is adequate ground for considering death by *Starvation*, as really death by *Cold*."⁴⁵³

In detailing the grounds for this consideration, Dr. Carpenter writes:—

Our knowledge of the dependence of all the vital processes in warm-blooded animals upon the Heat of their bodies, and of the dependence of their calorifying power upon the due supply of material for the combustive process, has received some remarkable additions from the experiments of M. Chossat upon Starvation. He found that Birds, when totally deprived of food and drink, suffered a progressive, though slight, daily diminution of Temperature. This diminution was not so much shown by a fall of their maximum Heat, as by an increase in the diurnal variation, which he ascertained to occur even in the normal state. The average variation in the *inanitated* state was about 6° (instead of 1½°), gradually increasing as the animal became weaker; moreover, the gradual rise of Temperature, which should have taken place between midnight and noon, was retarded, whilst the fall subsequently to noon, commenced much earlier than in the healthy state; so that the *average* of the whole day, was lowered by about 4½°, between the *first* and the *penultimate* days of this condition. On the *last* day, the production of Heat diminished very rapidly, and the thermometer fell from hour to hour until Death supervened; the whole loss on that day being about 25° Fahr., making the *total* depression about 29½°. This depression appears, from the considerations to be presently stated, to be the *immediate* Cause of Death. . . .

That this is the real explanation of the fact, was shown by the results of a series of very remarkable experiments performed by M. Chossat, with the purpose of testing the correctness of this view. When inanitated animals, whose death seemed impending (death having actually taken place in several instances whilst the preliminary processes of weighing, the application of the thermometer, &c., were being performed), were subjected to artificial heat, they were almost uniformly restored from a state of Insensibility, and want of Muscular power, to a condition of Comparative Activity; their Temperature rose, their Muscular power returned, they flew about the room, and took food when it was presented to them; and if the artificial assistance was sufficiently prolonged, and they were not again subjected to the Starving process, most of them recovered. If they were left to themselves too early, however, the digestive process was

not performed, and they ultimately died. Up to the time when they began to take food, their weight continued to diminish; the secretions being renewed, under the influence of artificial heat, sometimes to a considerable amount. It was not until Digestion had actually taken place (which, owing to the weakened functional power, was commonly many hours subsequently to the ingestion of the food) that the animal regained any power of generating Heat; so that, if the external source of heat was withdrawn, the body at once cooled; and it was not until the quantity of food actually *digested* was sufficient to support the wants of the body, that its independent power of Calorification returned. It is to be remembered that, in such cases the resources of the body are on the point of being completely exhausted when the attempt at reanimation is made; consequently it has nothing whatever to fall back upon; and the leaving it to itself *at any time* until fresh resources have been provided for it, is consequently as certain a Cause of Death, as it would have been in the first instance."⁴⁵⁴

Mr. Davies, Surgeon, Llandyssil, was therefore so far correct in his theory, when in reply to the Vicar on the day preceding the girl's death, he said:—"That the Temperature of the Body was all right, and that the girl could not be in a dying state, as long as that was so."⁴⁵⁵

But one very important element of consideration, appears to have escaped the mind not only of Mr. Davies, but of all in attendance on the girl. These experiments of M. Chossat conclusively show why it was that,—despite the bottles of hot water, the flannels, the friction, and the best of all calorifacient remedies (as old as the time of King David himself) namely, that of putting a young naked human being in close contact with the cooling body,—Sarah Jacob "could not get warm!" Had the "artificial heat been sufficiently prolonged," and had Sarah Jacob "*not again been* (in effect) *subjected to the Starving process,*" the Welsh Fasting-Girl would doubtless, like "most" of M. Chossat's Birds, have ultimately "recovered!" No solid or liquid food, however gained access to her system; and Sarah Jacob was never "restored from a state of Insensibility, and want of Muscular power, to a condition of Comparative Activity."

The Pathological changes in her body, do not warrant us in asserting that Sarah Jacob's death could not have been the result of Cold. It is true, that in Death from Cold, as ordinarily understood, the vascular system of the Brain, and Thoracic Organs, is said to be more or less congested with Blood: the several cavities of the Heart being therefore in the condition previously described

with reference to Death from Apnœa.⁴⁵⁶ The *Cold* produces an inertia of the muscles of Respiration, resulting in a cessation of their action.

Dr. Carpenter, in his disquisition on Death,⁴⁵⁷ divides the causation of this necessary sequence of Vitality:—*Somatic* Death is the death of the body as a whole, produced either by “a general failure of the vital powers;” or by the extension “to the organism in general (in virtue of that intimate mutual dependence of one function upon another, which is characteristic of all the higher orders of living beings)” of “some local interruption produced by disease, or injury in the regular sequence of vital actions.” Death of a certain part of the body is *Molecular* Death, which results in Somatic Death, when the former involves an “interruption either in the nutritive operation of the Viscera, or in the sensorial functions of the Brain.” Somatic Death, or “the permanent and complete cessation of the circulating current,” Dr. Carpenter points out, “may result directly from the agency of *Cold*, which stagnates *all* the operations of the system.” He continues:—

Where the cooling is due to the agency of an extremely low external temperature, which acts first upon the superficial parts, there is reason to think that the congestion of the internal vessels thereby induced, occasions a torpid condition of the Nervous Centres, and that the cessation of the Circulation is immediately due to Asphyxia. But when the cooling is gradual, and the loss of heat is almost equally rapid throughout, it is obvious that the stagnation must be universal, and that no cessation of activity in any one part, is the occasion of the torpor in the functions of the remainder. It is in this manner that Death ordinarily results from Starvation, and not by the weakening of the Heart's action, as commonly supposed.

The post-mortem appearances in Sarah Jacob's body, demonstrated that the last day's condition of her Brain was not the result of Asphyxia; nor did her Heart show that it had stopped, solely because it was too weak to contract upon, and propel, its contents (*Asthenia*). Her Death was clearly therefore the immediate result of a gradual cooling of her body.

The “oxidation of certain components of the food, or of the tissues, is the fundamental source of Animal Heat.”⁴⁵⁸ Sarah Jacob “could not get warm,” primarily because her Blood was not replenished with the neces-

sary "combustive pabulum;" secondarily, because her Blood, so impoverished in quality and quantity, became but an ineffective agent as "the natural stimulus to the Heart's action;"⁴⁵⁹ and finally by reason of certain physical imperfections in the calorifying process, to be shortly dilated on. The Stagnation became universal; and after death, the Heart showed, in mixed proportions, the effects of Death by Anæmia, and of Death by Asthenia. Although totally deprived of all "combustive pabulum" from food, it has been previously noted that after death, a considerable store of Calorifacient material was found in the tissues of the Fasting-Girl's body. We have heretofore drawn attention to the fact of this unexhausted combustible material not being thoroughly utilized in Sarah Jacob's system, for the purpose of continuing her Animal Heat; and thus prolonging her life, until her Fat had completely disappeared.

The oxidation and disintegration of the Fat, and other tissues of the Body, during Inanition, must be followed by their solution in watery fluid,—either taken into the alimentary canal, and subsequently transuded through the Blood-vessels into the parenchyma of the tissues; or else in water formed within the Body itself,—before these metamorphosed materials can be taken up by the Absorbent System, for the purposes of Combustion and Nutrition.

The quantity of Water formed within the Body itself, in cases of Starvation, would speedily be got rid of by the Kidneys, Lungs, and Skin; and notwithstanding a possible addition thereto,—either by the Absorption through the two latter organs, of a certain amount of watery vapour from the atmosphere; or of water itself by the Skin during the daily process of ablution,—the supply necessary for the economy of Nature, could not be thus long maintained, without an ingestion of fluid through the alimentary canal. The absolute deprivation of Water would therefore obviously, in a definite time, so affect the physical quality of their contained fluid, that the Blood-vessels would be quickly brought into a condition incompatible with the laws of Osmosis;⁴⁶⁰ a "general stagnation" of the several processes of Nutrition would consequently result; all Absorption would thereupon of a certainty cease; a gradual cooling of the whole Body,

would necessarily follow this stoppage of the Calorific source; Animal Heat would not be produced; and Somatic Death would shortly close the scene. The addition of Water to the Circulating fluid, would facilitate the necessary Absorption of the surplus Fat and several tissues; and Life would be prolonged, until all combustible material had been completely exhausted for the sustentation of the temperature of the system.

As long as the physical forces necessary for the process of Absorption existed in Sarah Jacob's system, so long did Absorption of her surplus Fat go on. Sister Clinch deposed⁴⁶¹ that early on Saturday morning the girl's "eyes were rather sunk, and her nose rather pinched." At this early stage of the Inanition, these appearances, probably merely indicated that the Muscles of Expression were beginning to show the strain on the system, from the forty-eight hours' Starvation. But on the following Tuesday, the hollowness about the eyes and cheeks, is again alluded to by one of the other Nurses;⁴⁶² and her lips are said to be dry.⁴⁶³ On the Wednesday, Anne Jones⁴⁶⁴ noticed "her eyes sunk in, and also her nose was pinched." It cannot be doubted, that these symptoms, at this period, depended on the Absorption of the Fat, from the orbits, and about the nose; and possibly from the Absorption of certain of the fluids of the eyeball itself. The statement of Mr. James Thomas respecting the patchy distribution of the Fat in the Omentum, is also important evidence of previous Absorption.⁴⁶⁵ The excretion of urine, as late as up to Wednesday, December 15th, was also indicative of a previous expenditure of force, and waste.⁴⁶⁶ No scientific examination of this fluid having been at any time made, it is of course impossible to state accurately whether this secretion in the Fasting-Girl deviated, or not, from the normal standard.⁴⁶⁷ In the case of the prisoner previously quoted from Casper's work, "a little concentrated dark-coloured urine" was passed as late as the eighth day of almost absolute Starvation.

The mass of dry hardened Fæces found in Sarah Jacob's Colon, demonstrates the stress which Nature had been put to, in order to obtain watery fluid. We do not think it at all necessary to conceive that these dried Ex-

creta, were otherwise than the relics of some of the last meals consumed by the girl prior to the commencement of her Death-watch. The Absorbents of the alimentary canal would, under the circumstances in which this child was placed, very rapidly dispose of the fluidity of the contents of the Intestines. In the case of Mark Cornish,—to be hereafter recited, a similar expression of opinion was given before the Coroner, by the Medical Witness.

By one very important omission, we are, of course debarred from *directly* proving that the “Welsh Fasting-Girl” did in reality waste, during the eight days of her Absolute Inanition. Cognizant as we are of the locality of her residence, and of the difficulties of the approach thereto, we nevertheless aver that all obstacles to the introduction of the Balance, ought to have been surmounted. Half a century back, in the case of the Tutbury woman, Mr. Francis Fox suggested the propriety of having the bedstead, bedding, and the woman in it, placed on a machine, by which it could be ascertained whether she lost weight daily. This suggestion was adopted, and it resulted in discovering that, day by day, she regularly lost weight.⁴⁶⁸

On the sixth day of the watching of Sarah Jacob, a telegram⁴⁶⁹ announced:—“She is not in the least reduced in weight, and is as heavy as when the watching commenced.” In the absence of the Weighing-Machine, we put no value whatever on this assertion. If so important and truthful a contrivance was adopted half a century ago, it is very surprising that, in 1869, the great value of such a mechanism appears to have been completely ignored. Apart from its Scientific interest, what an impartial witness—what a powerful support—it would have proved to the medical examiners of the girl! Pointing to the evidence of daily diminishing weight, they would have been fortified in sooner remonstrating with the scepticism and stupidity of the parents; and in referring them to an irresistible proof that Nature urgently demanded more fuel for her work. The girl’s life might thus have been saved! Inasmuch as there is, *cæteris paribus*, a more rapid waste in the young, we may anticipate that the revelations of the Balance would have been more striking in the case of Sarah Jacob, than in

that of Ann Moore of Tutbury, near Rolleston, in Staffordshire, who was a woman of about middle age.⁴⁷⁰

By the method of Exclusion we have adopted, it is therefore abundantly apparent—from the negative, as well as from the positive, appearances after Death; and likewise from those elements of the condition of Sarah Jacob which we have commented on—that the “Welsh Fasting-Girl” died of Inanition. A closer analysis of her symptoms during those last eight days of her life, will be equally corroborative of this opinion.

In estimating the value of the several symptoms exhibited by Sarah Jacob during those last eight days, we must repeat “that the girl had a character for truth to support, and that she had the strongest of motives to induce the world to believe that good physical health was not inconsistent with two years’ total deprivation of food.” We have previously pointed out how, so far as her Cheerfulness, her General Conduct, and to a certain extent, her Personal Appearance, were concerned, she wonderfully succeeded for some days. But, without denying that certain of her individual symptoms were consistent with her form of Hysteria, it cannot be considered probable that this girl, having so strong a motive to the contrary, would have *voluntarily* presented, either in detail or in the aggregate, symptoms actually tallying with the signs of Exhaustion as laid down by Authors, and recognised as such by all practical men. Some of these several indicative symptoms, nevertheless, eventually and irresistibly made their appearance! So much the greater value therefore, is to be attached to such signs of Exhaustion, not only beyond the control of the patient, but supervening despite all motive, and doubtless persistent efforts, for their suppression!

On Thursday, Dec. 9th, Sarah Jacob was plump and appeared well fed; and, making due allowance for the constant interruptions of her father, her sleep during this first night was perfectly natural.

We have sufficiently commented on the antagonism of this fact, to the theory of any injurious effect from the presence of four strange Nurses.

The first note of alarm is sounded in very significant words by Sister Clinch.⁴⁷¹ Sarah Jacob slept after “a

quarter past eleven" on the night of Friday, Dec. 10th, till 2 A.M. of Saturday, the 11th. This sleep was a restless one! How important it was, to the motives of this girl, that her sleep should continue as natural as it heretofore had been! It was not, however so to be! This "*restlessness is characteristic of the sleep of animals that are undergoing the process of Starvation.*"⁴⁷² The complete Medical History of the recent Siege of Paris, has not yet been written, but sufficient has transpired in the communications of correspondents to the Medical Journals, to warrant us in asserting that, amongst the thousands of human beings who for weeks have been suffering partial Starvation, this inability to sleep, has been noticed in many.⁴⁷³

Keeping ever prominently in mind *the one great factor* in Sarah Jacob's case—viz., the absolute deprivation of all solid and liquid food,⁴⁷⁴ this early symptom, was indeed to have been recognised, as indicative of the necessity of at once commencing Food. From this early period of the ordeal, Sister Clinch, in fact dates the—to her perceptible—commencement of the girl's bad symptoms:—"She was weaker every day from Saturday."⁴⁷⁵ Although the girl continued cheerful, and kept up her reading and talking aloud, we find she could not, despite her evident strong motive to the contrary, prevent certain physical alterations in her expression and face becoming, even on the Saturday, perceptible to the observant eyes of a skilled Nurse. She "was a little flushed."⁴⁷⁶ "I did not think she was looking well: there was a change, her eyes were rather sunk, and her nose rather pinched." "I observed a change in the voice; it was weaker when she was reading aloud."⁴⁷⁷

Corroborative Medical evidence also thus early testifies to the correctness of the Nurse's observations. Mr. Daniel G. Rowlands reports, in addition to a varying colour in the girl's face, a rise of fourteen beats in her Heart's pulsation, in the space of forty-eight hours.⁴⁷⁸ The variability of the pulse in Hysteria, is universally admitted; but here we have a constant and steady augmentation of rapidity, from 86 beats per minute on Dec. 9th, to nearly double on that day week. How much more in accordance with the characteristics of Hysteria, or with

the probable motives of the girl, it would have been to have got her Pulse down again (even temporarily) to 86, as was its average beating, prior to the deprivation of her food! On the contrary, its frequency steadily increased, and with each such augmentation, Food certainly, and at length Stimulants, became imperatively demanded.

A slight evacuation of Fæces occurred, and a considerable amount of Urine was voided, on Saturday, Dec. 11th.

On Sunday, Dec. 12th, the girl still looked cheerful, appeared pleased, and smiled. She "read two chapters in Welsh and English aloud." Her face during the morning was, however flushed, and her eyes were unusually bright. At 4 P.M. Mr. Davies, Surgeon, Llandyssil, reports her to be not so cheerful as at his last visit; she had occasional headache, and her pulse *averaged* 112. Mr. Davies did not, however consider that the strength of the pulse, in the least, indicated physical prostration; or that any danger was to be apprehended from this increase of its frequency. Having due regard to all the antecedents of the case, especially the one great factor alluded to, we cannot, however but express the opinion that there was sufficient evidence even on the Sunday of increasing Exhaustion; and of the necessity of administering Food and probably Stimulants. During Sunday night she passed a little more than a pint of Urine.

On Monday, the 13th, she continued cheerful, and amused herself more or less with reading. Sister Clinch did not, however, think she looked so well. "She appeared weaker,"⁴⁷⁹ "her eyes were sunk, and her cheeks rather flushed."⁴⁸⁰ One of the other Nurses (Anne Jones), for the first time, noticed on this day that the girl was getting worse. During the evening of this day, she passed a large quantity of Urine; and the water escaped from the hot-water bottle. Although it was necessary to change her to another dry bed, she did not appear so much fatigued as the Sister-Nurse expected she would have been.⁴⁸¹ During this changing, her father, who was present, observed her closing her eyes, and remarked that she was going into a "fit." The tact of the Sister-Nurse quietly dispelled this illusion.

No medical man visited the girl on Monday, Dec. 13th.

Sarah Jacob had by this time, absolutely fasted three whole days and a half, without complaining of hunger or thirst. Inasmuch as on the following day an event happened, to the occurrence of which some importance has been attributed, in reference to the Causation of her subsequent Symptoms, it will therefore now be as well to consider whether her already described condition, is at all consistent with or the reverse of what has been observed by others at this early period, in allied instances of Acute Starvation.

In the few analogous cases reported, the account of the daily symptoms, *ab initio*, is even more meagre than in the foregoing history of the Fasting-Girl. "After he had already for five times four-and-twenty hours suffered nothing to cross his lips," Casper⁴⁸² found his healthy prisoner, aged thirty-six—

Lying on the straw mattress. He appeared pale, yet not much different from those who have been in confinement as long as he; his features were, however, somewhat collapsed, his eye was dull, his bodily temperature perfectly normal, his tongue was covered with a white mucous coating, and in speaking, there was a distinct clacking of the tough mucus in the mouth to be heard. The tone of his voice was not hollow, and no bad smell was perceptible coming from his mouth; his gums were pale, his respiration normal, his pulse 88, regular, soft but full; his belly was fallen in, but much intestinal flatus was to be felt on pressure. His brain was quite unaffected, and he was free from any optical deceptions, but he was occasionally troubled with singing in his ears. He stated that he had slept well and much, and it was verified that he had had no fecal evacuation since the [first day of the Fasting]. He complained neither of hunger *nor of thirst* (though this is usually ascribed to such cases);^{482*} he was stated to have made but little urine, &c. &c. . . . He experienced hunger during the first three days.

The "thin, spare man, in fair health," aged fifty-eight, quoted by Mr. Lingen of Hereford, as determinedly undergoing Absolute Starvation from Sunday morning, August 20th, 1854—"Never gave way to the last—spite of the cravings of Nature, the entreaties day after day of his relatives," of his medical attendant, "and of his devoted clergyman." This "Landlord of the 'Ship,' Hereford," "was up betimes as usual (the next day) signifying his orders, and overlooking the brewing with his usual care. The same occurred on the morrow (Tuesday); but he now began to be weak, and obliged to resort to his arm-chair by the fire. He was up,

dressed, and in his business on Wednesday—I think on the Thursday and Friday also.⁴⁸³

In the case of Guillaume Granet, a prisoner at Toulouse, who resorted to Starvation to avoid punishment, for the first seven days the symptoms were not very remarkable; his Face was flushed, his Breath foul, and his Pulse small and feeble.⁴⁸⁴

In all the other recorded cases of Acute Starvation there has been more or less access to Water; consequently the early symptoms are not so strictly comparable with the condition of Sarah Jacob.

In the case of a man, “aged sixty-five, of a spare habit of body, and uncommonly vigorous for his time of life,” who for twenty-three days was shut up in a coal-mine without food, Dr. Sloan reports⁴⁸⁵ :—

He stated that for the first two days, according to his calculation, Hunger was his most urgent symptom; the Tobacco which he chewed relieved this sensation. . . . Hunger now passed off, and he began to suffer from severe Thirst; this, a collection of Water strongly impregnated with Iron, afforded him the means of allaying. For what he supposed the first ten days, he could walk about. . . . He slept but little, and never soundly, never entirely losing the consciousness of his situation. His bowels acted only once when in the pit, but he made water freely, . . . his Urine never becoming acid.

In the cases of eight men, and one boy, shut up in a coal-mine for eight days, the only support within their reach being a little water which constantly dropped from the roof, Mr. Thornhill reports⁴⁸⁶ :—

No complaint of Hunger fell from the lips of any except the boy, who was heard to cry several times; but they were all troubled with a sense of Sickness, and with excessive Thirst. Taylor (one of the men, aged forty-five) states, that he made water freely and regularly, though his Bowels were not acted upon at all during his confinement; but that some of the others had one or more dejections. . . . During the whole period, Taylor slept but once, though the others were sleeping and snoring nearly all the latter part of the time. They were all troubled with Ocular Delusions, which evidently arose from their physical debility, and want of sustenance.

In the cases of two male and one female prisoner at Millbank, who for ten days completely abstained from Food, but had free access to Water, Dr. Guy remarks⁴⁸⁷ that there were no bad symptoms. “The prisoners were weakened, but by no means exhausted.”

Reasoning, therefore, from analogy of the foregoing cases, and having due regard to the Age and Sex of

Sarah Jacob, and to the peculiar form of Neurosis from which she was suffering, it would, notwithstanding her continued Cheerfulness and General Demeanour, display indeed but little confidence in the teachings of Scientific Medicine, to assert that the superadded symptoms since the afternoon of Dec. 9th, were any other than the immediate results of Physical Prostration. Her restless sleep, her sometimes pale and then flushed face, her pinched appearance of countenance, her constant and daily augmentation of pulse, owned in our opinion but one proper Causation—the Absolute Deprivation of all Solid and Liquid Food for the space of three and a half days. Nature was beginning to assert her power over a Will morbidly or otherwise perverted!

On the morning of Tuesday, Dec. 14th, Sister Clinca found her reading at 6 A.M., and tells us:—“Her voice, I observed, was weaker than on Saturday, and I thought she was not so well from other signs.”⁴⁸⁸ “She was paler than on the previous day.”⁴⁸⁹

Between 7 and 8 A.M. the water-bottle fell through the sacking of the bed, and broke. This accident startled and frightened the girl, and produced a true Fainting-Fit (Syncope), from which she speedily recovered, and laughed heartily and naturally. This was the only “fit” the Sister-Nurse noticed during the whole of her visit to Llethernoyadd-ucha. It was evidently of a very different character to the so-called “fits” Sarah Jacob was said to be almost daily afflicted with. Its cause was evident; and occurring as it did whilst the girl was in the recumbent posture, it obviously indicated increasing general weakness, and diminution in the contractile power, of the Heart.

About an hour and a half after this accident, the Sister-Nurse observed that “her voice was not so strong; her countenance much flushed; her lips were dry.”

At a quarter to ten, A.M., Dr. Corsellis found the girl recovered from the Fainting-Fit; and that her Pulse was 112. The Vicar being present, observed something peculiar about the appearance of the girl's eyes; and that she looked worse, pale, and weaker.⁴⁹⁰ Neither at noon, nor again in the afternoon, did Mr. Davies think there was any immediate danger.

At his second visit, Mr. Davies told the father, that the girl was weaker. Nurse Attrick confirms this opinion; and speaks of the eyes being sunk.⁴⁹¹

Despite her characteristic (!)⁴⁹² variations in Pulse and appearance, which on this day Mr. Davies reports, there is no evidence whatever that the Pulse ever decreased to 86. On the contrary, at about 2 P.M., Mr. Hughes, of Carmarthen, makes it 144 per minute; and finds the left arm to be colder than the right hand. Mr. Hughes did not like the speed of the Pulse,⁴⁹³ but judging the girl to be Hysterical, he did not, in the absence of any other investigation (which was not allowed him), feel warranted (he stated in the witness-box) in drawing much inference from this one symptom.

What we have styled "the one great factor" in this case, deserved certainly from a skilled examiner quite as much consideration as the mere "judging a girl to be Hysterical!" We cannot forbear expressing our opinion that the known fact of the girl having absolutely starved for four times twenty-four hours, should indeed have "counted for very much" in estimating the indications derivable from 144 beats of the Heart per minute. The more especially as, making every allowance for the variability of the Pulse in Hysteria, it does not appear that the difference between the counting of two observers—Mr. Rowlands and Mr. Hughes—was on this afternoon more than four beats.

"No sensible medical man would express a positive opinion of the condition of a patient from merely once feeling the Pulse."⁴⁹⁴ A persistent acceleration of the Pulse from 86 to 144 in the space of four days; and on the fourth day with a variation limited only to four beats, should, however,—giving due weight to all the antecedents, or even to the one main factor only in the case,—have warned a skilful observer that some other agent than Hysteria, was influencing the rapidity of the Heart's action.

We have it on the authority of Dr. Corsellis, that the girl *completely* recovered from her Fright and Fit in the morning, with two hours afterwards, a pulse of 112; and therefore we do not hesitate to affirm that the rise in the

pulse, of thirty beats within about four more hours, is not solely and exclusively attributable to the Shock received between 7 and 8 A.M. Possibly and very probably, however, this unlooked-for casualty more rapidly developed the effect and result of the pre-existing exhaustive process.

That the presence of the four Nurses at all contributed to this persistent acceleration, we have, we believe, sufficiently and definitely combated. In so far as the withdrawal of the Nurses on the 14th might have led, somehow or other, to the obtainment of Food, to that extent their departure might have materially conduced to a *diminution* in the rate of the Pulse. But unless Food and Stimulants had been then administered, the *mere removal* of the Watchers would never have reduced the Pulse of Tuesday, the 14th, to what it was on Thursday previous, the 9th! As with M. Chossat's Birds, the recovery of Sarah Jacob would have been solely dependent on whether or not she was (in effect) "again subjected to the Starving process."⁴⁹⁵

That the decided change in the girl's condition recorded on this day, was not a sudden alteration, the result of the Shock in the morning, is conclusively proved by the significant remark of Sister Clinch, when questioned before the Magistrates about the girl's appearance at 10 P.M.:—"I could see a gradual change in her, but did not put it down in my Diary. It was so gradual a change, that I did not enter it."⁴⁹⁶

This observation also disposes of the bare possibility of her symptoms since the commencement of the watch, being, in their entirety, of Hysterical origin. Had such been the case, the Sister-Nurse would more likely have noticed a daily variation in the girl's condition, than a gradual and progressive deterioration.

The sunken eyes and pinched nose now noticed by more than one of the Nurses, were evidently the production of physical causes quite beyond the control of the Fasting-Girl. Neither perverted Will, nor strong Motive, could arrest the Absorption either of Fat from and about the orbits, or of the various fluids of the eyeball itself.

For nearly twenty-four hours she had passed no

Urine. A small quantity was voided after the departure of the medical men.

Another almost constant symptom of Fatigue or physical Exhaustion was noticed this night. Yawning came on; and for the first time, the girl opened wide her mouth. Her sleep was again restless. *She complained of Cold!* We have already sufficiently commented on this very important symptom of Inanition, as proved by the direct experiments of M. Chossat. In the letter of the Medical Correspondent from Paris (previously alluded to), this result of the want of sufficient fuel for Nature's furnace, is thus markedly spoken of:—"Men complain of requiring a larger quantity of clothing than usual."^{496*}

On Tuesday, Dec. 14th, Sister Clinch first perceived a strange Smell—a peculiar Smell—about the bed. She says—"It was not like the usual Smell of Death, and I cannot describe what it was like."

It was not Urine, nor from the feathers of the new bed, for—"After that bed was changed, I still perceived the Smell."⁴⁹⁷

The Sister-Nurse did not mention this Smell either at the Committee Meeting after the child's death, or at the Coroner's Inquest. She appears to have spoken of it before the Magistrates, after one of the medical men at Guy's Hospital had said something to her about it, and told her to mention it. She did not enter the fact of the Smell in her Diary; nor did she mention it to the medical men, because (as she doubtless quite correctly states) "it was always present. I did not, at first, find where it came from, nor did Jones (her co-watcher). I was afterwards told by the other Nurses."⁴⁹⁷

This peculiar Fætor exhaled from the body, is dependent on the fact of there being, in cases of Starvation, a remarkable tendency to putrescence of the matters excreted by the Skin and Lungs. The deprivation of all new materials to the System "appears to check the elimination and removal of those which have become effete;"⁴⁹⁸ and the solids and liquids thus thrown off, but retained, become early subject to those changes, which are usually the result of post-mortem decomposition.

Dr. Lewis, of Carmarthen, visited the girl on Wednes-

day, and found "the Voice a little more feeble, Pulse 120, variable, sometimes more frequent. The right Hand at first felt cold; but after being covered with a shawl, it became quite warm. The Face was not so flushed as on the 9th instant; still there was a dusky redness of the Cheeks and Nose. . . . She stated that she felt pretty well; she had no pain. . . . She conversed pleasantly."⁴⁹⁹ With the exception of the quick pulse, Dr. Lewis did not consider there was any "alarming symptom about the girl at 3 P.M. on this sixth day of watching."

At 7 P.M. the girl went to sleep, but became restless, and awoke very cold, and shivered a little. Despite the remedies used, the restlessness and diminution of temperature progressively increased. Her perverted Will was evidently becoming overpowered! She began to forget the part she had to keep up! "She moved her left arm, throwing it over her head!"

The child's Breath now became offensive. For the last time, Urine was this night found in her bed!

Having due regard to all the antecedents of the case, and keeping the one great factor constantly in mind, we regard the condition of the girl on this Wednesday night, as one of extreme danger!

By 6 A.M. of Thursday the 15th, all the symptoms of Exhaustion had seriously increased, and one of the Nurses⁵⁰⁰ considered that the girl was "sinking." She was very restless and cold; her lips were very dry, and her mouth seemed parched; she was very pale and anxious-looking, "in the technical sense of anxiety."⁵⁰¹ Her eyes were sunk, her nose was pinched, and her cheek-bones were more prominent. The peculiar Smell about the bed, and Breath, was so bad as to make the Sister-Nurse "feel quite ill." Despite her condition, the girl was reading between 11 and 12 A.M., "but did not seem to care for it, as she did before."

Alarm was now evidently felt, and was expressed by the Nurses to Mr. Davies the Surgeon. This gentleman finds the "Pulse excessively variable;" and, whilst endeavouring to tranquillize the Nurses, he prudently takes certain measures, to effect either the sending away of the Nurses, or the allowing them to administer food to the

child. It is unnecessary to recapitulate how, through the perverseness of the parents, these measures, backed up though they were by the Vicar and the Uncle, most sadly came to nought. Most sadly,—as we have it on the sworn authority of Mr. Davies himself that Restoratives or Stimulants would on this Thursday have saved the child!

Between 1 and 2 P.M. there was evidently transient Delirium, and the Welsh Nurse could not understand whether the girl was speaking English or Welsh. She was not able to read.

About 4 P.M. Dr. Lewis and Mr. Hughes, summoned by Mr. Davies from Carmarthen, met this last-named gentleman in consultation. Sarah Jacob was quite collected, and sensible, at this time. Dr. Lewis made the Pulse 120, but admits it was so variable in strength, he could not count it accurately.⁵⁰² Mr. Hughes made it 160, and candidly states that the speed of the Pulse frightened him.⁵⁰³ Neither of these gentlemen appears to have considered that, apart from the excessive rate of the Pulse, there were any other symptoms of an alarming character on this afternoon, presented by the girl. Dr. Lewis was evidently more sanguine than was Mr. Hughes. They, however determined to speak to the father. By Mr. Hughes's desire, Dr. Lewis told the father that the child was apparently weaker, and that Mr. Hughes recommended that the watch should be put an end to.⁵⁰³ Unfortunately this was not acceded to. In consequence of what Mr. Hughes saw, and what he was not permitted to see,⁵⁰³ he resigned that evening his membership of the Committee.

Whether owing to a temporary stimulation produced by the odour of the eau-de-Cologne; or whether in consequence of some Moral influence revivifying the girl at the sight, and by the presence of those she liked best, certain it is that Sarah Jacob seemed to rally when interrogated by some of her medical attendants.

This rally on the day before her death, continued till about 9 P.M. She seemed very comfortable, and conversed with the Nurses. It was not, however, of much longer duration. At 10 P.M. Sister Clinch found a marked change. The little girl was much weaker, and

was sinking. She was perfectly sensible, but very restless and very cold. Her Breath was very offensive. She grated her teeth this last night.⁵⁰⁴ About midnight the girl became delirious; at times she was unable to speak. All possible means were fruitlessly used during the night to make the body warm. The restlessness continued and became excessive.

At 6 A.M. on Friday 17th she was sensible but gradually sinking. To Attrick and Palmer she appeared much worse, much weaker, rather pale, and her eyes seemed sunk. At 7 A.M. she was restless, but quieter than during the night. Between 8 and 9 A.M. Mr. Davies found her sinking fast, and told the parents so. The Nurse⁵⁰⁵ says:—"I think she was sensible." At 10 A.M., however, she was insensible.⁵⁰⁶ The Vicar soon after found her speechless, and he could get no answer from her.⁵⁰⁷

During the last hour of her life, Sarah Jacob did not speak. "She was too weak and too far gone. She was not sensible. She took no notice of any one. She appeared in a stupor, like a person dying."⁵⁰⁸ She died a few minutes past 3 P.M.

M. Chossat endeavoured "to ascertain the amount of variation (of Heat generated in the animal) which might take place within the limits of health. From a considerable number of observations, M. Chossat concludes that the temperature of the animal at noon and midnight pretty nearly represents the maximum and minimum, and thus affords the means of readily determining the extreme variation."

In his experiments on Inanitated animals, he found "on the *last* day, the production of Heat diminished very rapidly; and the thermometer fell from hour to hour until Death supervened; the whole loss being, on the average of all the experiments, about 14° per cent., or about forty-seven times as much as on any previous day."

It further appeared that the time of Death usually corresponded with that of the diurnal depression; for out of fifty-two animals experimented on, thirty-six died between noon and midnight, which is the period of natural diminution, and only sixteen between midnight and noon, at which period the temperature is naturally

ascending. . . . M. Chossat regards the last depression as merely a sort of exaggeration of the preceding ones, from which the animal has not power to recover.⁵⁰⁹

The inaniated Sarah Jacob actually died at that period of the day corresponding with that of the diurnal depression of the Animal Heat.

It remains to be seen whether, in any other particular, the symptoms of Sarah Jacob from Tuesday, Dec. 14th, corresponded with those which have been observed in authenticated analogous cases of Acute Starvation.

The fit of Syncope on that very Tuesday was evidently the result of Nervous Shock. We consider that we have apportioned to it its due weight in the subsequent development of the symptoms. Apart from this transitory Fainting-Fit, we adhere to our previous contention, that the symptoms presented by the Fasting-Girl, during her last eight days of life, did not exclusively coincide with the condition generally recognised as the depressing effect of a Shock to the Nervous System. We believe, on the contrary, that the history of Sarah Jacob from December 9th to her Death, becomes day by day more in accordance with the effects of Total Abstinence, as recorded by others either from skilled observation or direct experiment.

On the sixth day of his Absolute Starvation, the healthy prisoner aged thirty-six, quoted by Casper, was no worse than we have previously stated him to have been on the fifth day of his Fasting. "The house-surgeon had forced him to take a few drops of *spiritus æthereus*." We have the assurance of the Nurses that Sarah Jacob did not suck the sheet, or the handkerchief, on which was daily sprinkled the eau-de-Cologne. Any benefit she may have derived therefrom, must therefore have been obtained only from the effect of the Stimulus through Inhalation.

On the seventh day, Casper's prisoner became pale and evidently thinner. He had had no evacuation from the bowels. He could not read the Bible long on account of his failing sight.

The Singing in his Ears, is also somewhat more frequent. His Tongue is purplish-red in the middle, with its edges somewhat dry, and the mucus covering it, is still tougher than before, and produces still more clacking than formerly. An ill Smell is also now perceived to come from his mouth. The doughy feel of his Belly recalled to my memory that of some Cholera patient. His Skin is slightly moist,

the Perspiration warm and normal; for twenty-four hours he has passed no Urine; he has not yet had any Fæcal Evacuation; his Pulse is as formerly; his Mental Faculties are undisturbed.

On the eighth day, he passed a little concentrated dark-coloured Urine, but had to be carried to the night-stool. "His Voice has now assumed the hollow sound, so commonly observed in Abdominal Disease. The Pulse is to-day quickened to 96; the Tongue moister, otherwise his state is as yesterday." In the absence of every alarming symptom Casper thought he might live eight days longer. On the ninth day he still did not feel—

Any Hunger, but only a necessity to moisten his dry and clammy Mouth, which he has done since yesterday morning with pure cold water, without swallowing any. His Belly seems very hollow. He has not the slightest call to stool, and has had no feeling of Nausea, Choking, Vomiting, or Pain. His Head, however, "feels stupid," and very heavy when he attempts to raise it. The Smell from his Mouth is now more distinct.

On the tenth day, his—

Pulse was only 76, and very feeble. Early in the morning he had complained of Double Vision, and from time to time of Spasms of the Stomach, which were relieved by strong pressure. Yesterday afternoon and this morning early, he had, from absolute necessity, now and then taken a little sugar and water, and used in all about six ounces. . . . Everything to-day smells of milk, and in the night between this day and the next, Hunger suddenly seized and overpowered him, and he ate a little of yesterday's allowance of bread, which still lay near his bed.⁵¹⁰

This man then took to his proper food, and ultimately quite recovered.

Having due regard to the difference in Sex, Age, Vigour, and collateral circumstances, the two cases of Sarah Jacob, and Casper's prisoner, are fairly comparable. Any divergence moreover considerably diminishes, when we remember that in the former, there was complete reticence or negation respecting any and every Subjective Sensation,^{510*} as well as a more or less masking of the effects on the system of Total Abstinence; whilst the latter patient had neither the desire, nor a motive, to conceal his feelings or symptoms. In both, we get Pallor of the Face; more or less Collapse of the Features; to a certain extent, thinning of the Body; dryness of the Mouth, and alteration in the Voice; suspension of Fæcal Evacu-

ation, but continued secretion from the Kidneys up to the sixth or seventh day. In one, no feeling of Hunger after the third day, and no complaint of Thirst till the ninth day; in the other, no *complaint* of either Hunger or Thirst throughout. An ill Smell appears about the fifth or sixth day in the girl, and not till the seventh in the man. In both, the Mental Faculties remain undisturbed till quite the end of the ordeal—when the girl becomes Delirious, and the man's Head feels stupid, and he has Double Vision. On the eighth day, the strong healthy man, of thirty-six, is so weak that he is obliged to be carried to the night-stool; on the same day of the Starvation, the delicate Hysterical girl, of thirteen, is lifted into her shell.⁶¹¹ Numerically considered, the Pulse in each, appears at first sight to be differently affected. This, however, is more apparent than real. The rate of the Pulse is influenced, in addition to other causes, both by Age and Sex. We are not informed of the average Pulse at starting, of Casper's prisoner, but assuming that it was from 70–75—as it ordinarily is at that age—we get on the fifth day of Absolute Starvation, a rise of from 13 or 18 beats per minute, which on the eighth day is augmented by eight more, or in all about 21 or 26 beats over and above its natural rate. On the second day of the fasting, Sarah Jacob's Pulse had increased 14 beats; on the third 26 beats; on the fifth 54 beats; and on the seventh day 74 beats in rapidity. Sex and Temperament may have something to do with this dissimilarity. Whilst adhering to our opinion that the girl's Death was not attributable to Nervous Shock, we nevertheless do not, of course, disregard the effect of her undoubted state of Mental Excitement, and her Hysterical Diathesis on the rapidity of the contractions of her Heart.

Chossat proved that the Duration of Life in the young, when deprived of Food, was far less than in the adult animal. The tolerance of the process, would *pro tanto* be less, likewise: the effects also proportionately more rapid. These facts, as well as all the other surroundings of the case, must be borne well in mind, when comparing the influence of Starvation on the Pulse of Sarah Jacob, and of Casper's prisoner. The circumstance of the Pulse of the latter actually receding to 76 beats on the tenth day,

though remarkable, is, we believe, to be accounted for. We have previously shown how that the Absolute Deprivation of solid and *liquid* food, would at a given time interfere with the function of the Absorbent System, by rendering Absorption a physical impossibility. As this period of General Stagnation approaches, the contractions of the Heart appear to become more rapid and feeble. It is therefore quite within Physiological reasoning, to assume that any, even temporary, arrest or retardation of this Systemic Stoppage, would quickly result in a more or less resumption of Absorption, and consequent diminution in the rapidity of the Pulse. On the evening of the ninth and in the early morning of the tenth day, Casper's prisoner had, from absolute necessity, taken in all about six ounces of sugar and water. Not only would this preservative fluid, by immediate Absorption from the Alimentary Canal, supply a direct Calorificent Agent; but it is just possible that the slightly renovated Systemic Blood, would also be enabled to better perform its part in the necessary Osmosis,—and the resultant relief to the whole economy, effected by the consequent arrest of the threatened Stagnation, would obviously be followed by a slower pulsation of the Central Organ.⁵¹²

Of Dr. Sloan's patient,⁵¹³ who, after twenty-three days' imprisonment in a coal-pit—with access to water the first ten days only—was brought out alive, but subsequently died, it is recorded that his Emaciation was extreme; but his Intellect was perfectly sound. He never vomited or had Nausea; his Voice was as a whisper; Respiration was easy; Tongue clean, moist at the edges, dry in the centre. He complained of uneasiness, increased by pressure, in the region of the Stomach. His Pulse, on first coming out of the pit on a Saturday, was 60, moderately firm; it rose to 70, and became feeble on the following Tuesday, when he died. In commenting on this case, Dr. Sloan observes:—"An atmosphere slightly impure, by lowering the Vital Powers, might tend to prolong Life under privation of food."

The inhalation of this, though but slightly, carbonized atmosphere, would also tend to the production of slowness of the Pulse, which is one of the ordinary symptoms of poisoning by Carbonic Acid gas.⁵¹⁴

Mr. Lingen's patient, on the sixth day of Absolute Starvation, was from weakness compelled—

To remain in bed, which he did till his Death, on the afternoon of . . . the tenth day. Towards his end, he seemed to be Delirious; but as he was Speechless, it was difficult to appreciate the fact. His Pulse increased in frequency as he became feebler; he appeared thirsty; and his Animal Heat was sustained with difficulty.⁵¹⁵

His "Emaciation was not excessive by any means."⁵¹⁶ This case, in the whole of its details, approximates very much in similarity to the progressive symptoms of Sarah Jacob. Unfortunately Mr. Lingen was not permitted an Autopsy of the body.

Speaking of the eight men and a boy, shut up for eight days in a coal-pit, Mr. Thornhill further reports:⁵¹⁷—"After the first two or three days, they suffered much from cold, and having no clothing except their breeches, shoes, and stockings, they sat in a circle close to each other, in order to keep up Animal Heat. Taylor was so benumbed in his lower extremities, that at length he could not raise himself up without assistance; the rest also complained of numbness, but were able to move about at pleasure. . . . Their weakness was excessive." They all ultimately recovered.

A "miraculous preservation at sea," is detailed in *The Times*, Feb. 6th, 1866, of Captain Casey, Commander of the shipwrecked "*Jane Lowden*," timber vessel, who after being twenty-eight days wholly without provisions, was picked up alive. His crew of seventeen men "endured the pangs of Hunger and Thirst; . . . some of the men slaked their maddening thirst with sea-water, which only increased their torment, and brought on Delirium. Two became violent, were strapped down, and expired." . . . One, a lad of nineteen, died on the twelfth day in a quiet Delirium, "calling repeatedly on his mother to give him a drink, and to shut the door to keep out the cold." . . . "All died apparently in their sleep." The Captain sustained his life "by drinking as much rain as he could collect, by tying his cravat round the mast, and, when it became drenched, sucking it. The tar thus absorbed with the rain, he justly thinks helped to preserve him from utter Exhaustion. The fact too of his being better clothed than his crew, he thinks, may also account,

humanly speaking, for his marvellous preservation. He wore three woollen shirts, two pairs of stockings, two pairs of trousers, and sea-boots, three coats, one of which was waterproof, a cap, and waterproof hat. . . .

On the 28th night, he laid himself flat on the maintop, as he expressed it, resigning himself to his doom, whatever it might be, perfectly conscious of his critical position, yet not losing all hope, or his Reason, though his Brain became so weak that he "had Illusions of Hearing. . . . The following morning . . . Captain Casey, having now for the first time sighted the (rescuing) ship, raised his feeble arm to display his colours." When rescued, his Face was pale and thin, his Feet swollen. He progressed favourably from his weakened state, "his strength coming back as slowly as it left him during his twenty-eight days of exposure and privation."

In every one of these authentic cases of Acute Starvation, it appears that amidst all the ruinous effects therefrom, the Nervous System retains as nearly as possible its natural state, so long as the means of Nutrition are in any way supplied to it.

It is also to be remarked, that wherever the Renal Secretion is attended to, it is spoken of as continuing up to a prolonged period of the process of Inanition. This is confirmatory of the results of M. Chossat's experiments—that there is comparatively small diminution in the weight of the (Lungs and) Kidneys. The functional activity of these excreting organs, seems in fact to diminish less than that of most other parts.

Dr. Lewis, in a letter to Rev. Wm. Thomas, on Dec. 15th, 1869, attributed the quantity of Urine daily excreted by Sarah Jacob, "to the watery vapour suspended in the atmosphere."⁵¹⁸ Sister Clinch was also of opinion that the girl absorbed the humidity of the air:—"I was surprised she did not ask for water. The room was so damp, that I thought she might absorb the moisture from the atmosphere."⁵¹⁹

Whilst the experiments of M. Chossat on pigeons, turtle-doves, and other animals, must not be regarded as having complete applicability to the advancement of Human Physiology, it is nevertheless interesting, as a mere matter of comparison, to detail the general symp-

toms he observed in the creatures he experimented upon:—

In general, the animals remain calm during the first half or two-thirds of the period; but they then become more or less agitated, and this state continues for as long as the Temperature remains elevated. On the last day of life, however, this Restlessness ceases, and gives place to a state of Stupor. The animal, when set at liberty, sometimes looks around with astonishment, without attempting to fly, sometimes closes his eyes, as if in a state of sleep. Gradually the extremities become cold and the limbs so weak as no longer to be able to sustain the animal in the standing posture; it falls over on one side, and remains in any position in which it may be placed, without attempting to move. The Respiration becomes slower and slower; the general weakness increases, and the insensibility becomes more profound; the Pupil dilates, and Life becomes extinct, sometimes in a calm and tranquil manner, sometimes after Convulsive actions producing Opisthotonic rigidity of the body⁵²⁰

We have considered the case of Sarah Jacob to be a typical one of *Acute Starvation*—*i.e.*, where, for a definite period, in a previously sufficiently fed person, there is a sudden, “complete, and total withdrawal of every article of nourishment.”⁵²¹ *Chronic Starvation*, on the other hand, is such as we get from certain Diseases, and from Famine; and implies an *insufficient* supply of food up even to the very Death,—which may be weeks or months before its actual occurrence.

Two cases of alleged death from Starvation have been recorded by Dr. J. Williams of Sudbury.⁵²² A mother, aged seventy, and her daughter, thirty-four, had for four years been dependent on the charity of their friends, and what they could get by begging. For a period of seven months, these two people, and a man, lived on the produce of 2*l.* 13*s.* During this time, they were frequently two days in succession without food, and they all three suffered much from Faintness and Dizziness. “On Sunday, February 21st, 1869, after fasting all Saturday, they all three dined off a suet pudding, and on the following day the old woman ate what was left, the man and the young woman having none. On Tuesday, February 23rd, the mother, who had been ailing more than usual for a few days previously, died. On Wednesday, the 24th, the daughter and the man, having had nothing since Sunday, ate two quarts of soup, the woman having the larger share of it.” This was the last food consumed. The man left on the following

Friday. The evidence proved that the woman was probably alive on March 15th. She was heard to speak on the 11th and 12th of March in a feeble voice. Her dead body was found on March 16th. When the man left, there was not a particle of food in the house, and it does not appear that the woman had anything to eat after February 24th. "There was a possibility of her having Water, but certainly no other liquid."⁵²³ The bodies of both mother and daughter were very emaciated, but presented very little smell of putrefaction. The autopsy revealed that the mother had immediately died from Pneumonia accelerated by want of proper nourishment, and exposure to Cold; and the daughter from Actual Starvation. In both, the muscular structure of the Heart was flabby. In the daughter's body:—"The Sigmoid Flexure of the Large Intestine contained hardened Fæces. The whole mass of the Intestines were very thin and transparent and seemed contracted longitudinally, but their transverse diameter was unaltered."⁵²⁴

The Irish Famine in 1847, afforded Dr. Daniel Donovan of Skibbereen, Co. Cork, abundant opportunities of witnessing such instances of what he calls Famine Cachexia, or Lingering Starvation. In his paper⁵²⁵ on the subject he observes:—"Even the majority of those who perished of Starvation, were able to provide some Food which preserved Life until exposure to Cold, or some other accidental cause, extinguished the faint spark." Amongst the symptoms he noticed an acute pain of Hunger for twenty-four hours, which then subsided, and was succeeded by a feeling of weakness and sinking, experienced principally in the Epigastrium, accompanied with insatiable Thirst, for cold water particularly, and a distressing feeling of coldness over the entire surface of the body. In a short time the Face and Limbs became frightfully emaciated; the Eyes acquired a most peculiar stare, and the Skin emitted a fœtid exhalation,—the surface of the body being covered with a brownish filthy-looking coating, almost as indelible as varnish. The sufferer tottered in walking like a drunken man; his voice was weak, like that of a person affected with Cholera; he whined like a child, and burst into tears on the slightest occasion. The prostration of the Mental

Faculties, kept pace with the general wreck of bodily power; in many, there was a state of Imbecility, in some almost complete Idiocy, but in none was there either Delirium or Mania.

The effects, however, were different on the young and infant population. "The same cause that paralysed the faculties of the adult, served to sharpen the intellect of the child."

After death, Dr. Donovan generally found the Heart to be pale, soft, and flabby. In some of the cases which he inspected, Dr. Donovan remarked a peculiarly thin condition of the small Intestines, which were attenuated to transparency; and he was led to regard this phenomenon as the strongest proof of Starvation.

Dr. P. Martyn, who has seen much suffering, and death, from Starvation, is of opinion that the following is the condition of the Intestines diagnostic of Starvation:—"They are found not only contracted, but shrunken and diminished in size, shortened in length as well as in calibre, and like a mere cord, as if the canal was obliterated. . . . The Intestines, in fact, like other parts or organs of the body, dwindle away for want of exercise and use. . . . This condition of the Bowels, after their use has ceased, and that of the Fœtus before it has begun, present a resemblance that is striking and remarkable."⁵²⁶

Inasmuch, however, as one or other of these phenomena may be found in cases fatal from long-continued wasting Diseases, or after Nutrition has for a long previous period been sustained per enemata, we can scarcely regard either of these conditions as, *per se*, characteristic of the Cause of Death: Time, of course, would be an obvious necessity for their production in any Case, and from any Cause. Casper observes:—"We have to determine in every individual case, not that Death from Starvation *must have*, but that it *has* occurred." To determine this point satisfactorily, the antecedent history, the surrounding conditions, the symptoms during life, as well as the post-mortem appearances, must be exhaustively examined, to the exclusion of every other Cause of Death, before we are entitled to assert positively that the fatality was the result of either one or the other of the two kinds of Starvation.

Before dismissing the subject of Chronic Starvation, we would draw attention to the following account, which appears to us to give, very graphically, the post-mortem appearances in an actual case of Chronic Starvation. It occurred at North Common, a village about six miles from Bristol; and a Coroner's Jury returned a verdict of Murder against the Mother and Stepfather for starving and exposing their son, Mark Cornish, aged eleven. Notwithstanding that Food and Water had been given the night before his Death, Starvation had evidently been going on for more than two years; and the boy "had been giving way" during two months prior to his decease. He had lived on "sometimes half a round and sometimes a quarter of a round (? bread) sometimes once and sometimes twice a day—never more than twice a day. The only thing they (his sister and himself) had to drink was cold water; they never had any tea or coffee." They used to pick the potato-rinds off the mixen and eat them when out begging. Deceased sometimes ate the bran with which the rabbits were fed. Mr. Biggs, the Surgeon examined, describes the following post-mortem appearances of the boy's body:—

The Muscle was so wasted away that there was scarcely any muscular form left. The deceased looked like a little Skeleton, with the skin strained tightly over him; all the Adipose substance was gone; he was so thin that he could not only see each individual Bone, but he could point out the peculiarities of each Bone, such as any marks upon them; all the organs were healthy, except that the Heart was reduced in size, and there was less Blood in the cavities than usual; the Stomach was very small; the Omentum, or covering of the Intestines, was the thinnest he had ever seen—it was clear as glass, and no appearance of Fat about it; there was no Food whatever in the Stomach. The Small Intestines were nearly empty; there was no appearance of Chyle; what little substance was in them, was a kind of mucus. In the Large Intestine was a little hardened Fæces. The Stomach would have contracted if it did not receive its regular quantity of Food. The Heart would have become reduced with the other muscular structure. If Food had been given the night before death, it would have become hardened Fæces by the time of death. . . . The Cause of Death was, in common words, a want of food, or Starvation.⁵²⁷

The absence of extreme Emaciation, and the non-existence of any Attenuation of the Intestines in Sarah Jacob's body, afforded, during the Judicial proceedings, a weapon which was perseveringly pressed against the

opinion of those who, like ourselves, attributed her Death to Starvation.

It was assumed to be impossible, that anyone could die of Actual Starvation, without exhibiting, after Death, either one or other of those phenomena which had been laid down by writers, as characteristic of the Cause of Death. We saw through the fallacy of this argument. We hesitated not to express strongly the opinion that eight days of Absolute Deprivation of all Solid and Liquid Food was too short a period, in which to expect the production either of great Emaciation of the Body, or of Thinning of the Coats of the Intestines. We nevertheless adhered to the primary opinion we had formed, that,—having regard to all the antecedents in this case, *never for one moment losing sight of the one great factor in the process*, weighing well the value of every manifestation or symptom during the eight days' trial, and having the complete negative proof of the absence of any other possible Cause of Death,—Sarah Jacob died from Acute Starvation.

We have endeavoured in our comments hereon, to establish every detail of this view. In the case of a "tall corpulent [man] of a very good habit of body, who wilfully starved himself to Death," Haller (without, unfortunately, mentioning the duration of Starvation) states that the Omentum, Mesentery, and Meso-colon were an inch thick in Fatness. He then remarks:—"It from hence appears, that the Fat of a healthy man is not very soon consumed, even after extreme Inanition."⁵²⁸

Shortly after the conviction of Evan and Hannah Jacob for the Manslaughter of their child, we forwarded to one of the Medical Journals the following:—

REMARKS IN REFERENCE TO THE PRESENCE OF FAT,
AND ABSENCE OF ATTENUATION OF THE INTES-
TINES, IN THE BODY OF SARAH JACOB, THE
"WELSH FASTING-GIRL."

Both during the Magisterial Investigation at Llandyssii last March, and now again at the Trial of the parents for Manslaughter at the Carmarthenshire Summer Assizes, one of the points of the Defence was that Sarah Jacob could not have possibly died of Starvation, because after death was found "a thick layer of Fat from half an inch on the Thorax, to one inch on the lower portion of the Abdomen," and

that also, there was no Attenuation or Thinning of the Coats of the Intestines.

Being subpoenaed by the Crown as an independent medical witness, I did not hesitate from the very first to express my opinion that the presence of the Fat and the absence of the Thinning were not only not inconsistent with, but were in fact to be expected in, the case of a young "plump" girl who dies on the eighth day after the complete deprivation of all solid and liquid food.

My opinion was not again asked by the Counsel for the Defence at the Trial last week at Carmarthen; Mr. James Thomas, Newcastle-Emlyn, one of the gentlemen who conducted the post-mortem inquiry, on cross-examination, very pointedly and logically supported, however, my previous assertions. On summing up, the Judge (Hon. Sir James Hannen, Knt.) ably and aptly also refuted this part of the theory for the Defence.

I. The more or less complete Absorption of Fat in a case of Acute (or, as the Judge naïvely called it, "Absolute") Starvation in man, would appear mainly to depend on two elements: (1) The amount of Fat previously existent in the body; (2) The duration of time from the commencement of Starvation till death.

(1) Sarah Jacob was a "plump," fat child. A medical man who saw her early in 1869 writes me that her Temporal Fossæ were then bulging with Fat. She had, therefore, of course, some way or other been sufficiently fed, up to December 9th, 1869, when she was suddenly deprived of all liquid and solid food. This sudden and *absolute deprivation* for a definite time, in a previously sufficiently fed person, constitutes the case as one of *Acute* Starvation. From various Diseases, and during a general Famine, we get cases of *Chronic* Starvation, implying an *insufficient* supply of food up even to the very Death, —which may be weeks or months before its actual occurrence.

Sarah Jacob was never put on the weighing-machine either immediately before, or during, the last eight days of her life. It is consequently impossible to accurately estimate her *relative* Emaciation. She did, however, emaciate. The "sunken eyes and cheeks" and "pinched nose" were produced by the Absorption of Fat and Fluids from the cavities of the orbits and the neighbouring parts. Mr. James Thomas produced also at the Trial, important evidence of Absorption of Fat, in the description he gave of the patchy distribution of the Fat in the Omentum.

(2) Where in recorded cases great Emaciation is spoken of as a symptom of Starvation, it is invariably after a much longer time than eight days of deprivation of food. Of the recorded cases where the duration of Starvation is alluded to, and of which I have carefully examined the details, there are only three or four analogous, as regards time, to the case of Sarah Jacob.

(a) Casper's case continued ten days without death, and the only allusion made to Emaciation is, that "on the fifth day, his features were somewhat collapsed," and "on the seventh, he was evidently becoming thinner."

(b) In the case of Guillaume Granet, recorded by Guy in his Forensic Medicine, it is stated: "For the first *seven* days the symptoms were not very remarkable."

(c) In the case of eight men and one boy (mentioned by Taylor as being) eight days in a coal-pit, it appears, on reference to the details in the *Medical Gazette*, 1835-6, that, although "excessive weakness" is spoken of, no allusion whatever is made to "Emaciation."

(d) A case of Voluntary Starvation is recorded in the *British Medical Journal* of April 16th, 1870, by Mr. Lingen, of Hereford. A "thin spare man" lived ten days without solid and liquid food. On the sixth day he was "up, dressed, and at his business." Of course, even a "thin spare man" can become *thinner*; but, in answer to a question from me, Mr. Lingen kindly writes: "The Emaciation was not excessive by any means."

(e) Dr. Martyn, in the *Medical Times and Gazette* of March 30th, 1861, says:—"Haller ('Opuscula Path.') examined the Body of a Suicide, where Fat an inch deep was found in the Omentum." The duration of the deprivation of food is, however, not mentioned, and Dr. Martyn suspects it is not an uncomplicated case.

II. Attenuation, or Thinning of the Coats of the Intestines, is not peculiar to Death by Starvation. It is found almost always in Death from long-continued wasting Diseases.

As a matter of fact (omitting the Irish Famine cases) it is mentioned but once only in the recorded cases I have alluded to, of Death from Actual Starvation. That one case (Regina v. Mitchell, tried at the Oxford Lent Assizes, 1861) was proved to be a case of Disease.

Casper, quoting the Irish Famine cases, very hastily and improperly asserts that "Attenuation of the Coats of the Intestines" is the one "specific cadaveric phenomenon pertaining to death from Starvation." He apparently for the moment, forgets the distinction he has, four pages before, drawn between Acute and Chronic Starvation. He evidently committed himself to the assertion without carefully considering Dr. Donovan's premisses and deductions.

On referring to Dr. Donovan's paper in the *Dublin Medical Press* of February 2nd, 1848, I find that he calls his cases "Famine Cachexia or Lingered Starvation;" and adds, "Even the majority of those who perished of Starvation, were able to provide some Food, which preserved Life, until exposure to Cold, or some other accidental cause, extinguished the faint spark."

Despite the alleged specificity of the phenomenon in question, it nevertheless appears that in the post-mortem account of the two fatal cases (one evidently an *Acute* case) observed by Casper himself, the existence of Attenuation is not even alluded to.

The following extracts from a very complete letter to me by Dr. Donovan, form a fitting reply to the reliance of the Counsel on this one point in his defence of Hannah Jacob:—

"I agree with you in thinking that the case of the Welsh Fasting-Girl, is not analogous to those I was familiar with in 1847-48 From my experience, where the persons were corpulent during life-time, deposit of Fat may be found in the Abdomen, and the Intestines not much changed from their normal state (on post-mortem examination), although they had died of Actual Want. The cases with which I have been most familiar, were ones of Lingered Starvation, the supply of food having been insufficient for months; but in every instance, they contrived to obtain casually some indigestible substance,

such as raw cabbage, turnip, &c. In such cases, as was naturally to be expected, there was a gradual Absorption of Fat, with Atrophy, and Attenuation of the Intestines."

Had Sarah Jacob been able to have got access to Water, her Life would have undoubtedly been prolonged, and the Emaciation would have daily become more perceptible; whilst after Death, less Fat, and possibly some alteration in the appearance of the Intestines, would have been discovered. In strict logic, therefore, Sarah Jacob died on the eighth day of Starvation, from want of, or because she had no, Water.

That she did not die from "Mental Shock" appears evident from the following facts:—

(a) The previous watching by four watchmen, who were constantly with her fourteen days and nights—from the 22nd of March, to the 5th of April, 1869—produced no such symptoms or effects as soon became apparent during the last watching.

(b) The presence of the nurses, several medical men, and other persons in the room on the afternoon of December 9th, 1869, when the last watching commenced, produced no symptoms of "Shock," nor serious alteration of the Pulse. The Certificate of Health, signed on that day by two of the medical gentlemen, states that the Pulse was regular, averaging 86 per minute.

(c) The depressing influence of four strange nurses, would be expected to show itself almost immediately. The Sleep was, however, natural the first night of their presence. The girl soon became very much attached to the nurses, whose tact and kindness were undoubtedly mainly instrumental in keeping off the so-called "fits."

(d) The detailed symptoms of the last eight days, were clearly those of progressive *Physical* Exhaustion, commingling with, and in a measure masked though never overpowered by, the symptoms indicative of a Morbidly, or otherwise Perverted Will. One of the aphorisms of Hippocrates says, that when a person in Health abstains from Food for seven days, even though he received Nourishment at the end of that period, he never survives; and that Thirst, not Hunger, is the most distressing symptom.

Should my other avocations permit, I will take an early opportunity of placing the whole history of Sarah Jacob in a more complete form, before the Profession and the Public, to both of whom I should be extremely obliged for any additional details of this medically and legally interesting case.

The following Epitome of recorded cases of Starvation, will, I am sure, contribute much to the value of the remarks I have made:—

1. *Case of Starvation for Ten Days without Death.*—On the fifth day, "features somewhat collapsed." No Hunger; no Thirst. On the sixth day, made "to take a few drops of sp. æthereus." On the seventh day, "evidently becoming thinner." On the ninth and tenth days, "from absolute necessity, took about six ounces of sugar and water."—(Casper's "Forensic Medicine," vol. ii. p. 29, New Syd. Soc. Transl.)

2. *Actual Death from Starvation.*—Duration not stated. "The body much emaciated." Intestines contracted, and empty. *Attenuation not mentioned.*—(Ibid., p. 33.)

3. *Death from protracted Starvation.*—Duration not stated. Body very emaciated; entire absence of Fat. Large Intestines *much contracted*. *Attenuation not mentioned.*—(Ibid., p. 36.)

4. *Guillaume Granet, a Prisoner at Toulouse.*—"For the first seven days, the symptoms were not very remarkable." After this period, he was compelled to drink water occasionally. Died on the fifty-eighth day, in Convulsions.—(Guy's "Forensic Medicine," 3rd edit., p. 329.)

5. *Shipwreck on Calcutta Coast.*—Ten out of thirteen men escaped and recovered, after being twelve days without food or water. No mention made of *rain water.*—(Ibid.)

6. *Captain Casey, of the "Jane Lowden."*—Of the crew, one survived eleven days, one twelve, one fourteen, two fifteen, one eighteen, and the Captain twenty-eight days. When picked up, the Captain was "pale and thin;" he sustained life "by drinking as much rain as he could collect by tying his cravat round the mast, and, when it became drenched, sucking it."—(Ibid., p. 329: *The Times*, Feb. 6th, 1866.)

7. *Mark Cornish.*—Death after insufficient food and ill-treatment for about three months. Had food and water night before death. Extreme general Emaciation. *Attenuation not alluded to.*—(Guy, op. cit., p. 330; *Morning Chronicle*, Feb. 26th, 1853.)

8. *Elizabeth Canning.*—Lived (?) eighteen days, in depth of winter, on a gallon of water, a quartern loaf, and a small mince pie. "Languid and reduced state." "Appeared like one who had suffered extreme Hunger, Thirst, and Cold."—(Guy, op. cit., p. 330; Dr. Cummin's Lectures, *Med. Gaz.*, vol. xix. p. 209, Nov. 12th, 1836.)

9. *Prisoners at Millbank.*—Two men and one woman. Complete abstinence from solid food for ten days, but free access to water. *No bad symptoms.* By no means exhausted.—(Guy, op. cit., p. 330.)

10. *Two children, Aspinall.*—Death from insufficient food. Duration not stated. Extreme Emaciation. Scarcely a trace of Fat. *Attenuation not alluded to.*—(Taylor's "Principles and Practice of Medical Jurisprudence," p. 745; "Proceedings of the Liverpool Medical Society," 1855-56.)

11. *Irish Famine Cases.*—Called by Dr. Donovan in his paper "Famine Cachexia, or *Lingering Starvation.*" *Attenuation of Coats of Intestine, regarded as strongest proof of Starvation.* "On one occasion (at an inquest) I was able to recognise a portion of green cabbage in the Duodenum of a man who died of Want." *Diarrhœa* a frequent symptom in these cases. *Vide* extracts (in text above) from paper and letter of Dr. Donovan.—(Taylor, op. cit., p. 743; Dr. Daniel Donovan, of Skibbereen, Co. Cork; *Dublin Medical Press*, Feb 2nd, 1848, p. 67.)

12. *Regina versus Pryke.*—Insufficient food and mal-treatment. Death from Ulceration of Intestines. Body emaciated. *Attenuation not alluded to.*—(Taylor, op. cit., p. 746. *The Times*, July 22nd, 1840; Chelmsford Summer Assizes.)

13. *Regina versus Mitchell.*—Insufficient food. *Case of Muco-Enteritis.* Previous *Diarrhœa*: Emaciation. *Intestines thin and transparent in parts.*—(Taylor, op. cit., p. 746. *The Lancet*, 1861: Oxford Lent Assizes.)

14. *Case of Voluntary Starvation*.—Death on the tenth day. No post-mortem examination. Pulse increased in frequency as he became feebler; he appeared thirsty, and his Animal Heat was sustained with difficulty. *Vide* extracts (in text above) from paper and letter.—(*Brit. Med. Journ.*, April 16th, 1860, p. 384; Chas. Lingen, Esq., of Hereford.)

15. *Cases of long-continued absence of food*.—(a) Hysterical vomiting and abstinence for eleven months. Friction with Cod-Liver oil, and draughts of cold water and ice. Enemata as long as borne. "A living skeleton." "No bed-sores." No post mortem examination. (b) Case of Lethargy and Abstinence; "without food for twenty-six weeks!" Olive oil inunction. Lips moistened. *Great Emaciation*. Recovered. (*Brit. Med. Jour.*, May 28th, 1870: Dr. Henry Barber, Ulverston.)

16. *Haller's case* ("Opuscula Path.")—"A Suicide where Fat an inch deep was found in the Omentum." See extract (in text above) from paper. (Dr. Martyn: *Med. Times and Gaz.*, March 30th, 1861, p. 344.)

17. *Dr. Sloan's case*.—Twenty-three days in a coal-pit. Access to water for first ten days. After ten days, unable to walk. Extreme Emaciation. Intestines collapsed; *otherwise normal*. *Attenuation not alluded to*. (Taylor, *op. cit.*, p. 743; *Med. Gaz.*, vol. xvii. 1835-36, pp. 264 and 389.)

18. *Thornhill's cases*.—Eight men and one boy eight days in a coal-pit. Access to dripping water. Excessive weakness. All recovered. *Emaciation not alluded to*. (Taylor, *op. cit.*, p. 744; *Med. Gaz.*, vol. xvii., 1835-36, p. 389.)

19. *Tomkin's case*.—A destitute and exhausted man shut up for two days, and then found dead. Emaciation. *Attenuation not mentioned*. (Taylor, *op. cit.*, p. 745; *The Lancet*, March 17th, 1832, p. 903.)⁵²⁹

We have thus endeavoured to fulfil our intention of placing the whole History of Sarah Jacob before the Profession and the Public. Probably no one case since that of the celebrated Margaret McAvoy,⁵³⁰ in 1816, has caused so much popular excitement as that of this little Welsh Fasting-Girl. The notoriety caused by her alleged extraordinary powers, became considerably augmented when it was known that she was dead. A great portion of the Press persisted in characterizing her as having been made the victim of Science.⁵³¹ The Coroner's Verdict did not satisfy all. The institution of a Prosecution by the Government—involving as it did the medical gentlemen investigating the case—caused, at one bound, the elevation of the "wondrous" Sarah Jacob, to one of the highest pinnacles of sensational celebrity!

We have a hope that in the "plain unvarnished" His-

tory we have given, and in the professional comments we have made on all the varying and varied aspects of her later life, we shall have succeeded in stripping the girl of her "marvellous" surroundings; and in demonstrating, even to the credulous, that Sarah Jacob was—*ab initio usque ad finem*—amenable to all the ordinary laws of our common Humanity.

We have expressed our opinion that the case appears at first to have been an anomalous form of Nervous Disorder, which, partaking of certain of the characteristics of Catalepsy, subsequently became more allied to Ecstasy. During these six or eight weeks, Sarah Jacob, we have conclusively shown, obeyed all the recognised laws and regulations consequent, even during such Abnormalities of Health, on the more or less avoidance of Food—"she became much emaciated, almost a Skeleton." We need not recapitulate our explanations respecting the altered physical condition of the girl during her two years of alleged Fasting. We are still of the opinion we primarily expressed and recorded after our visit, in August, 1869, that the girl at that period was certainly suffering from Simulative Hysteria. With our present better knowledge of all the antecedents, we incline to the notion that her anomalous Neurosis, or Nervous Disorder, assumed this Simulative form, at some period or other of her convalescence, subsequent to the discontinuance of Mr. Davies's professional attendance.

It is unnecessary to reassert the view we have adopted respecting the supposed complicity of the girl with her parents. Suffice it to repeat, that Legal Evidence now warrants the assumption, that, from some time or other, the parents were cognizant their daughter did not live entirely without Food, and did not pass through life without having the natural excretions from her body. Whether the girl herself knew that her parents were aware of the performance, on her part, of these ordinary functions of Vitality, is not at all elicited by any of the recorded Judicial Proceedings. We have advanced the theory that "the girl had brought herself to believe that even her parents were ignorant of her deceptions;" and that from motives we have detailed, the parents themselves had likewise concealed their acquired know-

ledge from their invalid daughter. For their fearful want of Humanity in not divulging what they knew, the parents rendered themselves amenable to the Laws of their Country! For a morbid persistence in a perverse determination, the girl (when surrounded by an impregnable cordon) of a necessity paid the last penalty demanded by the unerring Laws of outraged Nature!

RETURN to an Order of the Honourable The House of Commons, dated 8 April, 1870;—for,

RETURN “of the COSTS of the PROSECUTION in the Magisterial Inquiry relative to the Death of *Sarah Jacob* (known as the Welsh Fasting-Girl); distinguishing the Amounts Paid or Payable to Counsel, Solicitors, and Witnesses.” (Mr. Evan Richards).—Ordered by the House of Commons to be Printed, 15th June, 1870.

		COUNSEL :		
		The Attorney-General:	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
		Advising on case	5 10 0	
		Consultation	2 9 6	
				7 19 6
		The Solicitor-General:		
		Advising on case	5 10 0	
		Consultation	2 9 6	
				7 19 6
		Mr. Archibald:		
		Advising on case	3 5 6	
		Consultation	1 3 6	
				4 9 0
Paid		Mr. Hardinge Giffard, Q.C.:		
		Case to advise on evidence	2 4 6	
		Conference	2 7 0	
		Brief to postpone trial	5 10 0	
		Consultation	2 9 6	
				12 11 0
Paid		Mr. C. E. Coleridge:		
		Brief to attend before Magistrates, Llandyssil	5 10 0	
		Nine attendances before Magistrates at Llandyssil, at 10 guineas each (and clerk's fees 10s. each)	99 0 0	
		Ten conferences at one guinea (and clerk's fees 5s. each)	13 0 0	
		Brief to postpone trial	3 5 6	
		Consultation with Mr. Giffard, Q.C.	1 3 6	
		Railway fare to Carmarthen and back, and cab hire	5 4 0	
				127 3 0
				160 2 0
		SOLICITORS:		
		Messrs. Wontner & Sons (who attended as agents to Treasury Solicitors):		
		Bill of costs		224 4 10
		Mr. George Thomas, Coroner: Local agent at Carmarthen		26 10 11
		Mr. Benjamin Evans, Clerk to Magistrates:		
		Fees, &c.		33 14 6
				284 10 3
	Unpaid.			
	N.B. — These costs have not yet been revised. The amounts will be somewhat reduced on revision.			
	These costs will be paid in usual course after the trial at the ensuing assizes.			

WITNESSES:

(Some of the Witnesses have been paid something on account.)

No.	Name.	Place of Abode.	Profession or Business.	Days Absent.	Allowance per Day.	Railway Fare.	Mileage.	Total Allowance.
					£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
1	Jones, Evan, B.D.	Llanfhangel.	Vicar of Parish	8	1 1 0	—	1 4 0	9 12 0
2	Thomas, William	Llandyssil	Unitarian Minister and Proprietor of Grammar School	9	1 1 0	—	—	9 9 0
3	Davies, Thos. Edwd.	Cardigan	Solicitor	2	2 2 0	—	1 7 0	5 11 0
4	Griffith, John	London	Journalist	5	2 2 0	7 17 1	—	18 7 1
5	Hughes, J. Pearson	Llandoverly	Physician	8	3 3 0	—	8 19 0	34 3 0
6	Thomas, James	Newcastle-Emlyn	Surgeon	3	3 3 0	—	1 10 0	10 19 0
7	Phillips, John	Newcastle-Emlyn	Surgeon	3	3 3 0	—	1 10 0	10 19 0
8	Jones, John	Llandyssil	Solicitor	8	1 1 0	—	—	8 8 0
9	Daniel, John	Pencader	Tailor	4	0 7 6	0 3 9	—	1 13 9
10	Duncan, Sarah	Blaenblodau	Servant	1	0 5 0	0 1 0	—	0 6 0
11	Giles, Henry	Carmarthen	Shorthand Writer, with notes	1	1 1 0	—	—	1 1 0
12	Thomas, George	Carmarthen	Solicitor and Coroner	—	—	—	—	—
*13	Fowler, Robert, M.D.	London	Medical Expert	—	—	—	—	—
14	Clinch, Elizabeth	London	Superintendent of Ward at Guy's Hospital.	—	—	—	—	—
15	Jones, Anne	London	Nurse at Guy's	15	1 0 0	6 10 0	—	21 10 0
16	Attrick, Sarah	London	Nurse at Guy's	15	0 15 0	6 10 0	—	17 15 0
17	Palmer, Sarah	London	Nurse at Guy's	15	0 15 0	6 10 0	—	17 15 0
					0 15 0	6 10 0	—	17 15 0
								378 12 4

* The total subsequently allowed was £163 9s. 0d.

J. STANSFELD.

NOTES.

EXPLANATIONS.

- "Coroner," means Depositions taken before the Coroner.
"Magistrates," means Depositions taken before the Magistrates.
"Diary," means the Diary kept by Sister Clinch during the eight days' watching.
"Evidence at Trial," means that the quotation is taken from the Reports in the *Welshman* or *Carmarthen Journal*, of July 15th or 22nd, 1870.
"Short-hand Notes," means from the Transcript of Mr. Richard Thomas Robeson, 47, Chancery Lane, the Short-hand Writer on the Welsh and Chester Circuit.
- When no number is given to words between inverted commas, or in the context near them, the reference is generally to Sister Clinch's Depositions before the Magistrates, unless otherwise expressed.
-

¹ An Epitome of such cases may be found in *All the Year Round*, October 9th, 1869, p. 442.

² "The accounts of persons having lived without taking food for months and years are, as Rudolphi with justice remarked, examples of deception."—Müller's "Elements of Physiology," translated by W. Baly, M.D., 2nd edition, 1840, vol. i. p. 532.

"In regard, however, to those who have been stated to fast for a period of months or even years, taking no nutriment, but maintaining an active condition, it may be safely asserted that they were impostors, probably possessing unusual powers of abstinence, which they took means to magnify."—Dr. Carpenter's "Principles of Human Physiology," 7th edition, 1869, p. 85.

³ Rumour asserted that, in order to obtain the necessary expenses for the Defence to the charge of Manslaughter, all the farm-stock and implements had to be sold by auction. The Jacobs, after the Trial, were, it was stated, absolutely ruined.

⁴ On the sign-posts about the neighbourhood, the word is spelt *Lletherneuadd*. This spelling was adopted in all the legal documents connected with the subsequent investigations and trial. The spelling in the former part of the text is on the authority of Messrs. Davies and Son, Solicitors, Cardigan, and Agents to Messrs. Longcroft and Lloyd.

⁵ The following extract is from the *Cambria Daily Leader* :—

"THE CARMARTHENSHIRE FASTING-GIRL.

"A few days ago, Mr. Andrews, photographic artist, of Swansea, went to Llandyssil with the intention of taking the likeness of the 'wonderful' girl who has been the cause of so much scientific discussion, not only in Wales, but throughout England. Mr. Andrews, who is a skilled photographer, was anxious to forward her likeness to the pictorial newspapers of London, and to the leading medical authorities. On arriving at Llandyssil, in company with one of his own artists, and one of the reporters of the *Leader*, they visited the farm where the 'wonderful girl' existed. The party explained the object of their mission, but the disinterested parents of the 'marvellous' child had the modesty to demand 20*l.* for the privilege of taking her photograph. Mr. Andrews, of course, declined the honour at the rate quoted, and he and his artist had to return to Swansea without having accomplished their object. This circumstance is to be regretted, as a large number of the profession would be glad to secure a precise likeness of this juvenile phenomenon."

⁶ Evidence of Rev. William Thomas at the trial, *Carmarthen Journal*, July 15th, 1870. This statement does not quite accord with the exact measurement.—*Vide* Ground Plan, page 50.

⁷ The quotations are from a letter by T. Lewis, M.D., Carmarthen (*British Medical Journal*, April 24th, 1869, p. 373); and from a letter by Rev. F. R. Young (*Welshman*, May 14th, 1869).

⁸ Rev. Evan Jones—Magistrates.

⁹ Rev. William Thomas—Coroner.

¹⁰ Rev. William Thomas—Evidence at Trial.

¹¹ Rev. E. Jones—Magistrates. The Vicar gave the following reason for his opinion:—"I arrive at this conclusion from the religious conversation I have had with her; and the chapters and verses she repeatedly read to me."

¹² Rev. Evan Jones—Magistrates.

¹³ Opisthotonos. Tetanic spasms of the muscles of the back, by which the body is bent backwards.

¹⁴ It does not appear whether or not this "prophecy" was made in the girl's hearing. Assuming her knowledge of the prediction, the recovery on the day named is quite characteristic of those Hysterical forms of disease.

¹⁵ Dr. Thomas Jones ("Observator"), of Gellifahren, Llandyssil, writes, January, 1870:—"The first I heard of this individual was (about the beginning of April, 1869),—that a girl near Pencader existed upon *very little* food, as was stated by her own father when paying his farm-rent at New Quay. It is usual for the landlord to allow his tenants a few pints of beer when paying their rents, so Mr. Jacob wanted the landlord of the inn to allow his (Mr. Jacob's) portion in a little wine or brandy to take home, as he had a little girl eating *very little food indeed*. The landlord willingly acquiesced."

¹⁶ *Vide* Note 15. Anne Jones, in her Depositions before the Magistrates, swears, in reference to this assertion, "She (the mother) used the phrase, 'Ddim o ddimwedd,' meaning, I think, 'not the least thing.'"

¹⁷ Each and all—Magistrates.

¹⁸ Magistrates.

¹⁹ Magistrates.

²⁰ Mr. John Griffith, in his Depositions before the Magistrates, states that the words spoken to him were: "She could not even be removed from her little bed to the other without fainting. The Welsh word used for fainting was 'Faintio.'"

²¹ Dr. Thomas Jones, late of New Quay, under his anonyne, "Observer," states:—"When I was there,—and scores of visitors have told me the same thing,—the mother contrived to reach one of the dogs and kick [it] twice, to give me the benefit of the fits."—*South Wales Press*.

²² Magistrates.

²³ In his statement before the Coroner, the father said that they "moistened her lips, with water only, *several times a day*."

²⁴ The quotations preceding this number are (when not otherwise annotated) from Dr. Lewis's letter, *ant. cit.*; from the Depositions of the Rev. Evan Jones before the Magistrates at Llandyssil, March 3rd, 1870; and from the statement made by the father before the Coroner, on December 23rd, 1869.

²⁵ In a note to ourselves, the Vicar says he was "specially and repeatedly sent for *by the girl*, who appeared to be exceedingly anxious about her soul."

²⁶ Between February and June, 1869, the Vicar's unbelief unfortunately appears to have completely broken down. In a letter (referred to at page 15) inserted in the *Welshman*, February 19, 1869, and signed "The Vicar of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth," downright credulity in the "wonderful little girl" is very pointedly betrayed. *Literæ scriptæ manent!* ("In July, 1869, I had grave doubt about the truth of what the parents said." Rev. Evan Jones—Magistrates.)

In a very kind note to ourselves (dated December 23rd, 1869), the Vicar says—"Some five or six months since, the girl improved very much in her appearance. Her voice became stronger, and her face very much more plump than usual. This made me doubt the whole affair, and scattered any theories, which I might have entertained, to the winds."

²⁷ After our return home from the Magisterial Investigation, we received by post the following letter, which had been directed to "Dr. Fowler, Llandyssil, Wales." We are precluded from giving the writer's address and name, which latter, in its similitude to one of the Welsh words alluded to, considerably augmented our amusement on perusal:—

March 15th, 1870.

"DEAR SIR,—I find in this morning's report of your evidence concerning the Fasting-Girl's case, upon cross-examination, the name of Dr. Mawr appears to have been reported of as a great doctor, who could do the girl good. Will you be kind enough to inform me, by return of post, whether he is a qualified Member of the Profession or not, as his name does not appear in the Medical Register?"

We at once forwarded the subjoined answer:—

March 18th, 1870.

"DEAR SIR,—'Doctor Mawr' are the Welsh words for that 'Great Doctor,' whose Register is the Bible, and whose *advertisement* is all Creation."

²⁸ Magistrates.

²⁹ The "strangers" who visited the girl in 1868 appear to have been only "a respectable family from a few miles distance."

³⁰ "I know that they are reaping fast, a fortune from this wonderful little prodigy."—Letter signed "Observer," in *South Wales Press*, 1869.

³¹ Magistrates.

³² Coroner.

³³ Letter signed "Observer," in the *South Wales Press*.

³⁴ *Welshman*, April 30th, 1869.

³⁵ Evidence at Trial.

³⁶ Magistrates. Aberdare is in the Vale of Neath, on the Taff Vale Extension Line.

³⁷ Rev. E. Jones—Magistrates.

³⁸ Rev. E. Jones—Evidence at Trial.

³⁹ Magistrates.

⁴⁰ *Welshman*, April 30th, 1869.

⁴¹ Evidence at Trial.

⁴² Short-hand Notes.

⁴³ "Since there has been so great an influx of visitors to Sarah, many of them have given her books, and offered her parents money, which they have accepted."—Letter of Rev. F. R. Young, *North Wilts Herald*, May 8th, 1869. Also Rev. E. Jones—Magistrates.

⁴⁴ Rev. E. Jones—Magistrates, and Evidence at Trial.

⁴⁵ Rev. W. Thomas—Coroner, and Magistrates.

⁴⁶ Letter to *Western Mail*, December 21st, 1869.

⁴⁷ Letter, ant. cit.

⁴⁸ Letter on "The Fasting-Girl of Wales," *The Times*, September 7th, 1869.

⁴⁹ Rev. E. Jones—Magistrates.

⁵⁰ We have made very many endeavours, both oral and written, direct and indirect, to a source whence we felt certain of being assisted in the production of some of these letters, and other details. We have quite failed. It is the sole failure amongst numerous friends and strangers who have so kindly and willingly supplied us with information.—R. F.

⁵¹ A few days after the appearance of the Vicar's letter, the following was printed in the *Seren Cymru*, March 5th, 1869; and at the request of the girl's parents was transferred to the *Chronicle Cymreig* of March 13th, 1869:—

"A SINGULAR CASE OF A YOUNG GIRL.

"Llandyssil, February 22nd, 1869.

"Much commotion is created in the papers, and in the neighbourhood, concerning a farmer's daughter at Lletherneuadd, near Pencader, a patient of mine, who suffers from *Catalepsy* (one of a class of Nervous Diseases extraordinary for their mode of action on the sensitive portion of the human body). This young girl is twelve years of age next May. I first attended her on the 24th day of February, 1867. On a subsequent visit, I was more confirmed in my opinion as to the nature of her complaint, and expressed an opinion accordingly, that dissolution was not near at hand, though other opinions differed. At the time she was totally unconscious, and did not

take nourishment for a month, neither did she have any motion, nor pass water. The following May I gave up visiting her, knowing medical aid was of no avail, leaving instructions as to her management. Her father occasionally called upon me, saying that his daughter was much the same, taking next to nothing in the shape of nutriment. At this I was not surprised, well knowing, from another case of the same class of ailments, that I had previously on hand for two years and a half, what an incredibly small amount of food would be sufficient to support the fluctuating power of life. About sixteen months ago, she expressed a wish to have the Sacrament administered to her by the Clergyman of the parish, and since then all the inmates, who are considered respectable and truth-telling people, protest that she has not taken anything into her mouth in the form of nourishment or otherwise. She is in bed on the ground-floor, the same room where her parents sleep. Physiologically speaking, it is impossible. Well, then, is it a designing scheme? I do not comprehend the motive. All the neighbours don't for a moment doubt the veracity of the thing. The parents are perfectly willing for persons to watch the patient as long as they may think proper, and judge for themselves. The readers may earnestly wish to know my unflinching opinion. I really and truly am perplexed, well knowing that nothing is impossible in the sight of the Creator and Preserver of all mankind.

(Signed) "H. H. DAVIES, Surgeon, Llandyssil."

⁵² This second letter of the Vicar's appeared, we believe, on April 17th, 1869, in the *Chronicle Cymreig*. It evoked the following rejoinder:—

"THE STRANGE CASE IN WALES.

"We have no doubt as to the sincerity of the Vicar of Llanfihangel-ar-Arth (who is evidently a kind-hearted man, and not without a sense of the humorous); but we question whether he is quite the stoic he boasts himself to be. He is obviously not altogether pleased with editors in general, for paraphrasing his account of the above case, and offering reflections thereon, in a letter he has addressed to a local paper. It was, however, when that "Pope-Editor" of *The Lancet* condescended to take up the subject, and characterize him as credulous for believing that a girl had existed so long without a particle of food or fluid of any kind, that his forbearance broke down, and he took up his parable on the imperfections of medical science, 'universally acknowledged to be the most uncertain and immature of all sciences.' It is, he adds—with his parish churchyard probably in his mind—the sad lot of most of us to know this to be a fact. We are compelled to bow our heads before the churchyard. Without any pretension to the infallibility of the Pope, however, we will accept that position, and mentally occupy the Papal throne while we ask the Vicar how it is that he, in common with all Protestants, pooh-poohs the idea of miracles as related by the Roman Catholics in past ages? As far as human testimony is concerned, they rest upon a basis as irrefragable as the case he narrates, and yet he would probably put them aside without a thought, or listen to them with a shrug of incredulity. We are not concerned in his case, if the girl is in the condition, and does the things, ascribed to her with anything

analogous to the hybernation of the lower animals, or a state of prolonged trance. We do not pretend to fix exactly, physiologically, the time during which a particular person could fast, nor are we prepared to say what would be its exact limit under pathological circumstances; but *sixteen or seventeen months* is named in this case! The possibility of this, may not be a question for a weak immature thing like medical science to decide; but it has a bearing upon other and stronger branches of physical science—chemistry, for example. Growth and development have gone on, and the little patient has maintained her animal heat. How? If one knew the weight of a candle, and the rate of its consumption in burning, it would be easy to say how long it would continue to burn. But what would the Vicar say if told that his neighbour's candle had been burning for sixteen months without any diminution of its tallow? What a prize it would be to us, for St. Peter's! He might not be able to give an explanation of his unbelief in the way that the late Mr. Faraday would have done; but, his own experience and that of his friends being all in favour of a candle burning by consumption of its tallow, he would discredit the statement. If he knew the nature and laws of combustion, he would feel perfectly sure of the matter. Now, although we do not know the exact functions of the spleen, as he triumphantly reminds us, we certainly do know that combustion in and out of the body, is due to one and the same process, only Nature economizes her fuel far better than we do. The number of strange stories in the world is very large; the trouble of investigating them is very great; and the mystery has so commonly faded away when thoroughly investigated, that we may be excused for not sending down a Commission to a village in Wales for the next sixteen months. Some fifty or sixty years ago, the Fasting-Girl at Tutbury was exciting just such a stir. The existence of a human being, performing the acts ascribed to this girl for that time without food, is so contradictory of an immense body of facts of various kinds, that in order to establish its truthfulness we should require to set about our observations with all the rigour and exactitude employed in a scientific investigation, in order to exclude all possible sources of error, and there are a great many of these in the present instance. In one sense there is, of course, no such thing as an impossibility. For all we know, stones might, in defiance of gravitation, take to flying upwards, and the first stone which did so would become a law unto itself. The course we proposed, was to remove the girl from the neighbourhood, send her to an infirmary, and place her under the care, and at the disposal, of one of the medical staff, who could take the means to render the experiment pretty certain. We must apologize to our readers for dwelling upon such elementary details; but we wished to convince our worthy friend the Vicar that we could on occasion leave the Editorial, or—as he pleases to term it—the 'Papal' chair, and, instead of offering him dogmas, afford him reasons for our incredulity."—*The Lancet*, May 1st, 1869, p. 624.

⁵³ *Human Nature*, vol. iii. 1869, p. 205.

⁵⁴ A more detailed account of this mundane transaction is to be found in the *Welshman*, April 30th, 1869.

⁵⁵ *Western Mail*, December 21st, 1869.

⁵⁶ Letter signed "Justitia," *Welshman*, May 14th, 1869.

⁵⁷ and ⁵⁸ Coroner.

⁵⁹ Magistrates.

⁶⁰ Coroner.

⁶¹ Rev. W. Thomas—Evidence at Trial.

⁶² Magistrates.

⁶³ Coroner.

⁶⁴ In a Letter signed "Observator" and published in the *Welshman* about this period, some very severe strictures are made about this Meeting, and the several Watchers. The Meeting is said to have been composed "chiefly of some of the staunchest supporters of the Fasting supposition, that can be found in the whole neighbourhood." After criticizing the two nephews of the Family Surgeon, and the two other Watchers, "Observator" continues:—"They undertook a task for which very few men not used to such watchings are competent. . . . They were not at all, men trained to such work; they were men who had neither seen nor read a great deal, I may presume. They were placed in a very delicate position, seemingly obtruding themselves on the privacy of the family. Twelve hours was a long time for each pair to be on guard, though it was from the beginning understood that only one out of the two, must be in sight of the girl's mouth. In the night, the father and mother slept in the same room. The mother had to attend to change her daughter's linen, and to make the bed, every other day. . . . If even one man out of the four, was in the confidence of the parents, there was nothing easier than for him either to feed the girl, or allow her to be fed, when his comrade was strolling out in the fields, or lounging by the kitchen fire."

We are authorized to state that all the letters signed "Observator," and published in various papers during the controversy, were from the pen of Dr. Thomas Jones (then of New Quay, now) of Gellifahren, Llandyssil.

⁶⁵ Magistrates.

⁶⁶ Letter signed "Investigator," Llandyssil, April 27th, 1869, in *Cambria Daily Leader*.

⁶⁷ *Welshman*, July 15th, 1870.

⁶⁸ *Cambria Daily Leader*, December 18th, 1869.

⁶⁹ We must not, however, be too hard upon these Welsh Watchers. About sixty years ago, at Tutbury, Staffordshire, certain respectable inhabitants of the place, volunteered to discover whether or not Ann Moore, a woman about middle age, subsisted, as was declared, without the ordinary nutriment of her kind. This watch was continued for about three weeks, when it was publicly proclaimed that the Tutbury woman "lived entirely without food." In this case, the Bible was always open before the patient on the bed. Her emaciation was said to be so extreme, that the spinal column could be easily felt through the abdominal walls. Her distaste to aliment, it was alleged, resulted from a nausea and disrelish produced by her washing the linen of a person afflicted with ulcers. In consequence of the *éclat* derived from the unsuccess of the Watchers, numerous visitors, some from long distances, visited Ann Moore during the next two (or, according to others, six) years, leaving of course their donations in

the house, to the extent of about 250*l.* In April or May, 1813, the woman consented to another watching being instituted, provided the Watch Committee was composed of Magistrates, Clergymen, and Medical men. Amongst these were Sir Oswald Mosley, Bart., D.C.L., the Rev. Legh Richmond, Dr. Fox, and his son Francis, of Derby, and many other gentlemen of the neighbourhood. Two gentlemen were always in her room day and night. At the suggestion of Mr. Francis Fox, the bedstead, bedding, and the woman in it were placed on a weighing-machine, which resulted in discovering that she regularly lost weight daily. At the expiration of the ninth day of this strict watching, Dr. Fox found her evidently sinking, and told her she would soon die if she would not take food. After a little prevarication, the woman signed a written confession that she was an impostor, and had "occasionally taken sustenance for the last six years." She also stated that, at the first unsuccessful watch of three weeks, her daughter had contrived, when washing her face, to feed her every morning by using towels made very wet with gravy, milk, and water, or a strong solution of arrowroot; and had also, with every kiss, managed to convey certain portions of sugar from mouth to mouth.—*Vide* "Wilson's Wonderful Characters;" and "History of Tutbury," p. 321-2.

⁷⁰ *British Medical Journal*, April 24th, 1869, p. 374.

⁷¹ *Human Nature*, vol. iii. 1869, p. 308.

⁷² Letter signed "Observator" in the *South Wales Press*.

⁷³ MS. Letter dated Dec. 22nd, 1869.

⁷⁴ Rev. Evan Jones. Evidence at Trial. *Carmarthen Journal*, July 15th, 1870.

⁷⁵ Letter signed "Observator" in the *South Wales Press*.

⁷⁶ Magistrates.

⁷⁷ "He acknowledged that he felt now sick and tired of seeing constantly staring him in the face, go where he would, paragraphs headed the 'Fasting-Girl in Wales,' or the 'So-called Welsh Fasting-Girl,' &c. &c."—Speech by "Gohebydd" at Meeting, Nov. 30th, 1869. *Welshman*, Dec. 3rd, 1869.

⁷⁸ Speech by Gohebydd, ant. cit.

⁷⁹ *Ibid.*

⁸⁰ In a letter signed "Investigator," dated Llandyssil, April 27th, 1869, and inserted in the *Cambria Daily Leader*, on "the strange case at Llanfihangel-ar-Arth," appeared these words:—"The father . . . is willing—though not over flushed with money—to forfeit the sum of 100*l.* to any man that can prove foul means being used to convey food to his daughter."

⁸¹ Speech by "Gohebydd," ant. cit.

⁸² Letter to *The Times*, Dec. 25th, 1869.

⁸³ Magistrates.

⁸⁴ Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.

⁸⁵ The Rev. William Thomas, in his Depositions before the Magistrates, does not allude to this distinct Sub-committee. He then stated:—the Committee of Eighteen "was formed for making preliminary arrangements for the coming down of the nurses; such as to provide lodgings for them, and means of conveyance from the station to those lodgings, thence to the girl's

house. Again, to get funds for the Nurses' board and lodging whilst watching, &c. &c. . . ."

These funds did not come in very quickly. Dr. Lewis, writing to the Local Secretary on December 14th, says (Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates): "I hope you are collecting money for the 'fund' in your neighbourhood. I have not received above 2*l.* 16*s.* 6*d.*" In reply, the Rev. William Thomas writes:—"The Local Committee here are exerting themselves to raise more funds. We still require a considerable sum, though little flows in. But I make sure of getting sufficient funds, now that we are about the matter, even if you should think proper to continue on the watch for three weeks instead of a fortnight" (Magistrates). It was calculated that about 30*l.* would be required for the Watching, maintenance of the Nurses, &c.

⁸⁶ *Welshman*, December 3rd, 1869.

⁸⁷ Mr. John Jones, Solicitor, Llandyssil, who drew up the Agreement, subsequently "told Mr. Griffith (Gohebydd) that the Agreement was invalid except as leave and license from the parents" (Magistrates). "The Doctors and Nurses were to have the use of the room so as to have free access" (Rev. William Thomas—Magistrates).

⁸⁸ Rev. William Thomas—Magistrates.

⁸⁹ The letters of Mr. J. Hughes to Rev. William Thomas,—one giving his assent to acting on the Medical Committee, and the other conveying his dissent* to the appointment of the "three young girls," quite deserve insertion in this History:—

"Carmarthen, Dec. 4th, 1869.

"SIR,—In reference to your communication of to-day, I have only to say that I shall be willing in any way to assist in settling the question of Sarah Jacob's fasting. But in my opinion it would be necessary that the *same* Medical men should see her *daily*, as she may die during this trial. The case, if true, is so anomalous, that a comparative stranger would not be able to foresee danger as soon as one who saw the case daily, for of course her pulse, temperature, &c., must now be far from a natural condition, and it would require some one who is conversant with her present condition, to be in constant daily attendance so as to notice any change that might occur in her case. Of course there would be no withholding of food from her, if she wished to take any, or her condition seemed to indicate the want of it, otherwise a very remote responsibility would be incurred. I dare say all or most of these things have already suggested themselves to you; if so, excuse them.

"I am, dear sir, yours truly,

"W. Thomas, Esq.,
Llandyssil."

"JOHN HUGHES.

"Carmarthen, Dec. 6th, 1869.

"DEAR SIR,—I received your note to-day. I am quite aware that the whole intention of the Committee is to satisfy themselves and the

* "Mr. Hughes stated that he made this suggestion on account of a communication made to him by a gentleman in the neighbourhood—Mr. Herbert Evans (of Highmead), the High Sheriff of Cardiganshire."—*Cambria Daily Leader*, March 5th, 1870.

public of the fact of Sarah Jacob's fasting or not, and then by constant watching by competent and disinterested persons, the *truth* must come out. I have taken no part in this matter hitherto, although I have often been written to and asked to do so, but now that I have been publicly named as one of the Committee, &c., and consented to act, my position is different, and therefore, perhaps, you will think me justified in writing to you. I have received to-day a letter from one in the neighbourhood of Sarah Jacob (whom I know to be trustworthy, intelligent and honourable) calling my attention to the facts that Miss Jones of Talardd is a cousin of Sarah Jacob's; that Miss Williams of Gwarallt is, in my informant's belief, a relation, and Miss Evans of Pencader a great friend of Sarah Jacob's; and that as long as parties so circumstanced take part in the watching it will not be so satisfactory as to be decisive. I never heard the names of these young ladies before, and am willing to believe that they are as upright and honourable as any in the world, but if my informant's opinion is [shared by] many others, all the expense and trouble will be thrown away if they are permitted to assist in the watching. I can easily understand why they were appointed—I presume, that Sarah Jacob might not in her weak state be left in the society of utter strangers, however gentle and kind they might be—and I believe that it was a prudent and kind determination, but after what I have said, I should like the Committee to reconsider the matter, so that all the kindness, expense, and labour should not be utterly wasted. Pray don't misunderstand me. The Committee are very probably better judges of what will be right to do in the matter, than I can be, and will, I have no doubt, do what they think to be right, and I hope whatever they do, they will understand that I could not avoid writing on the subject after the appeal made to me.

"I am, dear sir, yours very truly,

"W. Thomas, Esq."

"JOHN HUGHES.

—Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.

⁹⁰ Magistrates.

⁹¹ Coroner.

⁹² Rev. E. Jones—Magistrates.

⁹³ John Daniel—Magistrates.

⁹⁴ Rev. E. Jones—Magistrates.

⁹⁵ Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.

⁹⁶ *Cambria Daily Leader*, December 11th, 1869.

⁹⁷ Rev. E. Jones—Magistrates.

^{97*} Gohebydd—Magistrates.

⁹⁸ *Cambria Daily Leader*, December 11th, 1869.

⁹⁹ Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.

¹⁰⁰ Magistrates.

¹⁰¹ *British Medical Journal*, January 8th, 1870, p. 27.

¹⁰² ¹⁰³ Magistrates.

¹⁰⁴ ¹⁰⁵ Coroner.

¹⁰⁶ Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.

¹⁰⁷ *Cheshire Observer*, December 18th, 1869.

¹⁰⁸ Dr. Lewis, *British Medical Journal*, January 8th, 1870, p. 27.

¹⁰⁹ Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.

¹¹⁰ Elizabeth Clinch—Magistrates.

- 111 *Cheshire Observer*, December 18th, 1869.
- 112 113 114 115 116 Magistrates.
- 117 *Cheshire Observer*, December 18th, 1869.
- 118 119 120 121 122 Magistrates.
- 123 *British Medical Journal*, December 25th, 1869, p. 687.
- In an excellent Essay on "The Temperature of Shock in Surgical Cases," by W. W. Wagstaffe, F.R.C.S., Demonstrator of Anatomy of St. Thomas's Hospital, objection is made to taking the temperature in the mouth:—"On account of the being exposed to sources of fallacy from the imperfect closure of the lips or covering of the instruments;" and this procedure was mentioned to be "also particularly objectionable, owing to its inconvenience to the patient." The thermometer in the axilla is consequently preferred, "and it was also found that a very definite relation was noticeable to the temperature of the axilla, when the latter was carefully taken, that in the mouth being about 1° higher than that in the axilla."—*St. Thomas's Hospital Reports*, vol. i. 1870, p. 467.
- 124 *Cambria Daily Leader*, December 15th, 1869.
- 125 Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.
- 126 127 Elizabeth Clinch—Magistrates.
- 128 Report of Meeting of the Committee after the girl's death. *Western Mail and Cambria Daily Leader*, December 20th, 1870.
- 129 130 Elizabeth Clinch—Magistrates.
- 131 Coroner.
- 132 Depositions.
- 133 Sarah Palmer—Magistrates.
- 134 *Cambria Daily Leader*, December 20th, 1869. Examination before Committee. In evidence before Magistrates, however, Sister Clinch says:—"I do not remember that I noticed any difference in her countenance before the water-bottle fell out of the bed, between 7 and 8," on Tuesday, December 14th.
- 135 Elizabeth Clinch—Short-hand Notes.
- 136 Elizabeth Clinch—Magistrates.
- 137 Diary.
- 138 Elizabeth Clinch—Magistrates.
- 139 Diary.
- 140 Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.
- 141 Coroner.
- 142 Magistrates.
- 143 Coroner.
- 144 *Western Mail*, December 13th, 1869.
- 145 *Western Mail and Cambria Daily Leader*, December 20th, 1869.
- 146 "Three small spots, one about the size of a five-shilling piece, and two smaller."—Elizabeth Clinch—Short-hand Notes.
- 147 *Western Mail*, Dec. 13th, 1869.
- 148 Letter signed "Thomas Lewis." Rev. William Thomas—Magistrates.
- 149 Letter signed "William Thomas, Local Secretary." Rev. William Thomas.—Magistrates.
- 150 Ditto.
- 151 Letter signed "Thomas Lewis." Rev. William Thomas—Magistrates.

- 152 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 14th, 1869.
- 153 Depositions.
- 154 Magistrates.
- 155 Coroner.
- 156 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 15th, 1869.
- 157 Elizabeth Clinch—Coroner.
- 158 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 22nd, 1869.
- 159 160 Elizabeth Clinch—Magistrates.
- 161 Anne Jones—Magistrates.
- 162 Short-hand Notes.
- 163 Rev. William Thomas—Magistrates.
- 164 Short-hand Notes.
- 165 Elizabeth Clinch—Coroner.
- 166 Coroner.
- 167 Magistrates.
- 168 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
- 169 Short-hand Notes.
- 170 Whether the rope broke because it was rotten, or whether it had been in any way cut, does not appear in evidence.
- 171 *British Medical Journal*, January 8th, 1870, p. 27.
- 172 Magistrates.
- 173 Evidence at trial.
- 174 Coroner.
- 175 Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.
- 176 Sarah Attrick—Short-hand Notes.
- 177 Short-hand Notes.
- 178 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 18th, 1870.
- 179 Magistrates.
- 180 Elizabeth Clinch—Coroner.
- 181 Magistrates.
- 182 Elizabeth Clinch—Coroner.
- 183 Short-hand Notes.
- 184 Coroner.
- 185 Anne Jones—Magistrates.
- 186 In a letter to Dr. Lewis, from Rev. William Thomas (Magistrates), dated Dec. 15th, 1869, it is stated:—"I heard that you found the pulse at 130."
- 187 *British Medical Journal*, January 8th, 1870, p. 28.
- 188 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 16th, 1869.
- 189 Diary.
- 190 Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.
- 191 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
- 192 Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.
- 193 Coroner.
- 194 Magistrates.
- 195 *Welshman*, July 15th, 1870.
- 196 Magistrates.
- 197 Mr. John Jones, Solicitor, Llandyssil, also states:—"I did not instruct the Nurses or Doctors, that if the father neglected or refused to give food to his child, whereby her life was endangered, that they should apply to a Magistrate to compel him to do his duty; or to apply to the Parish Officers to supply the necessary

food. Nothing was said beyond withdrawing the watch."—Magistrates.

¹⁹⁸ Coroner.

¹⁹⁹ Ditto, and *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.

²⁰⁰ Coroner.

²⁰¹ Magistrates.

²⁰² Anne Jones—Coroner.

²⁰³ Ditto.

²⁰⁴ Magistrates.

²⁰⁵ Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.

There is evidently here some confusion either of time, or of what Mr. Davies said to her, in this evidence of Sarah Attrick's. The uncle, John Daniel, says:—"On the Thursday, it was about half-past twelve, when Mr. Davies came to me." "Doctor Davies told me he was going by the two o'clock train to Llandyssil. He did not go back with me to the house. It was nearly 2 P.M. when I got to Evan Jacob's.* . . . About half-past four, Mr. Davies came"—Magistrates. Sarah Attrick (who came on at 2 P.M.), however, distinctly states:—"After Mr. Davies had been there, the first time in my watch, Daniel came in, &c. &c."—Magistrates. Instead, therefore, of going back to Llandyssil, Mr. Davies, after his interview with John Daniel at Pencader, must have paid a second visit to Llethernoyadd-ucha, and probably told Sarah Attrick he *had been* to the uncle, &c. &c. He had, doubtless, again left before the arrival of Daniel, who, before the Coroner, said he reached the farm "about 3 o'clock in the afternoon."

²⁰⁵ (No. 2.) Sister Clinch—Magistrates.

²⁰⁶ Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.

²⁰⁷ Magistrates.

²⁰⁸ In his Depositions before the Magistrates, John Daniel observes:—"This was not the first time I had offered the child food, or water. I did so before, but not since, the time the parents had stated that the child had lived without food."

²⁰⁹ Short-hand Notes.

²¹⁰ *British Medical Journal*, January 8th, 1870, p. 28.

²¹¹ Sarah Palmer—Magistrates.

²¹² John Daniel—Magistrates.

²¹³ Sister Clinch—Magistrates.

²¹⁴ Rev. William Thomas—Magistrates.

²¹⁵ *British Medical Journal*, supra cit.

²¹⁶ Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.

²¹⁷ Ibid. *Vide Note* ⁵.

²¹⁸ John Daniel—Coroner.

²¹⁹ Ditto—Magistrates.

²²⁰ Coroner.

²²¹ Magistrates.

²²² Rev. William Thomas—Magistrates.

²²³ *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 14th, 1869.

²²⁴ Magistrates.

* This is confirmed by Sister Clinch, who says:—"The uncle was in the passage as I was going out," at 2 P.M.

- 225 Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.
 226 Coroner.
 227 *Western Mail*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
 228 Anne Jones—Magistrates.
 229 Ditto—Coroner.
 230 Sister Clinch—Short-hand Notes.
 231 Anne Jones—Coroner.
 232 Ditto—Magistrates.
 233 Ditto—Coroner.
 234 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
 235 Magistrates.
 236 Coroner.
 237 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
 238 Anne Jones—Magistrates.
 239 Ditto—Coroner. Sister Clinch says :—"Sinking fast"—Magistrates.
- 240 Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.
 241 *Western Mail*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
 242 Rev. Evan Jones—Magistrates.
 243 Coroner.
 244 According to the Depositions (before the Magistrates) of Henry Giles, Reporter of the *Welshman*, who took short-hand notes at the Meeting of the Committee, on the Saturday after the girl's death, the following was what Mr. Davies said at such Meeting, in reference to this conversation :—"I went to the kitchen, and asked the parents what was to be done—that the child was dying? I asked them if I might offer her anything. They said they would rather not, as she was so weak. She would be annoyed. . . . At last they told me this—'If you are very anxious to offer her anything to satisfy yourself that she can't swallow, you can do so.' I thought I had better not do so, for fear they would be inclined to say something about me."
- 245 Sarah Palmer—Magistrates.
 246 247 Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.
 248 Sarah Palmer—Magistrates.
 249 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 18th, 1869, second edition.
 250 John Daniel—Magistrates.
 251 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
 252 Magistrates.
 253 *Western Mail*, Dec. 18th, 1869.
 254 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
 255 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 16th, 1869.
 256 Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.
 257 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.
 257* *Vide Note 4*.
 258 Coroner.
 259 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 22nd, 1869.
 260 *Western Mail*, Dec. 22nd, 1869.
 261 Coroner.
 262 In a letter to the *Medical Times and Gazette*, Jan. 8th, 1870, p. 45, Mr. Phillips gives the following more detailed account of the post-mortem examination :—

"Notes of the Post-mortem Examination of the Body of Sarah Jacob, aged 12½ years, the so-called "Welsh Fasting-Girl," Three full Days after Death.

"*Exterior.*—Hair nearly black, long, and plentiful; eyes very sunken, pupils dilated; very handsome features; left cheek still florid; chest and body generally well developed; mammae slightly so; armpits and pubes showing precocious puberty; right shoulder much more developed than left; left axilla more than usually hollow, as if a bottle or other hard substance had been kept there; thighs well rounded, but the legs, below the knee, small in proportion—less developed than the thighs; soles of feet soft, bearing no evidence of being used for locomotion; nails had been recently trimmed, the skin under the edge of the nail of the right great toe bearing a line of ecchymosis continuous with the cut nail, as if pinched by the scissors in trimming; toes of both feet pointing downwards.

"*Head*—On removing calvarium, found the vessels on the surface of brain turgid, the membranes quite healthy, brain beautifully developed, the anterior lobes especially; cerebellum of ordinary size (on cutting into the substance, it was found firm, having a large proportion of cineritious matter,—a few red spots only visible on the cut surface); ventricles empty, base quite normal, containing no fluid.

"*Chest.*—Lungs collapsed, free, rather small, but quite healthy in colour and touch. Heart in every respect natural; pericardium containing no fluid or adhesions.

"*Abdomen.*—The whole alimentary canal free from any thickening or contraction, and perfectly healthy throughout. Stomach of ordinary size, containing no food, but about half an ounce of a thickened acid mucous exudation; duodenum contained a little of the same fluid, tinged with bile; jejunum also a little of the same fluid, as well as the ileum, where it became slightly grumous. Five half-grown lumbrici, and one full-grown, were in the ileum. In the cæcum, the fluid became thicker, but same in character. Colon fairly distended with gas, and, with the rectum, contained about eight ounces of hardened faeces—not at one spot, but diffused through its entire length. Anus pervious, having a little thickened mucus therein; bladder empty; uterus small, but quite healthy; spleen normal, also kidneys and liver; gall-bladder distended with healthy bile; omentum contained a little fat. The body measured fifty-three inches in length; and under the integuments, was a thick layer of fat, from half an inch on the thorax, to one inch on the lower portion of the abdomen."

The following account of the same, appeared in the *British Medical Journal*, of the same date (page 28), from the pen of Dr. Thomas Lewis, of Carmarthen:—

"Monday, December 30th, 3 P.M.: Post-mortem examination, seventy-two hours after death.—*Exterior.*—The length of the corpse was four feet five inches and a half; the face was tolerably plump; the eyeballs were sunken; the eyelids closed; there was some little colour in the cheeks; a small portion of yellowish fluid had escaped from the nostrils, on the upper lip. The chest was broad, but flat; the abdomen was a little distended about the umbilicus, and the hypogastric region; the pubes showed incipient puberty by capillary

growth ; the nates were large, and tapered into the upper half of the thighs, in the usual feminine proportions ; the knees and legs were slender ; the upper extremities were of moderate size and proportion ; the hands were long, and delicately formed ; the nails were short, of livid colour ; some capillary growth in the axilla ; the posterior aspect of the body was slightly livid, from venous gravitation, but there was no emaciation, no appearance of bed-sores ever having existed. On making the incision through the integuments, from the larynx to the pubes, a considerable layer of subcutaneous fat was cut through ; below the umbilicus, it was an inch in thickness, and above it, half an inch ; there was some greenish discoloration about the lower third of the abdominal region ; all the surface elsewhere in front, was as usual.—*Head.* The scalp was covered with abundant, long, very dark hair. The calvarium having been removed, venous congestion was seen through the dura mater. On removing this covering, the superficial vessels, lying on the convolutions, and dipping down into the longitudinal fissure between the hemispheres, were seen to be distended with blood. No lymph was seen. The arachnoid parted freely from the cortical surface. On slicing off the upper half of the cerebral hemispheres, the cortical and medullary substances were seen to present very numerous points of oozing blood ; the entire condition was the reverse of anæmic. The corpora striata, and optic thalami, were firm and normal. The choroid plexus was of a good red colour. No fluid was found in the ventricles. The whole cerebrum and cerebellum were of normal consistence. On turning out the base of the brain and cerebellum, the same vascular congestion was seen as that observed on the upper part. The substance of the cerebellum showed the same vascular fulness. No other morbid condition of the encephalon was found.—*Thorax.* The ribs were very flexible and slender. On cutting through the cartilages, and lifting the sternum, the subjacent parts looked natural. *Both Lungs* were perfectly healthy, without a trace of tubercular deposit, or of pleural adhesions ; the lungs were collapsed and dry, of rather bright red outward appearance. They were in all parts, free from serous infiltration or condensation.—The *Heart* was of moderate size. A quantity of adipose tissue surrounded the base of the ventricles. The auricles contained about a tablespoonful of dark clotted venous blood. The ventricles were empty, and their walls flaccid. The valves were all healthy.—*Abdomen.* After laying open this cavity, the omentum was seen, transparent with lines of adipose tissue running through it, covering the small intestines. The entire length of the colon was distended, and encircled the cavity just brought into view. The *Liver* was of natural size, in colour a chocolate brown, not pale. The gall-bladder was distended with dark green bile, about six drachms in quantity. There were no adhesions around the liver ; nor fluid in any part of the peritoneal cavity. The stomach, and whole tract of the intestines, were removed together from the body. The *Stomach* was *not contracted*, but flaccid. As the stomach was not seen until it was removed from the body, we must infer that gas escaped from it during removal ; if it had been distended, it would have held from ten to twelve ounces of fluid. It was cut open from the splenic to the pyloric end, along the lesser curvature. It contained only an olive-

green mucous fluid, about a tablespoonful in quantity, spread over the lining membrane; this fluid was slightly acid, as it turned litmus paper faintly pink. The coats of the stomach were very thin, but not destroyed by the gastric juice. The cardiac orifice was free, as also the pyloric. No stricture existed anywhere. The *Duodenum* was of full size, and distended with gas; it contained a similar fluid to that found in the stomach, in small quantity. The *Jejunum* was distended with gas, and it was of the usual calibre. While opening this part of the intestine, five lumbrici were turned out. They were not of full length nor size. Nothing else was found here. The mucous lining of the *Ileum*, near the commencement, was covered with a chocolate-coloured grumous fluid, to the extent of about sixteen inches; this was supposed to be an exhalation of blood. The remaining portion presented nothing unusual, excepting that a full-sized lumbricus was found about twenty inches from the termination in the cæcum. The *Cæcum* was large, and inflated with gas. Nothing unusual was observed; it was empty. The entire length of the *Colon* was largely distended with air. At different parts of the transverse and descending colon, a large quantity of hardened fæces was found, enough to fill a breakfast-cup. We thought it would weigh about eight ounces. Nothing further was found in the colon or rectum. The passage of the anus was perfectly free, as tested by the finger. During the dissection, the *Œsophagus* was lost sight of, but a portion attached to the lower part of the trachea was examined—*i.e.*, about two inches. It was quite natural; on being cut open, it looked healthy, and was of normal calibre, readily distensible. The finger was passed through from the mouth, and felt under the chin after the removal of the trachea. The *Tongue* looked pale, covered with a slight slimy secretion. The *Teeth* were white and perfect, rather small. There was no contraction found anywhere, from the mouth to the anus. The *Spleen* was firm, of usual size, and of deep bluish-black colour. The *Kidneys* were of natural size, of a bright reddish-brown colour; they were healthy. The *Bladder* was perfectly empty, and closely contracted behind the pubic arch. The uterus was not removed from the pelvis, but was seen to be of normal size; its fundus was of a bluish colour along its margin, from congestion of the subjacent small vessels."

²⁶³ Coroner.

²⁶⁴ Magistrates.

²⁶⁵ *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 24th, 1869.

²⁶⁶ "So many tests have been applied, such general curiosity has been awakened, that Science would render a service either by exposing the affair as a mere piece of deceit, or by confirming the extraordinary report," &c.—*Welshman*, April 30th, 1869. (The Strange Story of the Carmarthen Girl.)

"The Medical Profession would do a necessary duty to Science by forthwith letting us know what we are to think about the strange story of the Carmarthen Girl."—*Daily Telegraph*, April 30th, 1869.

²⁶⁷ *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 20th, 1869.

²⁶⁸ Dec. 24th, 1869.

²⁶⁹ The *Saturday Review*, of Dec. 25th, 1869, gave the following article on the case:—

"THE WELSH FASTING-GIRL.

"Much of the popular indignation which is now felt at the melancholy termination of the case of the Welsh Fasting-Girl, is not exactly misplaced, but is characteristic of a good deal of our popular ignorance. We now say that it was very reprehensible to allow this girl to kill herself, or to be killed; but we find it convenient to forget that what is called public opinion, eagerly demanded that treatment of her, which has ended in the only way in which it could end. The case itself is a very simple one. Throughout the past summer, there has been a girl alleged to be living for weeks and months without food or drink. The circumstances of the case showed on the face of it, that there was a deception and imposture somewhere. The interesting patient was displayed dressed out in bridal attire, surrounded with wreaths and bouquets, and with the usual dramatic accessories of a show. She was, of course, very pretty, very interesting, and read the Bible. Whether there was not a pseudo-religious element in this little drama, such as in other countries has produced *Addoloratas*, and *Estaticas*, we are not certain. Wales is a country of revivals and spiritual marvels, and it is not unlikely that the peculiar hysterical condition which is so often developed in girls of the age of Sarah Jacob, had thrown her whole constitution, physical and mental, into an abnormal state. Nor is it of much consequence to inquire very rigidly into the amount of conscious imposture which must be attributed to the parties to this sensational exhibition—that is, to the girl and her parents. It is, we all know, extremely difficult to point out the precise limit between fanaticism and wilful deception. It may be assumed that the child was one who, from some cause, had got into a habit of existing upon very small quantities of nourishment. Like other diseased conditions of the body, a habit of fasting may be encouraged and developed to a very great extent; and everybody knows that a suspension nearly total, of most of the corporeal functions, may be induced in the case of a person who from necessity never moves hand or foot. Among the lower natures, the phenomenon of hibernation, and in man the condition of trance, are instances of what we mean. The girl was kept perfectly quiet, and in a semi-comatose state, mere life may be sustained for a time, which, if not indefinite, may be considerably prolonged upon an infinitesimally small portion of nutriment. No doubt the parties concerned made more of it than this. The inference sought to be established was, that there was a miracle, religious or physical, or both, which proved that food was not necessary to life. And the challenge suggested, if not openly offered, was that there was no deception in the case. It does not quite appear with whom the plan for testing the case originated. No doubt there were many rational people in the neighbourhood who, though they could not and did not profess to account for the matter, yet were perfectly satisfied of the one great fact, that human life could not be indefinitely prolonged without food. Nor does it appear that the girl, or her friends, or those who adopted the case, ever formally committed themselves to the counter proposition. But practically, this was the issue. On the one hand, were the advocates of the reality and good faith of the fasting, of the entire and total absti-

nence from any scrap of food; on the other hand, were those, who maintained that there was imposture or delusion somewhere. So it was resolved, that there should be a formal and scientific investigation of the case. The local medical men, and one or two clergymen, and respectability generally, went to work to detect the imposture, or to set the matter at rest finally. Their method was complete enough. They thoroughly prevented the surreptitious conveyance of food to the girl; they got trained and experienced Nurses from a London Hospital; they watched her night and day, and in eight days the child was of course starved to death. She died, in short; and the post-mortem examination proved what, of course, was all along certain, that before the child was secluded, and rigidly watched, she did take food surreptitiously, though probably in very small quantities.

"Now what we have to say is, that there was here a fundamental mistake in arranging this voluntary commission to detect the imposture. . . . No scientific man ought ever to lend himself to any investigation which implies that the great laws of Nature and Science may possibly be untrue. If the investigators and watchers had any object, it was to satisfy themselves whether, in a particular instance, a universal law of Nature did or did not take effect. On such a point, Science does not want to satisfy itself; nor ought Science to admit, as the Medical men and clergymen did inferentially admit, that a law of Nature might perhaps not be true. No doubt it is of importance, as a moral and social matter, and a matter of police, to detect and expose Cock-lane ghosts, Mr. Home's floating on the air, and other absurdities of this sort; but Faraday was perfectly right in declining to waste his time in detecting the tricks and juggling of table-moving, and spirit-hands. In this particular case, it is possible that the Commission of Inquiry did not exactly contemplate the tragical event which has solved their little doubts, or confirmed their suspicions; but they ought to have known, that to take every precaution that a human being should have no food, and actually to prevent her from getting any food, must only end in killing her. . . . To be sure, they have proved, and most demonstrably, that there was throughout, delusion somewhere; but they ought to have been quite satisfied of this antecedently. . . . They ought never to have admitted that there was any problem to solve. They ought not to have allowed that it was an hypothesis which required experiment, and quite an open question, whether human life could be sustained without nourishment. And yet it was to settle this doubtful and difficult question, that they organized the Commission of Inquiry. Science foregoes its imperial state when, as in this instance, it condescends to take up the position of an amateur detective, bent upon finding out the tricks of a conjuror. . . . What do we care if a man exhibits himself as one in the daily habit of drinking half a pint of prussic acid? . . .

"This is the moral of this discreditable event. It serves to show what a loose and uncertain hold, the greatest and simplest physical truths have on the popular mind. We believe generally, in the law of gravitation, but when some impudent charlatan says that in this or that case, the law of gravitation does not hold, and that ten stone of man, can float unsupported in the air, we listen to him; we in our heart of hearts hesitate; we think there may perhaps be some-

thing in it. We are told that it is very unphilosophical and very bigoted to refuse to attend to, or to investigate, new phenomena; and hence it comes to this, that we consent to inquire into table-turning, and the 'sperrits.' What we ought to do is, to say at once to the new facts, that we do not recognise them; that they are not facts; that they are incapable of rational investigation; that evidence does not apply to this sort of thing. If a man, or five hundred men, told us that he saw the lion on Northumberland House wag his tail, and that we might see it if we pleased, we should certainly not be at the trouble of going to Charing Cross to 'investigate and settle the question.' The Welsh Fasting-Case settled itself, by announcing itself. Public opinion, we fairly admit, was embodied in the organizing of the Commission of Inquiry, but public opinion must acknowledge that it has done a very foolish and a very culpable and cruel thing. A human life has been sacrificed, to prove what required no proof, and ought never to have been submitted to proof. And now very likely, public opinion, in panic terror of the consequences of its own stupidity, will turn round on the Commission of Inquiry, and threaten all sorts of terrible consequences. The newspaper correspondents, now that it is too late, are condemning with great severity the Carmarthen scientific detectives. It would have been more to the purpose had they protested—which we are not aware that they did—against the Commission sitting at all. In the case of Ann Moore, the Fasting-Woman of Tutbury, a Committee of Magistrates and Clergymen (of whom Legh Richmond was one), appointed themselves to detect the imposture. But they were timely wise, and seeing that the subject was rapidly sinking, 'apprehensive of being inculpated in the charge of murder,' as the narrative says, they hastily quitted the room, and ordered in food and restoratives. Ann Moore recovered and admitted her imposture. The poor child Sarah Jacob has been sacrificed to her own obstinacy, or rather to her own diseased, hysterical, and cataleptic state; to the parents' folly or cupidity; and to public opinion—that is, to public stupidity and inability to grasp the first and elementary physical truths."

²⁷⁰ *Carmarthen Journal*, March 4th, 1870.

²⁷¹ Magistrates.

²⁷² *Carmarthen Journal*, March 4th, 1870.

²⁷³ Magistrates.

²⁷⁴ *Carmarthen Journal*, March 4th, 1870.

²⁷⁵ *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870.

²⁷⁶ *Carmarthen Journal*, March 4th, 1870.

²⁷⁷ *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870.

²⁷⁸ Magistrates.

²⁷⁹ Recent information on this subject has been communicated by Dr. S. Wilks, F.R.S., Physician to Guy's Hospital, in a letter to the *Lancet*, of January 2nd, 1869, page 5, and continued in the *Lancet*, of January 1st, 1870, page 3.

From the personal experience of a correspondent, "T. T.," deduced from these markings, recorded in the *Medical Times and Gazette* of March 11th, 1871, it would appear that "the growth of the toe-nails takes half as much time again as that of the finger-nails."

The healthiness of Sarah Jacob's nails, is also evidence of the non-

existence, in her case, of Cerebral (Brain) Paralysis. Dr. S. Weir Mitchell, in a communication to the College of Physicians of Philadelphia, has drawn attention to the "growth of the nails, as a prognostic indication in Cerebral Paralysis." In such a case, he observed that the nails of the paralysed hand, which had been previously healthy, became marked with deep serrations, crossing from side to side, and about a line apart. From subsequent experiments, he found that the nails of a palsied hand, did not grow at all; and in old cerebral palsies, he remarked, that the nails very often became deformed. In cases of Paralysis, the re-growth of the nails indicated and preceded a return of Will-Power.—*American Journal of the Medical Sciences*, April, 1871, p. 420.

²⁸⁰ "Principles of Forensic Medicine," by W. A. Guy, M.B. Cantab., F.R.S., third edition, 1868, p. 329.

²⁸¹ "Handbook of the Practice of Forensic Medicine," by Johann Ludwig Casper, M.D. (New Sydenham Society's English Translation, 1862), vol. ii. p. 29.

²⁸² *Vide* Note ²⁹⁴.

^{282*} The "fair muscular development" of "Sarah Jacob," not only disproves the assertion of her having continuously kept her bed for two years; but it also demonstrates that the statement of the equally-prolonged "Fasting" must (according to the recent investigations of Prof. Seegen) have had even a less foundation in fact. The following account of these investigations appeared in the *Lancet*, June 10th, 1871, p. 793:—

"METAMORPHOSIS OF TISSUE DURING FASTING.

"At a recent meeting of the Naturwissenschaftlichen Klasse of the Viennese Academy of Sciences, Prof. Seegen communicated a series of investigations upon the metamorphosis of albumen during fasting. The subject of his experiments was a young girl, who, in consequence of a stricture of the œsophagus, was only able to consume very small quantities of nourishment. During a whole month, the daily ingesta amounted to but 35 grammes of milk, and about 20 c.c. of water. A teaspoonful of this mixture was taken at intervals of about an hour. After lasting for four weeks, the difficulty of swallowing gradually disappeared, and the quantity of milk swallowed, rose to 210 grammes per diem. The most important results obtained, were the following:—1. The quantity of urine excreted daily amounted to 185 c.c. It was of very dark colour, possessed a strong acid reaction, and frequently deposited a considerable quantity of urates. 2. The amount of urea excreted daily, on an average of twelve days, was 8.9 grammes = 4.1 N. The amount of N. ingested with the milk, was 0.29 gramme; the excess of N. excreted, therefore, amounted to 3.8 grammes. This quantity of nitrogen is contained in about 25 grammes of dry albumen, and the patient must thus have used up that weight of the dry albumen of her own body. The chief tissue furnishing this, would of course be the muscles, and if that amount of dry albumen be calculated as coming from fresh muscle, 112 grms. of the latter, would be used up. 3. The excretion of water is not covered by the water of the metamorphosed tissue. The organism, therefore, is drier or poorer in water during fasting. 4. With increased supply of food, the

excretion of water through the urine rose, whilst the excretion of urea remained almost unchanged. 5. The metamorphosis of the albuminates during fasting, so far as they are represented by the excretory products of the urine, bears the proportion to the normal metamorphosis of 1 : 4 or 1 : 5."

²⁸³ This answer was given after grave consideration. It was intended to show our Medical brethren that, although subpoenaed by the Crown, we were not therefore necessarily hostile; and, that however pressed, we should not become a partizan. Our good intentions did not seem to be appreciated, for the several Defendants afterwards, through their Solicitors, successively subjected us to a most severe and trying cross-examination.

²⁸⁴ "Man does not generally support hunger and thirst longer than a week. Though hunger alone, is borne much longer, especially in disease, and above all in insanity."—Müller's "Elements of Physiology," translated by W. Baly, M.D., 2nd edition, 1840, vol. i. p. 532.

"The experiments of Redi show that animals live more than twice as long with access to water, than without."—Guy, op. cit. p. 328.

Vide Note ⁴²⁸.

²⁸⁵ These words were given in answer to a question whether or not the Loughborough Infirmary was only a very small Hospital with but two wards in it. At the moment, we were somewhat posed by the intimate knowledge of the place, possessed by our cross-examiner. It subsequently transpired that one of the Solicitors for the defence was a Loughborough man. It shows the importance of a witness keeping rigidly to facts. Had we presumed to exaggerate our Hospital experience by a suggestion of our having been Resident Medical Officer to a *large* Provincial Infirmary, disparaging remarks upon us, would doubtless have followed our examiner's thus shrewdly eliciting the fact of the *small* size of the Hospital alluded to.

²⁸⁶ "The time during which life can be supported under entire abstinence from food or drink . . . may be greatly prolonged . . . by a moist condition of the surrounding atmosphere, which obstructs the exhalation of liquid from the body."—"Principles of Human Physiology," by W. B. Carpenter, M.D., F.R.S., 7th edition, 1869, p. 98.

Vide page 51; "Comments," p. 247, and Notes ³⁹⁶ ⁴²³*

²⁸⁷ Vide Note ²⁸⁰.

²⁸⁸ This assumption on the part of Mr. Clifton was evidently based on the *apparent* contradiction between the answer he had just obtained from us, and the following words in our letter to *The Times*, Sept. 7th, 1869:—"Being made an object of curiosity, sympathy, and profit is not only totally antagonistic to this girl's recovery, *but also renders it extremely difficult for a medical man to determine how much of the symptoms is the result of a morbid perversion of will, and how much is the product of intentional deceit.*"

These italicized words are perfectly consistent with the "opinion that it would not be extremely difficult for any Medical man to make up his mind as to the *diagnosis* of the case," as may be thus intelligibly exemplified:—A Medical man shall *diagnose* that a patient is suffering from Rheumatism or Neuralgia. These both are painful diseases, which *may* occur without any *visible* external symptom. *The diagnosis shall be correct*, but still, even then, it is not always

practicable for the Medical man to determine *positively*—*how much* of the *expressed pain* (the symptom) actually pertains *to the disease*, and *how much* is the *mere product of the patient's morbid or intentional imagination*.

²⁸⁹ Mr. Robert Brudenell Carter in his work on the "Pathology and Treatment of Hysteria" (1853), classes these forms of Hysteria as *tertiary*, or such paroxysms as "are designedly excited by the patient herself, through the instrumentality of voluntary recollection, and with perfect knowledge of her own power to produce them" (p. 43). "Attacks of this kind, may be distinguished from primary Hysteria, by the frequency with which they occur in the absence of any exciting cause; by their never being produced under circumstances which would expose the patient to serious discomfort, or real danger, but at a time and place discreetly chosen for the purpose; and by observing many little arrangements contrived in order to add to their effect" (p. 48). "The moral state which results from tertiary Hysteria . . . may, therefore be summed up, as an union of selfishness and deceptivity, allied in order to indulge that desire for sympathy, which is the chief motive of action, the others being only means, for attaining an end" (p. 55). "When the duplicity of Hysteria takes a larger range than is required for obtaining domestic and private sympathy, and exerts itself in an ambitious endeavour to become widely famous, it must of necessity step beyond the simulation of ordinary ailments, to do something at once fascinating and unique" (p. 58).

²⁹⁰ In cases of mental aberration, it is not usual to find a pulse of 140, without inflammatory disease, except in Epilepsy shortly after a fit, or General Paralysis in its last stage.

²⁹¹ Carter, op. cit. pp. 126-128.

²⁹² "The home of an Hysterical girl, can scarcely ever be the scene of her cure, for reasons which it is unnecessary to repeat, and it must, almost of necessity, retard the progress of her recovery."—Carter, op. cit. p. 158.

The "reasons" given by Mr. Carter at p. 105 are—The power and means a deceptive patient would have of baffling the plans of her medical attendant; and the greater difficulty arising from the interference, doubts, foolish good-nature, and improper sympathy of friends.

²⁹³ "In recent cases (of tertiary Hysteria), and with well-disposed young women, a month or two (for conducting the moral treatment), will often suffice."—Carter, op. cit. p. 148.

²⁹⁴ A few years ago, near Woodbridge, Suffolk, a woman named Elizabeth Squirrel, but nicknamed the "Shottisham Angel," pretended that, besides living without food, she was favoured with the presence of angels in her room, and received messages from God. These messages were signalled by a little tinkling bell at the head of her bed. Her father made a rare harvest from the credulous. At length, some one suggested the idea that the house should be fired, to see if the angels could prevent their special charge therein, from being consumed. So convinced were Elizabeth Squirrel and her friends that this would be carried into effect, that one night they all decamped in a very hasty flight. The "Shottisham Angel" was subsequently married.

- 294^a Magistrates.
- 295 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870.
- 296 Magistrates.
- 297 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870.
- 298 Magistrates.
- 299 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870.
- 300 Magistrates.
- 301 *Western Mail*, March 10th, 1870.
- 302 *Vide Note* ¹⁶.
- 303 Magistrates.
- 304 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870. *Vide* pp. 187-190, and Note ³⁸⁰.
- 305 *Vide Note* ⁴⁷³.
- 306 *Vide Notes* ^{453 454 456 473}.
- 307 *Vide* "Comments," p. 238.
- 308 *Vide Note* ⁴¹¹ and pp. 212-14 of "Comments."
- 309 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870.
- 310 *Vide* "Comments," pp. 198-202, 227-9, 252-8.
- 311 Magistrates.
- 312 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870.
- 313 In a recent very important contribution to the Pathology of Mental Diseases, it has been stated that in every one of the brains of thirty insane persons (*not* selected cases), changes, demonstrable by the microscope, were detected.—"On the Morbid Appearances met with in the Brains of Thirty Insane Persons." By J. B. Tuke, M.D., and W. Rutherford, M.D. London, 1870.
- 314 As a matter of fact, absorption had proceeded to a certain extent, in the omentum of Sarah Jacob. *Vide Evidence of Mr. James Thomas*, p. 151.
- 315 Dr. P. Martyn, speaking of the post-mortem appearances of "Starvation," says:—"But there is one condition of the intestines, diagnostic of Starvation—they are found not only contracted, but shrunken, and diminished in size, shortened in length, as well as in calibre, and like a mere cord, as if the canal was obliterated. . . . This condition of the bowels, after their use has ceased, and that of the foetus, before it has begun, present a resemblance that is striking and remarkable."—*Medical Times and Gazette*, March 30th, 1861, p. 344.
- 316 *Vide* "Comments," pp. 252-258.
- 317 Magistrates.
- 318 *Welshman*, March 18th, 1870.
- 319 Magistrates.
- 320 *Vide Note* ²⁴⁴.
- 321 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 18th, 1870.
- 322 *Carmarthen Journal* and *Welshman* of March 18th, 1870.
- 323 *Carmarthen Journal*, March 18th, 1870.
- 324 *Welshman*, March 18th, 1870.
- 325 *Times*, July 2nd, 1870.
- 326 *Carmarthen Journal*, July 15th, 1870.
- 327 *Welshman*, July 15th, 1870.
- 328 *Vide* "Comments," pp. 182-184, and Note 363.
- 329 *Carmarthen Journal*, July 15th, 1870.
- 330 Short-hand Notes.

³³¹ *Vide* Note ²⁰.

^{331*} Carter, *op. cit.* pp. 126-128.

³³² The practical adaptation of this assertion, is in no way affected by the fact that death *may* happen even from Hysteria. Sir Benjamin Brodie quotes cases of fatal occurrence.

³³³ "There is however, one thing common to all cases of Hysteria, and that is, a perturbed condition of the nervous system. The essential character of this morbid state, is an exaggeration of involuntary motility, and a diminution of the powers of the will; the emotional, sensational, and reflex movements are in excess, while the voluntary are defective. The outcome of such a condition, is seen in the mode of life of the hysteric patient. The will, is determined by anything rather than by judgment, while ideas, feelings, and fancies exert an undue influence. Sensations are often morbidly acute, are uncorrected by any careful discrimination, and thus they increase the evil. Reflex movements, which in health are under some control, are not only exaggerated in their individual intensity, as a part of the hysteric state, but, from the weakness of volition, are allowed to run such riot, that they pass beyond all bounds of healthy influence."—"Hysteria," by J. Russell Reynolds, M.D., F.R.C.P. (Reynolds' "System of Medicine," vol. ii. p. 320; 1868.)

³³⁴ The following extracts from the "Principles of Human Physiology," by W. B. Carpenter, M.D., F.R.S., &c., 7th edition, 1869 (London: Churchill), will afford the reader the most recent physiological views on this subject:—

"The Cerebro-Spinal Apparatus of Man, the Cerebro-Spinal Axis, consists of the Spinal Cord, the Medulla Oblongata, and the Sensory Ganglia" (p. 513).

"The Spinal Cord, is a conductor of nervous force between the nerve-trunks, and the brain, and is also itself an independent centre of nervous power" (p. 573).

"There can be little doubt that the habitual movements of locomotion, and others which have become 'secondarily automatic,' may be performed by Man (*under particular circumstances*) through the agency of the Spinal Cord alone, under the guidance and direction of the Sensorial centres, or even without such guidance, *the required condition being, that the influence of the Cerebrum* (brain) *shall be entirely withdrawn*" (p. 590). Locomotion occurring during sound sleep; certain acts done in the temporary unconsciousness of disease; are cited as examples by Dr. Carpenter, who continues:—"Such acts as these, add great strength to the probability, that when the Cerebral power is not suspended, but merely directed into another channel, as in the states of Reverie or Abstraction, and the attention is entirely drawn off from the movements of locomotion, the continuance of these is due to the independent automatic action of the Spinal Cord, the *direction* being given to them by the Sensory Ganglia" (p. 591). "Under the term Sensory Ganglia, may be comprehended that assemblage of ganglionic masses in the human Cerebrum, some lying along the base of the skull, and some deeper in the substance of the brain. In these bodies, the nerves of the special senses—Taste, Hearing, Sight, and Smell—have their central termination; and into them may be traced certain fibres apparently the central terminations of the

nerves of Touch or Common Sensation (p. 514). "Now, although every segment of the Spinal Cord, and every one of the Sensory Ganglia, may be considered, in common with the Cerebrum, as a true and independent centre of nervous power, *yet this independence is only manifested when these organs are separated from each other, either structurally—by actual division; or functionally—by the suspension of the activity of other parts.* In their state of perfect integrity, and complete functional activity, they are all (at least in Man) in such subordination to the Cerebrum, that they only minister to its actions, except in so far as they are subservient to the maintenance of the organic functions, as in the automatic acts of breathing and swallowing. *With regard to every other action, the Will, if it possesses its due predominance, can exercise a determining power, keeping in check every automatic impulse, and repressing the promptings of emotional excitement*" (p. 516).

"In the state of entire functional activity of the nervous centres of Man however, there can be no doubt that the operation of the Sensory Ganglia is entirely subordinated to that of the Cerebrum; and that it furnishes an essential means of connexion between the actions of the Cerebrum on the one hand, and those of the organs of Sense and Motion on the other, by the combination of which, the Mind is brought into relation with the external world" (p. 611).

"There is very strong physiological evidence that the Sensory Ganglia are not merely the instruments whereby our voluntary movements are directed and controlled, in virtue of the guiding sensations which they furnish, but that they are actually the immediate centres of the motor influence which excites muscular contractions, in obedience to impulses transmitted downwards by the Cerebrum" (p. 614).

"To sum up then, we seem justified in concluding, that the *Cranio-spinal Axis* of Man and other Vertebrata,—consisting of the Sensory Ganglia, Medulla Oblongata and Spinal Cord, is (like the chain of cephalic and ventral ganglia of Articulata with which it is homologous) the immediate instrument of *all sensorial and motor changes*; that by its sole and independent action, are produced all those movements which are ranked as *automatic or instinctive*, these being performed in response to external impressions, which may or may not affect the consciousness; but that when acting in subordination to the Cerebrum, the Cranio-spinal Axis transmits upwards to it, the influence of Sensorial changes, and receives from it, the downward impulses which it directs automatically into the appropriate channel for the execution of the movements which the Mind has directed" (p. 618).

"The general result of pathological investigation is, that the Cerebrum is the instrument of all those psychical operations, which we include under the general term *Intellectual*, whilst it also affords, in part at least, the instrumental conditions of *Emotional* states; and that all those muscular movements which result from *voluntary* determinations, or which are directly consequent upon *emotional* excitement, have their origin in its vesicular (grey) substance, though the motor impulse is immediately furnished by the Cerebro-spinal apparatus upon which the Cerebrum plays" (p. 647).

³³⁵ The argument of Mr. Hovell, on the Pathology of this Protean

malady, is as follows:—"The nutrition of the body is not affected, mental power is not impaired, although it may be suspended, innervation is deranged, for the generation of nerve-power is feeble, and its distribution is irregular; but it is the sympathetic, the vaso-motory system, the moral power, that is at fault; either from exhaustion of the physical strength, or the sensori-motor centres, or because, perhaps most frequently, the purposes of life are in some respect disappointed, and the paresis of disappointment, not only saps the strength, but,—at the same time that it brings low the nervous system, also renders it peculiarly liable to irritable excitability from opposing and aggravating causes."—"Medicine and Psychology: the Annual Address to the Hunterian Society, 1866." By Dennis De Berdt Hovell, F.R.C.S.E.

In answer to this opinion, Dr. Russell Reynolds says (op. cit. p. 321):—"But the primary fact in that condition which we term Hysteria, would seem to lie behind all that is referred to in those considerations, and to consist in that special morbid change of the nervous centres, which either gives to emotion an undue influence, or removes the limitations of its action. . . . There is nothing to prove that the vaso-motor, or sympathetic system of nerve-fibres is primarily at fault; on the contrary, it often appears that the secretions, and the general nutrition, are late in suffering; and that the earliest departure from health is to be found in the disturbed balance of mental and emotional operations," &c. &c.

³³⁶ Although a large proportion of the organs, on which the sympathetic system of Nerves operates, are supplied by it alone, this answer, in our desire for brevity, was not quite anatomically correct:—"The two systems of fibres are so blended with each other, that it is impossible to isolate them."—Dr. Carpenter, op. cit. p. 519.

In physiological strictness, the answer should have been:—"That portion of the nervous system which controls and directs the functions of Nutrition and Secretion, independently of the brain and spinal cord."

³³⁷ We now think this answer was insufficient to convey to the mind of the learned Counsel, that in these cases, Medical men consider "the perversion of will," to be morbid in character and causation, and consequently more or less beyond the control of the patient.

³³⁸ *Vide* Note ³³⁴.

³³⁹ Short-hand Notes. This last answer, as is shown by the context, simply refers to such of the statements of the parents as informed us of the existence of Hysteria (*the Disease*). We of course did not *assume* that there was any "truth" in the nonsense we were told, referable to the "Fasting," and the suspension of certain of the natural functions.

³⁴⁰ "Since even in such cases, we repeat, we have to determine in every individual case, not that death from Starvation *must have*, but that it *has*, occurred."—Casper, op. cit. p. 32.

³⁴¹ Op. cit. p. 32.

³⁴² Short-hand Notes.

³⁴³ The importance of examining the Spinal column, is well illus-

trated in the following extract respecting the post-mortem examination of the body of the Italian Boy murdered by Bishop and Williams in London, in 1831:—"The boy's teeth had been removed for sale to a dentist, and with this exception, there were no external marks of violence on any part of the body. The internal organs were carefully examined; there was no trace of injury or poison. Mr. Mayo, who had a peculiar way of standing very upright, with his hands in his breeches pockets, said, with a kind of lisp he had—'By Jove! the boy died a natural death.' Mr. Partridge and Mr. Beaman, however, suggested that the Spine had not been examined, and after a short consultation, it was determined to examine the Spinal column. Upon this being done, one or more of the upper cervical vertebræ were found fractured. 'By Jove!' said Mr. Mayo, 'this boy was murdered.'"—"Autobiographical Recollections of the Profession." (No. xi.) By J. F. Clarke, M.R.C.S. *Medical Times and Gazette*, March 11th, 1871, p. 284.

³⁴⁴ Short-hand Notes.

^{344*} *Vide* Note ³⁷².

³⁴⁵ *Welshman*, July 15th, 1870.

³⁴⁶ *Carmarthen Journal*, July 22nd, 1870.

³⁴⁷ *Vide* Note ⁵³¹.

³⁴⁸ *Vide* "Comments," pp. 199-201.

³⁴⁹ *Vide* Note ³³⁴.

³⁵⁰ *Vide* Note ³⁴³.

³⁵¹ *Vide* "Comments," pp. 198-202, 227-9, 252-8.

³⁵² *Vide* "Comments," pp. 233-4, 243-7; and Notes ⁴²⁰ and ^{482*}.

³⁵³ Short-hand Notes.

³⁵⁴ *Carmarthen Journal*, July 22nd, 1870.

³⁵⁵ *Vide* Note ³³².

³⁵⁶ Casper, op. cit. p. 32.

³⁵⁷ "Suppression and retention of urine, are very common hysterical phenomena; the secretion being drunk, or otherwise concealed. . . . Constipation is frequently caused by voluntary effort, which postpones for a time, the demand for relief. When associated with feigned abstinence, such evacuations as do take place, are usually concealed; but impostures of this kind, cannot be carried on without the collusion of other persons, and are immediately detected when this is effectually guarded against."—Carter, op. cit. p. 73-4.

³⁵⁸ *Carmarthen Journal*, July 22nd, 1870.

^{358*} Misfeasance is the Legal term for acting improperly. Non-feasance is "the omission to do what ought to be done."—Cunningham's "Law Dictionary," A.D. 1771.

³⁵⁹ We have not the forensic knowledge, of course, to even attempt an analysis of the Legal subtleties which differentiate acts of Commission, and acts of Omission. We therefore, with this explanation, and apology to our possible legal readers, simply and without comment, quote from recognised Legal Authorities the following observations apparently (to us) bearing on Mr. Giffard's exposition of the Law. (The italics are our own.)

(A.) Russell, on "Crimes" (Greaves), 4th edit. 1865, states—"OF MURDER," vol. i. p. 675:—"If a man, however, does an act, *the pro-*

bable consequence of which, may be and, eventually is, death, such killing may be Murder."

"OF MANSLAUGHTER," vol. i. sect. iv. p. 849. "On cases where the killing takes place in the prosecution of some other criminal, unlawful, or wanton act":—

"If . . . the act was done heedlessly, and incautiously, it will be Manslaughter. . . . There are many acts so heedless and incautious, as necessarily to be deemed unlawful and wanton, though there may not be any express intent to do mischief; and the party committing them, and causing death by such conduct, will be guilty of Manslaughter."

(Here follow details of certain of such acts.)

But it seems that in cases of this kind, the guilt would rather depend upon one or other of these circumstances—*either that the act might probably breed danger*, or that it was done with a mischievous intent.

Sect. v. p. 856. "Cases where the killing takes place in consequence of some lawful act, being criminally or improperly performed, or of some act performed without lawful authority":—

"An act not unlawful in itself, may be performed in a manner so criminal and *improper*, or by an authority so defective, as to make the party performing it, and in the prosecution of his purpose causing the death of another person, guilty of Murder. And as the circumstances of the case may vary, the party so killing another, may be guilty only of the extenuated offence of Manslaughter."

Vol. i. p. 878, Note. . . . "If a person's death be occasioned by the neglect of several, they are all guilty of Manslaughter."

(B.) Stephen's "General View of the Criminal Law of England," 1863, chap. iv. p. 117, states, under heading, "INTENTS TO MANSLAUGHTER":—"(*f*) Negligence in doing a lawful act, or an unlawful act not amounting to Felony."

(C.) Roscoe's "Digest of the Law of Evidence in Criminal Cases," by Dr. Power, 6th edit. 1862, p. 642, states, under "PROOF IN CASES OF KILLING IN THE PERFORMANCE OF AN UNLAWFUL OR *NEGLIGENT* ACT":—"If in doing an unlawful act, death ensue in consequence of the negligence of the party, but without any intent to do bodily harm, it is Manslaughter, at the least."

³⁶⁰ Coroner. *Cambria Daily Leader*, December 24th, 1869.

³⁶¹ Rev. W. Thomas—Coroner.

³⁶² *Carmarthen Journal*, March 4th, 1870.

³⁶³ *Carmarthen Journal*, March 4th, 1870. Mr. Giffard, in his opening speech at the Trial (p. 135) also made a similarly erroneous assertion, not warranted by the evidence. He said:—"There were four nurses watching them, not permitting them to come near the bed, not permitting them to carry any food," &c. &c.

³⁶⁴ Magistrates.

³⁶⁵ Sister Clinch—Coroner.

³⁶⁶ *Carmarthen Journal*, March 11th, 1870.

³⁶⁷ *Carmarthen Journal*, March 18th, 1870.

³⁶⁸ *Lancet*, July 23rd, 1870, p. 133.

³⁶⁹ *Daily Telegraph*, March 17th, 1870.

³⁷⁰ *Medical Times and Gazette*, October 8th, 1870, p. 431.

³⁷¹ *Carmarthen Journal*, July 22nd, 1870.

³⁷² The following observations of Lord Chancellor Hatherley, on a case where coverture had been successfully pleaded, fully corroborate Mr. Giffard's exposition of the Law:—

“HOUSE OF LORDS—FRIDAY, MARCH 10, 1871.

“MARTHA TORPEY.

“Earl Stanhope called attention to the acquittal of this person for the robbery of Messrs. London and Ryder, and asked the Lord Chancellor whether he had in contemplation, any measure to remedy the present state of the Law.

“Lord Cairns also asked whether evidence had been laid before the Jury, of Martha Torpey's statement to the Magistrate, that she had been the temptress of her husband, and the contriver of the plot.

“The Lord Chancellor agreed that there had been a gross miscarriage of Justice, but he considered that it had arisen from the fault of the Jury. No doubt there was a legal presumption that, with certain exceptions, a woman committing a crime, in the presence of her husband, must be taken to be acting under his coercion and control. It might be quite possible to impugn the expediency of that presumption; but it was one that dated beyond the Norman Monarchy, for it was to be found in the Laws of Edgar, King of the West Saxons, so that it had had a place in our Jurisprudence for a thousand years. It was however, subject to an important qualification, and it was a presumption which might be rebutted by evidence; and in this case, evidence had been given proving, in the clearest possible manner, that Martha Torpey had acted in the absence of her husband, and thus when she was beyond the possibility of his control. If the law had been explained to the Jury in the bare way in which it was stated in the newspapers to have been done, there would have been some reason to blame the learned Judge who presided at the Trial. He (Lord Hatherley) had from the first, been quite sure that that could not possibly have been the case, for the Recorder was a Judge of very great experience, eminent for his calm judgment, and a thorough master of the Law which he had to administer. He had however, felt it right to communicate with Mr. Russell Gurney, and had learned from him, not only that the Law was laid before the Jury in the fullest and clearest manner, but that their attention had been pointedly called to two important circumstances which had been proved in evidence—namely, that the prisoner, acting by herself, had forged the letter of introduction, and had sent away her servant, on a false errand. It was therefore impossible for the Jury to have acquitted her, if they had exercised a fair judgment on the case before them. As to the point to which Lord Cairns had referred, that had been kept back, by whose fault he could not ascertain, but certainly not by that of the Prosecuting Counsel, for it had not been communicated to him. There had been then, a very great failure of justice, and he was afraid the reason was one that could not be remedied; for he did not see how they could prevent a female prisoner from taking her trial, well dressed, and with a baby in her arms. The noble Lord proceeded, amidst the

laughter of the House, to describe the case respecting which Mr. Peter Taylor had that evening interrogated the Home Secretary, and went on to say that in Scotland, as he had been informed by Lord Colonsay, there was no presumption either way, but the Jury was left to infer, or not to infer, directly from the evidence. One of the very few cases in which a wife had been acquitted on that ground, was that of Burke and Hare. Burke had a wife, who was necessarily cognisant of the dreadful crimes of her husband, but the Jury felt that, living as she was, in the house with two such men, she could not be considered a free agent. After all, the question was but a branch of a very large subject—the law of husband and wife—and it would be hardly right to alter the law in a hurry on account of a particular case. It was quite right that the law should be deliberately considered, and that they should come to some conclusion upon it; but at that moment he could not say what that conclusion should be (cheers.)”—*Daily News*, March 11th, 1871.

In the House of Commons on March 31st, 1871, the Attorney-General (Sir Robert Collier) gave the following answer to a similar question by Mr. O. Morgan:—The Attorney-General said, no doubt, as a general rule, the House should be careful not to challenge the verdicts of juries; but still, in a case in which there was so much reason to think that there had been a gross miscarriage of justice, it seemed to him necessary to consider whether the law required alteration. If the Recorder had not placed the presumption of law before the jury, there would have been no pretence for the verdict which they found. The evidence, however, was all on one side; and the Recorder, while putting before the jury the presumption of law, stated that that presumption was rebutted by the facts of the case, which showed that the woman took an active part in the robbery, and was a perfectly free agent. No doubt the presumption of law was originally founded on a principle of justice, which lay deep in our most fundamental notions of justice, and which still existed in the codes of all civilized nations, namely, that a person was not answerable criminally, for an act done under compulsion, if there was a total inability to resist. But our law went beyond that, and laid down the principle with respect to a particular class of felonies, in which the husband and wife acted together, that the wife must have acted under the compulsion of her husband; at all events, unless strict proof were given that she did not. He very much doubted whether that presumption of law could now be supported. The reason for it was stated by Sir Robert Brook, writing in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, in the curious mixture of French and Latin, common amongst the law-writers of the period, to the effect that “the wife won’t dare to contradict her baron.” If it were true in the reign of Queen Elizabeth that no wife ever ventured to contradict her husband, the times had certainly somewhat changed, and it might now be said that there were many husbands who dare not contradict their wives (laughter). As Blackstone put it, it was probable that this old presumption of law, was traceable to the Northern nations, among whom the same rule applied to wives and slaves, whose conditions were perhaps not very different. In such a state of society, the presumption might have been a fair one, and have worked well; but it was entirely in-

applicable at a period when the position of women had been so completely altered (hear, hear). If the presumption were good as between husband and wife, it was equally good as between father and son, and between master and servant. That position might be illustrated by a reference to *Oliver Twist*, where Oliver was represented as being forced to enter a house through an aperture too small for the admission of a man. That was clearly a case of coercion, and the boy, according to the law of all civilized countries, would be held not guilty. In all these cases, the question was, whether the accused was a free agent, or was entirely overpowered by the will of another. If the doctrine of presumption were tenable, it should apply to cases of treason and murder, as well as to misdemeanours. He did not speak on that subject on behalf of the Cabinet, not being authorized to do so; but he thought his hon. and learned friend had made out a case for seriously considering whether the present unreasonable presumption of law should be continued (hear, hear.)—*Daily News*, April 1st, 1871.

³⁷³ *Law Times*, March 12th, 1870.

³⁷⁴ *Vide* Text, pp. 109, 150-1, 174; Comments, pp. 248-58.

³⁷⁵ An assertion quite unwarranted by the Evidence.

³⁷⁶ *Vide* "Comments," pp. 182-3; and Mr. Fitzwilliams's letter, p. 190.

³⁷⁷ This argument of the *Law Times*, is in direct opposition to the argument used by the same paper, *from the same Facts*, on March 12th, 1870. *Vide* "Comments," pp. 181-2.

³⁷⁸ *Law Times*, July 23rd, 1870, p. 220.

³⁷⁹ *Law Times*, July 30th, 1870, p. 256.

³⁸⁰ We believe the following was the first on the subject, in the *Law Times* of March 5th, 1870, p. 349:—

"THE CASE OF THE WELSH FASTING-GIRL.

"The Government has properly determined that this case shall be fully and fairly investigated. The father of the child, awaits his Trial for Manslaughter, because he would not authorize the forcible administration of food to the dying patient. This charge is founded on the assumption that Starvation was the cause of death. But another cause is assigned by many eminent Physiologists—namely, Excitement, produced by the watching to which she was subjected, not by her father, but by the Doctors, who advised and directed it. That this also may be fairly tried, proceedings have been instituted against them. An experienced London Solicitor has been appointed by the Home Office to get up the case, and Mr. Giffard, Q.C., will conduct the prosecution. It is not yet known by whom the Defence will be undertaken. It should be by a man having much scientific knowledge, and especially an acquaintance with physiology. Mr. Grove, Q.C., precisely answers to this requirement. Rumour names him; but will he accept the brief? A subscription has been opened to defray the costs of this great scientific conflict, for into that, it will resolve itself; but the fund will not suffice, we fear, for sending down the Solicitor-General, or some Advocate having the qualification of knowledge of this special branch of science, which in such case will be more needed than knowledge of law.

"But besides qualified Counsel to state clearly, and argue fully, the

physiological question on which the case will turn, the evidence will be required, of distinguished experts, physicians and professors, to inform the jury, of what Science says upon the point at issue. Unfortunately these cannot be had in Wales; they must be brought from the metropolis, at great sacrifice of time, and at proportionate cost. The defendants will have to fight the public purse, and therefore cannot hope to confront experienced witnesses on one side of the question, with experienced witnesses on the other side of it, and justice may not unlikely fail, through this obstacle to its administration.

"In such circumstances, would it not be more just to all concerned, and in the end less costly to the public, to move the case into the Queen's Bench by *certiorari*, so that it may be tried in London, before the Lord Chief Justice, who is singularly qualified to deal with such a case, and a special jury, by whom only, the issues could be properly comprehended, and where the ablest experts on both sides could be examined with little inconvenience to themselves, or expense to the public, and moreover where a choice of advocates best fitted to deal with a purely scientific inquiry may be had, without incurring the ruinous cost of special retainers.

"A glance at the facts, will show the righteousness of such a course.

"When after eight days of watching, that prevented the possibility of food being conveyed to her, the child died, everybody leaped to the conclusion that want of food was the cause of death—in other words, that she died from Starvation. The charge of Manslaughter by negligence, was at once preferred against the father. The Medical evidence by which it was sustained, proceeded on the same assumption, and was not subjected to any such cross-examination as would suffice to raise a reasonable doubt of this conclusion, and he was committed for trial without a hearing of what might be said on the other side. Then it was, that the Physiologists, looking at the case calmly, and considering the appearance of the body on the post-mortem, began to question seriously, the conclusion that the death had been produced by the cause so hastily assigned. Hence the demand for this further investigation, the justice of which has been so creditably recognised by Mr. Bruce, but which, we repeat, can only be satisfactorily conducted by trying the case in London, with a special jury."

³⁸¹ "The Cases of the Welsh Fasting-Girl and her Father. On the Possibility of Long-continued Abstinence from Food, by W. M. Wilkinson; with Supplementary Remarks by J. J. Garth Wilkinson." London, 1870.

³⁸² *Law Times*, March 5th and 12th, 1870.

³⁸³ July 23rd, 1870, p. 220.

^{383*} In 1847, Prof. Claude Bernard prefaced one of his lectures, repeating the words on a similar occasion in 1869, with this statement:—"Scientific Medicine did not exist."—*Pall Mall Gazette*, vol. i. 1869, p. 1029; "Révue des Cours Scientifiques," 19 Mars, 1870; "Method and Medicine," by Balthazar W. Foster, M.D.

³⁸⁴ *Times*, Sept. 7th, 1869. "The Fasting-Girl of Wales."

³⁸⁵ Certain cases of Malingering at the Hospital for Sick Children, have been recently reported (*Lancet*, June 17th, 1871). They will well repay an attentive perusal. The ages of the children were from seven to eleven years.

³⁸⁶ *Lancet*, Sept. 18th, 1869, p. 415.

³⁸⁷ *Western Mail*, Dec. 18th, 1869.

³⁸⁸ *British Medical Journal*, Dec. 25th, 1869, p. 680.

³⁸⁹ *Vide Note* ³³³.

³⁹⁰ "Practice of Medicine," vol. i., art. "Hysteria," p. 474, by Thomas Hawkes Tanner, M.D., 1869.

^{390*} *Vide Note* ⁵¹.

³⁹¹ A remarkable case of Ecstasy, accredited by *apparently* good evidence, is recorded in "Macmillan's Magazine" for April, 1871, p. 488. ("Louise Lateau, a Biological Study," by Geo. E. Day, M.D., F.R.S.) The original Memoir is:—"Louise Lateau de Bois d'Haine, sa Vie, ses Extases, ses Stigmates. Étude Médicale, par le Dr. F. Lefebvre. Louvain, 1870." Leaders on the case may be found in the *Lancet*, April 22nd, 1871, p. 543, and in the *British Medical Journal* of May 6th, 1871.

³⁹² "We shall thus have a natural order, with pure Insanity at the one end, and Epilepsy traceable to organic lesion, at the other. In the middle, will lie Ecstasy, Catalepsy, and Hysteria, with many a blank between, for the anonymous transitional forms. I do not think we can spare any of these names, and instead of clubbing them together, as some would fain do, under the common head of 'Hysteria,' it would appear more useful to divide that disease, according as its emotional, anæsthetic, hyperæsthetic, or convulsive phenomena are most prominent."—Reynolds's "System of Medicine," vol. ii. 1868, p. 107. Article on Catalepsy, by Thomas King Chambers, M.D., F.R.C.P.

Dr. J. Crichton Browne, Medical Director, West Riding Asylum, and Lecturer on Mental Diseases to the Leeds School of Medicine, is of opinion that Hysterical Mania is not a mere exaggeration of the Hysterical state; but that the combination of the insane temperament with the hysterical temperament, is necessary to determine the development of Hysterical Mania.—"Clinical Lectures," &c., *British Medical Journal*, July 29th, 1871, p. 113.

³⁹³ Anæsthesia. Diminution or Loss of the Sense of Feeling.

³⁹⁴ "Principles of Human Physiology," by Wm. B. Carpenter, M.D., F.R.S., 7th edit. 1869, p. 99.

³⁹⁵ *Op. cit.* p. 984.

³⁹⁶ Horn's "Description of Dover," 2nd edit. 1819, p. 24. Dr. Carpenter (*op. cit.* p. 94), referring to this case, states that the animal "reduced in weight from 160 lbs. to 40 lbs., or no less than 75 per cent." He continues:—"This extraordinary prolongation of life in this case, may be attributed to the retention of the heat of the body by the non-conducting power of the chalk, and to the retention of its moisture, by the saturation of the air in its immediate vicinity, and restriction of its movements."

³⁹⁷ *Vide Note* ².

³⁹⁸ *Vide* letter of Mr. W. Howitt at p. 50 of 3rd edition of Messrs. Wilkinson's pamphlet "On the Possibility of Long-continued Abstinence from Food," 1870.

³⁹⁹ *British Medical Journal*, May, 28th, 1870, p. 544.

^{399*} Semeiology. The branch of Pathology which treats of the Symptoms of Disease.

⁴⁰⁰ *Vide* Note ²⁰.

⁴⁰¹ This theory is presumptively corroborated by the evidence of John Daniel, who stated (p. 73) that the father threatened to kick him, for offering the girl food,—“because the child got worse every time that food was offered to her;” and when again, three hours before her death (p. 77), Daniel told the father that it would be better to moisten her lips with cold water, Evan Jacob retorts:—“I cannot venture to do that, as I have given permission to Mr. Davies to do so, and he would not do so.” In answer to Anne Jones, when she suggested a drop of brandy-and-water, “the mother, in the father’s presence, said that the girl could not bear the sight, smell, or mention of food, and that it made her faint” (p. 75). When Mr. Davies suggested that the father should give the girl some brandy-and-water, he replied:—“No; he had not offered her anything for two years, and she always got ill when it was offered” (p. 76).

⁴⁰² Mr. Giffard, at the Trial, made use of this same theory in his reply.

⁴⁰³ A very admirable lecture delivered by John W. Ogle, M.D., F.R.C.P., Physician to St. George’s Hospital, on this peculiar form of Hysteria or “Temper Disease,” as it was graphically called by the late Dr. Marshall Hall, has lately appeared in the *British Medical Journal*, July 16th, 1870, p. 57. “An hysterical girl, aged twenty, despite every form of treatment, ‘Still refused food, or vomited what was given her.’ On November 6th, 1869, whilst the girl was apparently suffering in the same manner, the Queen passed the Hospital, on her way to open Blackfriars Bridge. She rose in bed to watch her out of the window, having been thought utterly unable to move, owing to pain.” On December 25th, the following letter in the girl’s handwriting, addressed to another patient in the same ward, was picked up on the floor:—“My Dear Mrs. Evens,—I was very sorry you should take the trouble of cutting me such a nice peice of bread-and-butter yesterday. I would of taken it, but all of them saw you send it, and then they would of made enough to have talked about; but I should be very glad if you will cut me a nice peice of crust and put it in a peice of paper and send it or else bring it, so as they do not see it, for they all watch me very much, and I should take to be your friend, and you to be mine. Mrs. Winslow (the Nurse) is going to Chapel I will make it up with you when I can get as far. Do not send it if you cannot spare it. Good-by and God bless you.” Although she prevaricated about this letter, she appears to have thenceforth got gradually well, and “one day walked out of the Hospital, and left it altogether.” She subsequently wrote, “expressing her regret at having ‘gone on as she did.’”

⁴⁰⁴ *Op. cit.* p. 85.

^{404*} In any case however, and considering the part she had for two years to perform, Sarah Jacob’s Mind could not have been an idle one.

⁴⁰⁵ Magistrates.

⁴⁰⁶ Necroscopy. The examination of the Body after Death. *Vide* Note ³⁴³.

⁴⁰⁷ *Carmarthen Journal*, July 22nd, 1870.

⁴⁰⁸ *Vide* Note ³³².

⁴⁰⁹ Mr. John Hughes—Short-hand notes.

⁴¹⁰ Magistrates.

⁴¹¹ "We speak strongly, because the temptation to the exercise of fatal kindness, is great; and in practice we in fact, find for one hysterical woman who has been treated harshly, at least twenty whose disease is aggravated by injudicious sympathy."—*British and Foreign Medico-Chirurgical Review*, October, 1870. "Review on Inman's Restoration of Health," p. 386.

"A Stern Nurse . . . will keep the complaint wonderfully in check."—Sir Thomas Watson, Bart., "Principles and Practice of Physic," Lecture xxxviii. on Hysteria, 3rd edition, p. 698.

"Kindness, firmness, and obvious recognition of 'tender points,' with judicious, sympathetic, and wise regard to them, may do much to avoid future evil; and sometimes the qualities of mind which will produce such treatment, *may* be met with in a parent, a sister, or a governess." . . .

"But the physician should see that he manages his patient, and that all that he has attempted to effect, is not undone by frightened relatives, or anxious friends."—"Reynolds's System of Medicine," 1868, Article on Hysteria, p. 328.

Vide Note ²⁹².

⁴¹² *Vide* p. 26.

⁴¹³ Guy's "Principles of Forensic Medicine," 3rd edition, 1868, p. 248.

⁴¹⁴ *Ibid.* p. 250.

Vide also Holmes's "System of Surgery," vol. i. 1860, p. 706. Article "Collapse," by William Scovell Savory, F.R.S.

⁴¹⁵ *British Medical Journal*, Jan. 8th, 1870, p. 27. "A continuance of the Case of the Welsh Fasting-Girl, with an Account of the Post-Mortem Appearances," by Thomas Lewis, M.D., Carmarthen.

⁴¹⁶ Sir Thomas Watson, Bart., *ant. cit.*, "Death by Inanition," p. 65.

⁴¹⁷ Guy, *op. cit.* p. 247.

⁴¹⁸ Sir Thomas Watson, Bart., *ant. cit.* p. 65. *Vide* also p. 227-8 of this History.

⁴¹⁹ *Op. cit.* p. 95.

⁴²⁰ This point is pretty fully gone into, in a paper on "Starvation," by Dr. P. Martyn, *Medical Times and Gazette*, March 30th, 1861, p. 344.

The following authentic instances of Chronic Starvation, aided though both were by more or less mental anxiety and physical exertion, and one by exposure to the rigours of an Arctic Climate, afford nevertheless very striking examples of the persistence in their integrity, of the intellectual faculties of the sufferers, during even a prolonged period of compulsory Inanition.

The first is the Case of Death by Famine, of Captain Allen Gardiner, and a band of Missionaries, in 1851. The following extracts are from a Diary found in a cavern at Spaniard's Harbour, Picton Island, Terra del Fuego:—

"July 4th.—Have been seven weeks on short allowance.

"July 22nd.—Reduced to living on mussels, and feel the want of food, and sometimes the craving of hunger is distressing to them.

"July 28th.—They are all extremely weak and helpless.

"August 14th.—Captain Gardiner takes to his bed.

"August 23rd.—John Erwin dies.

"August 26th.—J. Bryant dies.

"John Pearce, the remaining boatman, is cast down at the loss of his comrades, and wandering in his mind.

"September 3rd.—Mr. Maidment has never recruited from that day of bodily and mental exertion (when he buried John Erwin and J. Bryant), but with no slight exertion and fatigue in his weak state, he cut two forked sticks for the Captain to use as crutches, without which, the Captain could not possibly reach the boat. 'We set out together, but soon found that I had no strength to proceed, and was obliged to return before reaching the brook, over our own beach. Mr. Maidment was so exhausted yesterday, that he did not rise from his bed until noon. I have not seen him since, consequently I tasted nothing yesterday.'—Captain Gardiner *continues*, I have 'no pain, or even cravings of hunger, though excessively weak, scarcely able to turn in my bed—at least, it is very great exertion.'

"September 4th.—Mr. Maidment had no doubt died, and the Captain continues:—'Under these circumstances, it was a merciful Providence that he left the boat, as I could not have removed the body. He left a little peppermint-water, which he had mixed, and it has been a great comfort to me, but there was no other to drink.' The Captain, however, 'was enabled to get out and scoop up a sufficient supply (? of water) from some that trickled down at the stern of the boat, by means of one of my india-rubber over-shoes.'

"September 5th.—For four previous days, he had had no bodily food, but was 'without any feelings of hunger or thirst.' This day's diary not written so plainly as on previous day.

"September 6th.—Diary 'written in pencil, the whole being very indistinct, and some parts quite obliterated.' On this day Captain Gardiner appears to have died, retaining his mental faculties to the last."—*Annual Register*, 1852, p. 473.

The second case is as follows:—In Franklin's Overland Arctic Expedition in 1820–21 (accompanied by Richardson, Hood, Back, and Hepburn) down the Coppermine River, it appears that by the 10th August "the provisions would only hold out for a few days, and the supplies derived from the hunter's rifle, were now becoming fearfully precarious." On September 1st, being overtaken by a snow-storm, and "having no means of obtaining either food or fuel, they were forced to remain two days huddled together under their blankets, with the temperature at 20° Three miserable weeks passed away, during which time they obtained from the resources of the country, only five days' provision, their sole supply for the rest of the time being a kind of lichen or moss, called by the Canadians *tripe de roche*, or rock tripe, without which, they must undoubtedly have perished of actual starvation." On October 5th, the party divided, Dr. Richardson, Hood, and Hepburn keeping together, and Captain Franklin with the remainder. They had to live on the *tripe de roche*,

shreds of their shoes, old deer-skins, bones from the ashes. By 29th October, certain of them had become emaciated and gaunt, with hollow sepulchral voices. By November 6th, we are told of the others, with emaciated figures, ghastly countenances, dilated eyeballs, and sepulchral voices. "The condition of the whole party now daily became worse; the hardness of the floor produced sores. After suffering acute pains of hunger all day, at night they were sated in dreams with every luxury. Their tempers grew so fretful, that the kindest expressions were received pettishly, and Captain Franklin himself admits that he became excessively peevish. Each thought the other weaker in intellect than himself, and more in need of advice and assistance."—"A Narrative of Arctic Discovery from the Earliest Period to the Present Time." By John J. Shillinglaw. (Shoberl), 1850.

⁴²¹ "The milder forms of concussion (of the brain) present the general indications of Shock, with such cerebral derangement only, as is frequently present in the latter state, and are manifested by giddiness, confusion of intellect, a tottering gait, functional disturbance of the senses, and sympathetic irritability of the stomach. In fatal concussion, if the existence of such a condition be admitted, death occurs from Shock rather than from direct injury to the brain, unless, indeed, such injury imply organic lesion, which places it out of the pale of so-called concussion."—Lectures on the Principles of Surgical Diagnosis: especially in relation to Shock and Visceral Lesions. Delivered before the Royal College of Surgeons of England by F. Le Gros Clark, F.R.C.S., London, 1870, p. 120.

Vide also "Holmes's Surgery," ant. cit. pp. 706-7.

⁴²² "1. Prostration without reaction, is marked by universal pallor and contraction of surface, shuddering, very small and rapid pulse, astoundment of the mental faculties, generally a dilated pupil, shortened respiration, dryness of the tongue and fauces; indistinctness, and at length cessation of the pulse at the wrist, stupor, oppressed and noisy respiration, coldness of the feet and hands, involuntary twitchings, relaxation of the sphincters, confirmed insensibility, stertor, and death.

"2. Prostration with excitement, is marked by the signs of languor and stupor or drowsiness in the commencement, to which, after a variable interval, succeed rigor, precordial anxiety, restlessness, jactitation; a rapid and bounding pulse, oppressed respiration with frequent attempts to sigh, flushed countenance, contracted pupil, dry heat of skin, parching thirst, rejection of liquids taken into the stomach, incoherence and wildness of expression, sometimes amounting to fierce delirium. This state is succeeded by exhaustion marked by somnolency, a profuse chilly and clammy sweat, a haggard and livid aspect, a small irregular or fluttering pulse, innumerable rapid, panting respiration, passive convulsions, hiccup, and subsultus, the stupor and stertor of apoplexy, and death."—"An Inquiry concerning that Disturbed State of the Vital Functions usually Denominated Constitutional Irritation." By Benjamin Travers, F.R.S., 1826, p. 406-7.

⁴³³ *Op. cit.*, p. 465-7.

⁴²⁴ The following extracts from the most recent work on "Shock" (F. Le Gros Clark, ant. cit.), appear to us to quite support the arguments we have used:—

"The word (Shock) seems to imply that which is the immediate sequence of a sudden cause—a collapse of energy, from a diversion of force. Yet this definition is not strictly accurate in all instances in which we meet with those symptoms that in the aggregate, constitute the vital depression of Shock. . . . The peculiarity of Shock, then, is this vital depression, generally sudden, which follows the exciting cause, whatever that may be, and which is marked by the influence thus exercised primarily on the nerve-centres, and on the heart; and, secondarily, by implication or sympathy, and necessarily through the intervention of the nerves, on the organs of respiration, of assimilation, and secretion, and on the senses. . . . As conventionally understood, the symptoms which collectively are named, or are characteristic of, Shock, are essentially those which denote that the centres or sources of nerve-force, or energy, are under the potent spell of some powerfully depressing agent, whether physical or poisonous, whereby their influence in the animal economy, is disturbed, partially suspended, or perverted.

"When the causative injury is physical, as in a crushed limb, the effect on the brain is seen in the mental and muscular prostration. The relaxed sphincters and general atony of the muscles, indicate the share of the true spinal centre in the hurt inflicted. The feeble pulse, and cold surface, measure the impression made upon the heart; whilst the clammy sweat, the arrested or disturbed secretions, the nausea or vomiting, manifest the sympathy of the assimilative organs, consequent on the more direct implication of the cyclo-ganglionic nerve-centres. The expression of the face is in unison with the general condition of the patient, betraying alarm, anxiety, and distress. But when the Shock of an injury is received directly upon the head, the symptoms are modified, but only in so far as the hurt has expended its force chiefly upon the brain. . . . Mental emotion, apart from bodily hurt, may produce similar phenomena, varying likewise in their degree, in accordance with the exciting cause"(pp. 65-67).

"Certain mental peculiarities, allied with emotional sensitiveness, and what is termed the nervous temperament, constitute the natural conditions which predispose to the severest consequences of Shock" (p. 68).

"As regards the effects of Shock at different ages, my own observation has led me to the conclusion that, in the very young, the ordinary impressibility of childhood is manifested, as under most other circumstances in which it is evoked. But the Shock is simple, uncomplicated by mental influence; and reaction is rapid in favourable cases" (p. 69).

"In my experience, Shock, *per se*, is rarely,—unless immediately,—fatal. . . . In suddenly fatal Shock, whether the hurt is received on the head or neck, or in the epigastrium, or be a consequence of general concussion of the whole frame, the arrest of the heart's beat and of respiration, are indirectly due to paralysis of the brain" (p. 80).

"In Shock, the appeal is specially and directly made to the cyclo-ganglionic system of nerves, and organic life is primarily affected; the functions of animal life are involved secondarily and by sympathy.

In lesions of the brain and spinal cord, this order of phenomena is reversed."—p. 163.

⁴²⁵ *Vide* Note ⁴²⁰.

⁴²⁶ "Handbook of the Practice of Forensic Medicine." By J. L. Casper, M.D. (New Sydenham Society Edition, 1862), vol. ii. p. 28-29.

⁴²⁷ *British Medical Journal*, April 16th, 1870, p. 384.

⁴²⁸ "The Seat and Causes of Diseases investigated by Anatomy." By John Baptist Morgagni. Translated by Wm. Cooke, M.D. London, 1822. Vol. ii. p. 7-10. Section ii., Diseases of the Stomach: *Abstinence*.—The translator of the passage (in the text) from Morgagni observes in a note to the same chapter:—"Many cases of fasting, corroborate the opinion that water contributes to protract life when there is total abstinence from food. In the *Philosophical Trans.* for 1684, it is related, that in consequence of an accident, four men were excluded from all sustenance except water for twenty-four days. Indeed, persons are said to have existed for years, upon little else than water, and yet have retained a considerable degree of strength and activity(!) In these cases, the egesta are proportionate to the innutritious quality of the ingesta. It has been recorded of a woman who, for fifty years, scarcely ever took solids, but whose chief food was whey in the summer, and milk, milk-and-water, or pure water in the winter; that for sixteen years she voided but one dejection annually(!), and that resembled a globulet of sheep-dung."—*Ed. Med. Essays*, vol. vi.—*Ed.*

In the few Mammals (rabbits) experimented on by M. Chossat, it would appear that the duration of life was sensibly greater "when water was supplied, than when it was withheld, being nearly thirteen days in one case, and ten and a half in the other." . . . The Dover pig (ant. cit. page 199), is a somewhat analogous instance:—"The air within the small hollow in which it was enclosed, would soon become sufficiently charged with moisture to resist any further evaporation." . . . "The influence of water in prolonging life, is particularly shown in reptiles, and especially in the naked-skinned Batrachia. A frog, for example, kept without water in a dry atmosphere, will lose in a few hours, from the surface of its body, so much water, that its life cannot be prolonged, and it will die of desiccation; but if placed in an atmosphere loaded with dampness, it may be kept alive for a long time, without any supply of liquid."—*British and Foreign Medical Review*, April, 1844, p. 349, art. iv: "Experimental Researches on Inanition; the Memoir to which the Prize for Experimental Physiology was adjudged by the Academy of Sciences in 1841." By Charles Chossat, M.D. &c. Paris, 1843.

⁴²⁹ *Dublin Medical Press*, Feb. 2nd, 1848.

⁴³⁰ Carpenter, op. cit. p. 98.

⁴³¹ *British and Foreign Medical Review*, April, 1844, p. 349.

⁴³² "Extraordinary Case of Abstinence." By C. F. Sloan, M.D.—*Medical Gazette*, vol. xvii. (Nov. 21, 1835), pp. 264 and 389.

⁴³³ *Times*, Feb. 6th, 1866.

⁴³⁴ Op. cit. p. 328.

The actual words in the Van Swieten's "Commentaries" (London: 1773, vol. iii. p. 260), we have referred to are:—"Others who have

obstinately refused all kinds of nourishment for six weeks, drinking nothing but a little water at intervals."

⁴³⁵ *Ibid.* p. 329.

⁴³⁶ M. Chossat, *op. cit.* The Reviewer states:—"In this (case) we have no doubt that the peculiar state of the nervous system, exerted an influence (though we do not pretend to assign the mode of its operation) upon the bodily structure in general, as we see it do in hysterical subjects."

The experiments of M. Chossat proved that the diurnal loss of weight "is usually greatest on the first day, as might be expected, from the discharge of the contents of the intestinal canal, without any corresponding ingestion of aliment. The diurnal loss then usually diminishes until past the middle period during which life is protracted; and it then commonly undergoes a sudden and remarkable increase, especially within a day or two before death."—*British and Foreign Medical Review*, *ant. cit.* p. 345.

⁴³⁷ *Vide Note* ⁴²³.

⁴³⁸ *Vide Notes* ²⁸⁶ ⁴²⁸.

⁴³⁹ Mr. Lingen's Case. *British Medical Journal*, April 16th, 1870, p. 384.

⁴⁴⁰ Dr. Sloan's Case. *Vide Note* ⁴³².

⁴⁴¹ John Taylor, aged forty-five, "was so benumbed in his lower extremities, that at length he could not raise himself up without assistance." "Starvation in a Coal Mine. Eight men and a boy shut up for eight days." By Charles Thornhill. *Medical Gazette*, vol. xvii. (Nov. 28th, 1835), p. 390.

⁴⁴² Morgagni, *op. cit.* p. 9.

⁴⁴³ Guy on Survivorship, *op. cit.* p. 254.

⁴⁴⁴ Taylor on Presumption of Survivorship, *op. cit.* p. 125.

Vide also Coote's "Practice of the Court of Probate," 5th edition, 1866, sect. iv. "Commorientes," pp. 173-177. Therein is stated: "Survivorship will be matter of evidence, or of presumption of facts indirectly bearing upon the question."

⁴⁴⁵ Guy, *op. cit.* p. 330.

⁴⁴⁶ "As might be expected from the comparative rapidity of interstitial change at the earlier periods of life, it was found by Chossat that the diurnal loss was much the most rapid in young animals, and that the duration of their lives when deprived of food was consequently far less than that of adults."—Carpenter, *op. cit.* p. 95.

⁴⁴⁷ *Op. cit.* p. 30.

⁴⁴⁸ Guy, *op. cit.* p. 329.

⁴⁴⁹ *Op. cit.* p. 330.

⁴⁵⁰ *British Medical Journal*, April 16th, 1870.

⁴⁵¹ *British Medical Journal*, January 8th, 1870.

⁴⁵² Diary. Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.

⁴⁵³ *Op. cit.* p. 95.

It may be replied, that the concluding words of this paragraph, are in direct antagonism to any such application of the theory to Sarah Jacob's case. Dr. Carpenter continues:—"Since the temperature of the body is maintained with little diminution until the fat is thus consumed, and then rapidly falls, unless it be kept up by heat externally applied." Our contention is, that could "the Welsh

Fasting-Girl" have got access to water, she need not have died until more, if not all, of her abundant fat had been consumed. The opinion of Dr. Carpenter is deduced from the experiments of M. Chossat, chiefly on Birds; and the former continues:—"It appears, however, that in Man, death supervenes much earlier when liquid, as well as solid, aliment is withheld; and the indifference observed by Chossat in the case of Birds, is probably due to the fact, that they ordinarily drink very sparingly, and eliminate very little water in their various excretions."

⁴⁵⁴ Op. cit. pp. 486-488.

By the experiments of Chossat, Schmidt, Lichtenfels, and Fröhlich, "it has been established that by continuous deprivation of food, moderately extensive diminutions of temperature may be produced, without necessarily producing thereby any intercurrent relative elevations of temperature."—On the Temperature in Diseases, by Dr. C. A. Wunderlich. Translated from the second German edition by W. Bathurst Woodman, M.D. (New Sydenham Society, 1871), pp. 135, 136. In a Note to the above paragraph, the Translator refers to the case of Sarah Jacob.

Jürgensen found that perfect abstinence even from water, maintained for thirty-three hours, did not affect the daily course or fluctuation of the temperature. The same period of perfect abstinence, however, depressed the mean daily temperature half a degree.—"Gulstonian Lectures on the Heat of the Body, delivered at the Royal College of Physicians, London, March, 1871, by Samuel J. Gee, M.D., F.R.C.P." (Lecture xi., *British Medical Journal*, March 25th, 1871.)

⁴⁵⁵ Rev. Evan Jones—Magistrates.

⁴⁵⁶ The following very recent observations by Benjamin W. Richardson, M.D., F.R.S., on Death by Drowning and Cold, are fully corroborative of the expressions in the text:—"It is clear, I think, to all who have witnessed the phenomena of Death by Drowning (in water at freezing point), that the cause of the sudden and complete collapse, is Peripheral Nervous Shock, and sudden exhaustion of the nervous centres, by direct extraction of animal heat. It would be most correct to say that the death is by Nervous Syncope; for although there is no actual loss of blood from the vessels, there is loss of the force which blood supplies, which amounts practically to the same thing. . . . The conditions of the internal organs of the body immediately after Death by Drowning in water at the freezing point . . . are fairly representative of what is always seen after this form of death. The brain and spinal cord are free of congestion, the cut surfaces free of vascular line or speck, the structure rather firm; the sinuses hold blood, but are not distended. The heart is charged with blood on the right side, but not to distension; the pulmonary artery contains blood in its trunk and branches; the left side of the heart is contracted, but contains a little blood both in the auricle and the ventricle; the arteries are empty, indicating that the final arrest of the circulation of the blood was in the pulmonary tract of blood. The abdominal organs are natural, neither congested with blood nor pale. The muscles are still flaccid, and, under the influence of heat, are capable of undergoing contraction."—*Medical Times and Gazette*, February 18th, 1871. "Lectures on Experimental and Practical Medicine," by Benjamin W. Richardson, M.D., F.R.S.

- 457 Op. cit. p. 981-3.
 458 Carpenter, op. cit. p. 488.
 459 Watson, op. cit. vol. i. p. 64.
 460 Osmosis. The intermingling of two fluids miscible with one another, when placed on the opposite sides of an animal membrane, or other porous system.
 461 Magistrates.
 462 Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.
 463 Sister Clinch—Short-hand Notes.
 464 Coroner.
 465 Short-hand Notes.
 466 "Force cannot be had without nutritive material."—*Lancet*, Feb. 21st, 1871, p. 277.
 467 Vide Note ^{282*}.
 468 *Derby Mercury*, Sept. 22nd, 1869.
 469 *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 16th, 1869.
 470 M. Chossat's researches on this point, are rather fallacious, as he endeavours to form an estimate of the respective ages of his turtle-doves, solely by their relative weights. His deductions, however, are as follows:—

	Daily proportional loss in 1000 parts.	Duration of life in days.
a Young	0·081	3·07
b Mid-aged	0·059	6·12
c Old	0·035	13·36

- 471 Magistrates.
 472 Reviewer of M. Chossat's Essay, ant. cit.

473 "THE CONDITION OF PARIS.

"(From our own Correspondent).

"Paris, Feb. 1st, 1871.

"The phenomena of partial Starvation on a large scale, is at present taking place in this once luxurious city. Several weeks have elapsed since other meat than horseflesh, has been issued—for all here are on rations. Now and then, a small quantity of preserved meat, of salted meat, of cheese, of salted fish, and so on, has been distributed; but such occasions have been few and far between, and the quantities given out, uncommonly small.

"The actual ration per head is now, and has been since the 19th January, 30 grammes of horseflesh, and 300 grammes of bread, per adult; the young and growing receiving smaller quantities than these. And to each person in pecuniary need, and unable to pay for *vin ordinaire*, the fifth part of a litre is also given. The bread consists of a mixture of wheaten flour, rye meal, rice, and oatmeal; and so that no favouritism should be shown by bakers, the whole is mixed before being issued to them. Of yeast, there is apparently none, for the loaves are heavy and unraised, in addition to being dark, and uninviting in appearance. The bread itself, however, is by no means unpleasant to the taste, although both in nature and quantity unsatisfying to the appetite.

"On such materials, and on such quantities, thousands now in

Paris have been obliged to live as best they could. The flesh of dogs, cats, rats, &c., has, it is true, been eaten. Many animals little used as food in Europe, have been similarly disposed of, including camels, elephants, kangaroos, and ostriches. Some have proved undoubtedly good, but all so dear as to have been beyond the means of the ordinary classes, even the flesh of dogs costing two, and often three francs per pound.

"The general result, then, of the present siege is, that the mass of the population of Paris is literally more than half-starved—that is, so reduced in condition, that the physical power of individuals is diminished to that extent, as compared with the usual standard. Different persons are affected in different ways. . . . To the very young, the old, to mothers nursing, to the sick, and to the wounded, the privations have been especially trying, and among each of these classes, the mortality has been great. To the otherwise healthy, low diet has, in most instances, induced more or less indigestion and irregularity. Some persons begin to complain of loss of appetite, but the great majority express a craving for a full meal of animal food. All have fallen off in flesh; some to a great extent, and even those who in other respects do not apparently suffer in health, express an inability to perform their ordinary work, without experiencing immense fatigue. The secretion of the kidneys has increased. Men complain of requiring a larger quantity of clothing than usual. Many are unable to sleep so well as usual at night, and many experience a desire for wine, that previously was strange to them. Delicate women have in several instances become attacked by what they think is 'fever and ague,' and naturally fail to obtain from quinine, the effects that beef-steaks would best produce; others are languid, and disinclined for exertion."—*Lancet*, February 11th, 1871, p. 214.

"The defective supply of nutriment caused among my patients great emaciation, profound debility, disordered respiration, and sleeplessness, particularly among those of advanced age."—"A Lunatic Asylum during the Siege of Paris," by Dr. Brierre De Boismont [addressed to Dr. Forbes Winslow], *British Medical Journal*, March 4th, 1871, p. 234.

An admirable Epitome of the Effects of Privation as seen in "Paris after the Double Siege," is recorded by Dr. Alex. Boggs, late H. M. Indian Army, in *The Lancet*, July 8th, 1871, p. 75.

⁴⁷⁴ The Rev. William Thomas, in his Depositions before the Magistrates, very properly observes:—"My reason for considering that any danger would arise from the watching, is because continued abstinence for a fortnight, would involve danger to anybody."

⁴⁷⁵ Magistrates.

⁴⁷⁶ Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.

⁴⁷⁷ Sister Clinch—Magistrates.

⁴⁷⁸ *Vide* page 55.

⁴⁷⁹ Magistrates.

⁴⁸⁰ Short-hand Notes.

⁴⁸¹ Magistrates.

⁴⁸² *Op. cit.* pp. 29–31.

^{482*} "We felt exhaustion, rather than hunger, after a few days; for the appetite at last failed from the depression of continued hunger."

—“Parisiana (the Real Truth about the Bombardment); or, the Volunteer with the Besieged Armies, 1870–71,” by Cameron Stuart Macdowall, M.R.C.S.E., &c., Indian Army, 3rd Bombay Light Cavalry, &c., &c. London: Provost & Co.

⁴⁸³ *British Medical Journal*, April 16th, 1870, p. 384.

⁴⁸⁴ Guy, *ant. cit.*

⁴⁸⁵ *Medical Gazette*, vol. xvii. (Nov. 21st, 1835), pp. 264 and 389.

⁴⁸⁶ *Medical Gazette*, vol. xvii. (Dec. 12th, 1835), pp. 390–1. “Starvation in a Coal Mine,” by Charles Thornhill, Darlaston, Staffordshire.

⁴⁸⁷ *Op. cit.* p. 330.

⁴⁸⁸ Magistrates.

⁴⁸⁹ *Cambria Daily Leader*, Dec. 14th, 1869.

⁴⁹⁰ Rev. E. Jones—Evidence at Trial.

⁴⁹¹ Magistrates.

⁴⁹² We should have certainly said that it was more consistent with the girl’s motive, to have had *no variation in her appearance*.

⁴⁹³ Short-hand Notes.

⁴⁹⁴ Dr. Robert Fowler—Magistrates.

⁴⁹⁵ Carpenter, *op. cit.* p. 487.

⁴⁹⁶ *Vide Note* ⁴⁷³.

^{496*} *Vide Note* ⁴⁷³.

⁴⁹⁷ Magistrates.

⁴⁹⁸ Carpenter, *op. cit.* p. 98.

⁴⁹⁹ *British Medical Journal*, January 8th, 1870, p. 27.

⁵⁰⁰ Anne Jones—Coroner.

⁵⁰¹ Sister Clinch—Magistrates.

⁵⁰² *British Medical Journal*, January 8th, 1870, p. 28.

⁵⁰³ Short-hand Notes.

⁵⁰⁴ *Western Mail*, Dec. 20th, 1869.

Hippocrates observes, “that a gnashing of the teeth portends madness and death, unless it has been customary from a child; but if it happens in a delirium, it is then very pernicious. Otherwise it denotes an involuntary and convulsive motion of the muscles moving the jaws, and is therefore a very bad sign.”—Van Swieten’s Commentaries upon the Aphorisms of Boerhaave, vol. ii. p. 281. London, 1773. “On a Phrensy.”

⁵⁰⁵ Sarah Attrick—Magistrates.

⁵⁰⁶ *Western Mail*, December 20th, 1869.

⁵⁰⁷ Magistrates.

⁵⁰⁸ Sister Clinch—Magistrates.

⁵⁰⁹ *Op. cit.* p. 352.

⁵¹⁰ *Op. cit.* p. 30–31.

^{510*} Subjective Sensations. Sensations which originate centrally, or in the Brain.

⁵¹¹ Dr. Daniel Donovan of Skibbereen, Co. Cork (who saw a great deal of the Irish Famine cases in 1847), states in a letter to us, dated June 25th, 1869:—“I am of opinion that had the Welsh Girl been healthy, fat, and well nourished up to the time when all solid and liquid food were denied, she could hardly have died in eight days from entire deprivation of food.”

⁵¹² Carpenter (*op. cit.* p. 277) states on the authority of Bocker:—

"The ingestion of large quantities of water, diminishing the frequency of the pulse."

⁵¹³ *Vide* Note ⁴³².

⁵¹⁴ Guy, *op. cit.* p. 603.

Carpenter also states (*op. cit.* p. 273, note):—"Carbonic Oxide, . . . Carbonic Acid, . . . or blood saturated with them, seem to exercise a depressing influence upon the motor ganglia of the heart, causing it to stop in diastole, in some instances with, in others without, a preliminary stage of accelerated frequency of beat, and augmented blood pressure."

⁵¹⁵ *British Medical Journal*, April 16th, 1870, p. 384.

⁵¹⁶ MS. Letter of Charles Lingen, Esq., Hereford, April 28th, 1870.

⁵¹⁷ *Vide* Note ⁴⁸⁶.

⁵¹⁸ Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates.

⁵¹⁹ Magistrates.

⁵²⁰ *Op. cit.*

⁵²¹ Casper, *op. cit.* p. 29.

⁵²² *Lancet*, April 24th, 1869, p. 563.

⁵²³ MS. Letter of Dr. J. Williams, dated Oct. 21, 1870.

⁵²⁴ *Vide* Note ⁵²².

⁵²⁵ *Dublin Medical Press*, Feb. 2nd, 1848.

⁵²⁶ *Medical Times and Gazette*, March 30th, 1861, p. 344, "On Starvation."

⁵²⁷ *Morning Chronicle*, February 26th, 1853.

⁵²⁸ Haller's "Pathological Observations, chiefly from Dissections of Morbid Bodies." London, 1756. Observation xxiv. (p. 49). "A Man Starved to Death."

⁵²⁹ *Lancet*, July 30th, 1870, p. 150.

⁵³⁰ *Vide* Narrative of the Case of Miss Margaret McAvoy; with an account of some optical experiments connected with it; London, 1817. Also the Continuation of the same, with general observations upon the case itself; upon her peculiar powers of distinguishing colours, reading, &c., through the medium of her fingers; with additional proofs of her blindness, &c. London, 1820. By Thomas Fenwick, M.D., one of the Physicians of the Liverpool Infirmary.

⁵³¹ The only authority for this opinion, is a certain speech said to have been made by Dr. Lewis of Carmarthen to the father Evan Jacob:—"I heard Dr. Lewis say to the father, 'Now, Evan, this inquiry is to be made in the interests of Science, and if at the end of the fortnight, or any longer period agreed upon, she will be found to have held out, then you must call in a medical man, to try and cure her, and get her to eat.'" Rev. W. Thomas—Magistrates and Coroner.

LONDON :
SAVILL, EDWARDS AND CO., PRINTERS, CHANDOS STREET,
COVENT GARDEN.

*A Complete History of the Case of the
Welsh Fasting-Girl.*

REVIEWS.

“THIS work gives a most perfect account of all the principal facts connected with the Life and Death of Sarah Jacob, and of the ignorance, superstition, and indiscretion which helped her notoriety and caused her unhappy death. The work is valuable as commemorating, in a compact and portable form, the leading facts of a case which is interesting alike from its physiological and its medico-legal aspects.”—*Lancet*.

“This volume is a very exhaustive exposure of the most unexampled imposture we have seen. It is a sad story, but told in an impressive, and at times in a very suggestive manner, by one who has made himself a perfect master of it.”—*Evening Standard*.

“Dr. Fowler’s very interesting *résumé* of what is, perhaps, the most remarkable case in modern times, may be read with pleasure by both the profession and the general public. . . . One of the most interesting examples on record of so young a child carrying out the determination to act a part with such unflinching pertinacity.”—*Food Journal*.

“We are glad to see the reports of a *cause célèbre* put into a permanent shape, and we have also some comments by Dr. Fowler himself and the record of some physiological experiments upon a young woman dying of Starvation. It is perhaps well that a man of Dr. Fowler’s ability was not too fastidious to deal with so miserable a matter; for

he has succeeded in giving some scientific interest to the subject, by comparing these observations of the illness of Sarah Jacob and of the post-mortem examinations with those made in other cases of Starvation."—*Westminster Review*.

"Dr. Fowler has issued a very useful book, giving a great deal of valuable information, apart from its being a complete history of the case of the Welsh Fasting-Girl."—*Welshman*.

"This work bears a threefold character: it is a consecutive and minute narrative of one of the most extraordinary impostures the world has ever seen; an examination into the moral and legal aspects of the case in its facts; and a medical contribution to the medical history of Starvation. . . . As a narrative of events the volume is painfully interesting, and would be morbidly so but for the scientific spirit that pervades it," &c. &c.—*South Wales Press*.

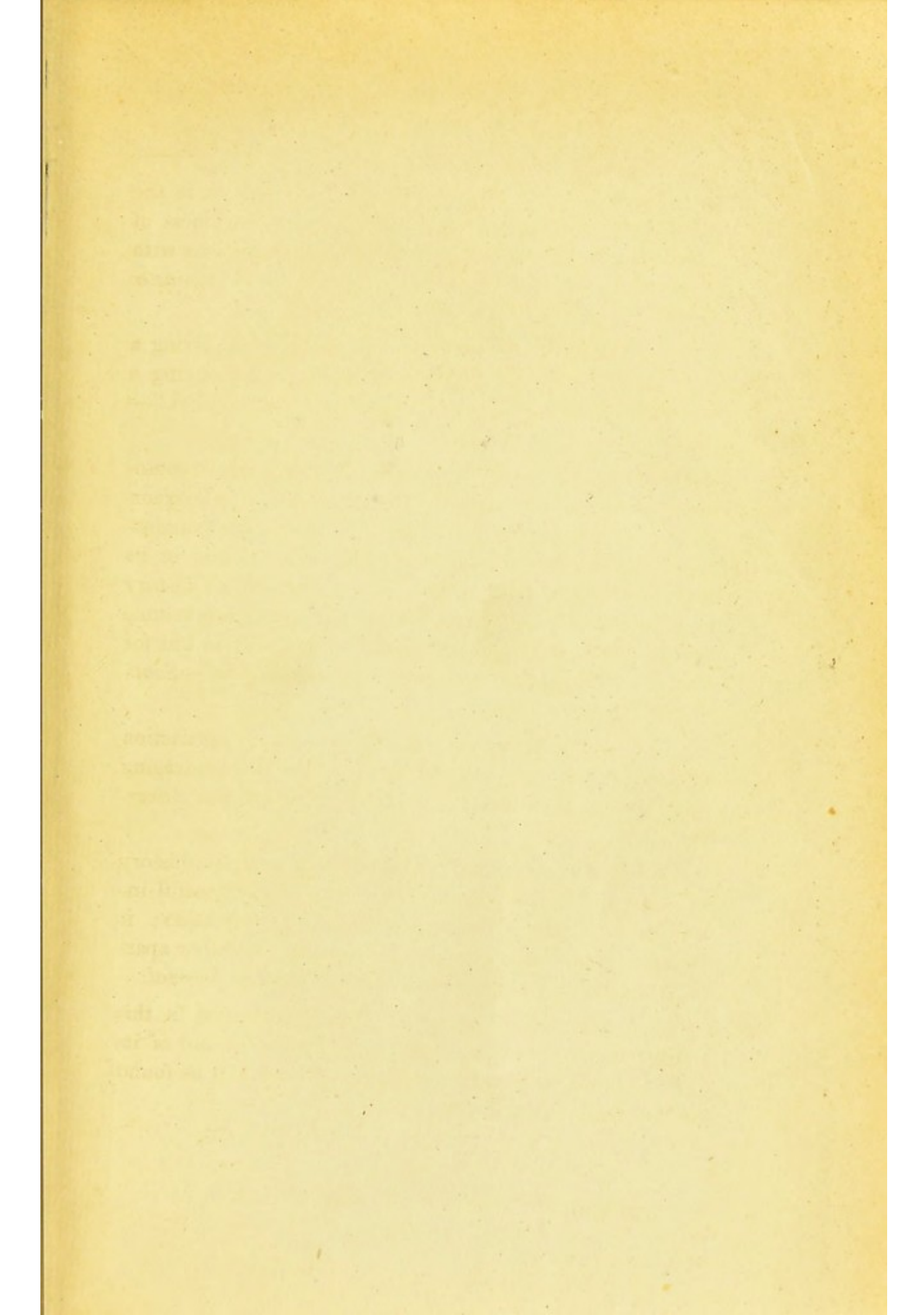
"We believe [the work] will be hailed with satisfaction by the public, and will do much towards discouraging such frauds in future."—*Cardigan and Tivy Side Advertiser*.

"Dr. Fowler's book contains, besides a complete history of the painful case of the Welsh Girl, much useful information regarding cases of prolonged Starvation; it possesses therefore a physiological value altogether apart from its sensational one."—*Edinburgh Medical Journal*.

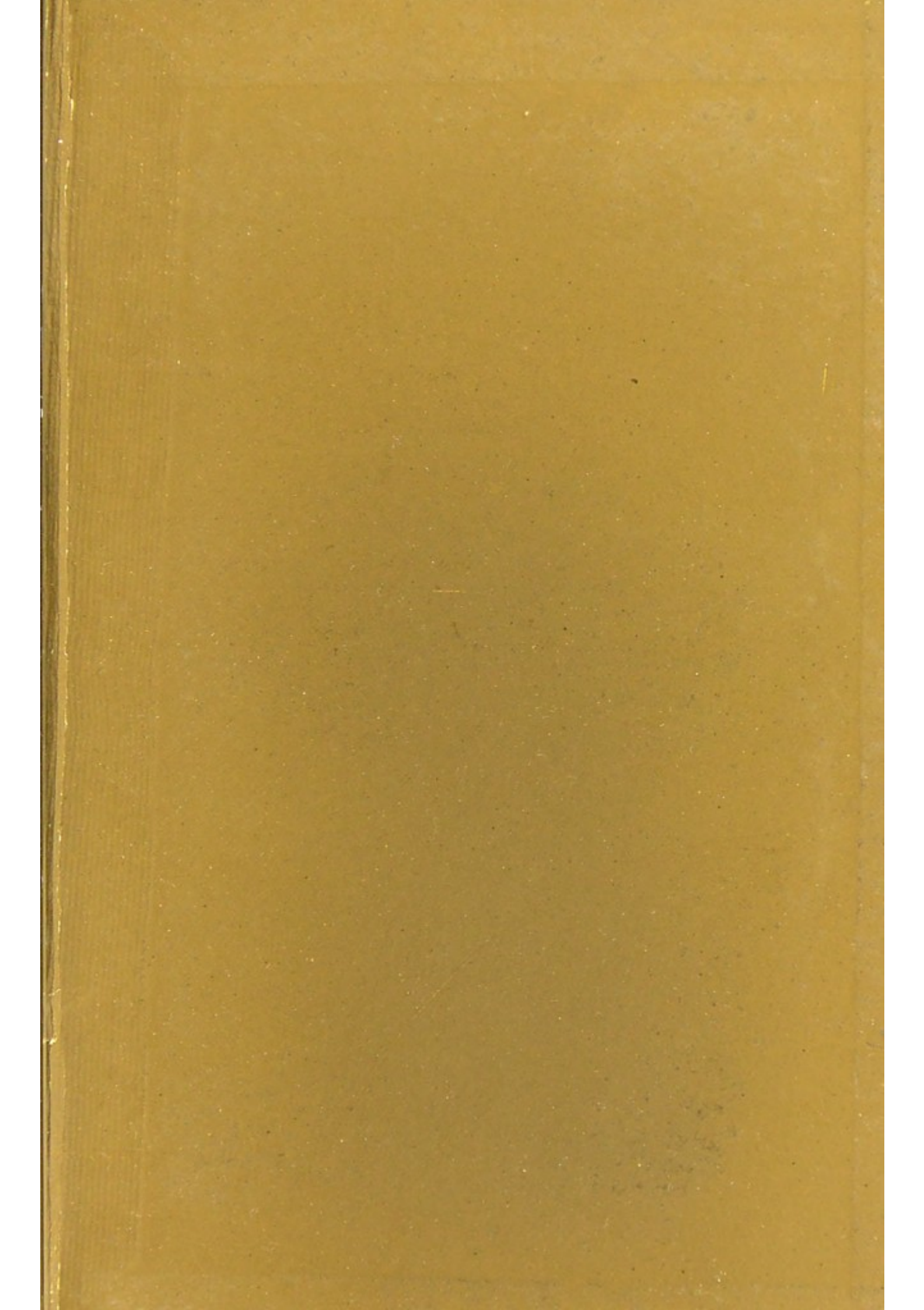
"For those who may be sufficiently interested in this extraordinary case to wish for a permanent record of its various stages, this narrative by Dr. Fowler will be found serviceable."—*City Press*.

1871.

HENRY RENSHAW, 356, STRAND,
LONDON.







BOOKS PUBLISHED

BY

HENRY RENSHAW, 356, Strand, London.

In fcap. 8vo, cloth, 7s.

FOWLER'S MEDICAL VOCABULARY; containing a concise explanation of upwards of 10,000 of the Terms used in Medicine and the Accessory Sciences.

"Dr. Fowler has performed his task with considerable ability."—*LANCET*.

"It is for the student of medicine in particular that this dictionary is intended, and we strongly advise everyone to get a copy of it."—*MED. TIMES*.

Post 8vo, cloth, price 12s. 6d.

DR. GLOVER on MINERAL WATERS; their Physical and Medicinal Properties. With Descriptions of the different Mineral Waters of Great Britain and the Continent, and Directions for their Administration. Illustrated by Copper Plates and Woodcuts.

Fcap., sewed, price 2s. 6d.

THE SEVEN SOURCES OF HEALTH. A Manual of all that concerns the Preservation of Health and the Prevention of Disease, both of the Body and Mind. By **WILLIAM STRANGE, M.D.**

"A popular medical book, marked by good sense and freedom from quackery."—*MEDICAL TIMES*.

In fcap., Second Edition, price 8s. 6d.

A MANUAL OF ZOOLOGY. By **M. MILNE-EDWARDS.** Translated by **R. KNOX, M.D.** Second Edition, with many Additional Observations, and Illustrated by 572 highly-finished Wood Engravings. Edited by **C. CARTER BLAKE, F.G.S., F.A.S.L.**

In post 8vo, Second Edition, price 10s. 6d.

DR. KNOX ON THE RACES OF MEN: a Philosophical Inquiry into the Influence of Race over the Destinies of Nations.

Second Edition, with Four Supplementary Chapters.

The Supplement can be had separately, price 2s. 6d.

In crown 8vo, cloth extra, price 7s. 6d.

A MANUAL OF ARTISTIC ANATOMY, for the Use of Sculptors, Painters, and Amateurs. Illustrated by many fine Wood Engravings. By **ROBERT KNOX, M.D.**

In crown 8vo, cloth, price 2s. 6d.

PUBLIC HEALTH: A Popular Introduction to Sanitary Science, being a history of the prevalent and fatal Diseases of the English Population from the earliest times to the end of the eighteenth century. By **W. A. GUY, M.B. Cantab., F.R.S.**

Illustrated by Wood Engravings, cloth, price 2s. 6d.

THE HUMAN HAIR: its Structure, Growth, Diseases, and their Treatment. By **HERMANN BEIGEL, M.D., M.R.C.P. Lond.,** Physician to the Metropolitan Free Hospital.

Fcap., cloth, price 7s. 6d.

BRIERRE DE BOISMONT on HALLUCINATIONS: a History and Explanation of Apparitions, Visions, Dreams, Ecstasy, Magnetism, and Somnambulism. Translated from the French by **ROBERT T. HULME, F.L.S., M.R.C.S.**